









#52301

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN,

FROM THE  
FIRST INVASION OF IT BY THE ROMANS  
UNDER JULIUS CÆSAR.

WRITTEN ON A NEW PLAN.

---

By ROBERT HENRY, D.D.

ONE OF THE MINISTERS OF EDINBURGH, MEMBER OF THE  
SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIANS OF SCOTLAND, AND OF  
THE ROYAL SOCIETY OF EDINBURGH.

---

THE FIFTH EDITION.

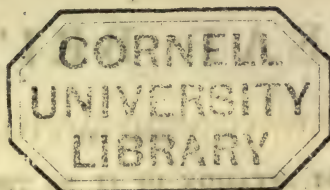
IN TWELVE VOLUMES.

VOL. XII.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR CADELL AND DAVIES; F.C. AND J. RIVINGTON; R. LEA; J. CUTMELL;  
J. NUNN; LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN; LACKINGTON, ALLEN,  
AND CO.; E. JEFFERY; C. LAW; WHITE AND COCHRANE; B. AND R. CROSBY;  
JOHN RICHARDSON; J. M. RICHARDSON; S. BAGSTER; BLACK AND PARRY;  
J. AND A. ARCH; J. BOOTH; J. OTRIDGE; J. MAWMAN; R. BALDWIN; W. STEWART;  
R. SCHOLEY; G. AND S. ROBINSON; CRADOCK AND JOY; J. BLACK; T. EOHNN;  
J. FAULDER; GALE, CURTIS, AND FENNER; AND J. WALKER AND CO.

1814.



DA  
30  
H46  
1814  
v. 12

512  
- 24/9/60  
120  
8



# CONTENTS

OF

## THE TWELFTH VOLUME.

---

### BOOK VI. Continued.

#### CHAP. II.

- Sect. 1. Ecclesiastical History of England from the  
Accession of Henry VII., A.D. 1485., to the Ac-  
cession of Henry VIII., A.D. 1509. - Page 1
- Sect. 2. Ecclesiastical History of England from the  
Accession of Henry VIII., A.D. 1509., to the Ac-  
cession of Edward VI. A.D. 1547. - 9
- Sect. 3. Ecclesiastical History of Scotland from the  
Accession of James IV., A.D. 1488., to the Death  
of James V. A.D. 1542. - 107.

#### H AP. III.

History of the Constitution, Government, and  
Laws of Great Britain, from A.D. 1485. to  
A.D. 1547.

- Sect. 1. History of the Constitution, Government,  
and Laws of England, from A.D. 1485. to A.D.  
1547. - - - - 146

Sect.

Sect. 2. History of the Constitution, Government, and Laws of Scotland, from A.D. 1418. to A.D. 1542.	-	-	-	Page 170
---	---	---	---	----------

## CHAP. IV.

History of Learning, of learned Men, and of  
the chief Seminaries of Learning that were  
founded in Great Britain, from A.D. 1485.  
to A.D. 1547.

Sect. 1. A brief Account of the Sciences that were most successfully cultivated in Britain, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.	-	-	-	200
Sect. 2. History of the most learned Men who flourished in Britain, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.	-	-	-	219
Sect. 3. History of the principal Seminaries of Learning that were founded in Great Britain, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.	-	-	-	245

## CHAP. V.

History of the Arts in Great Britain, from the  
Accession of Henry VII., A.D. 1485., to  
the Accession of Edward VI. A.D. 1547.

Sect. 1. History of the necessary and useful Arts	275
Sect. 2. History of the fine and pleasing Arts of Sculpture, Painting, Poetry, and Music, in Bri- tain, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.	288

## CHAP. VI.

The History of Commerce, Corn, and Ship-  
ping in Great Britain, from the Acces-  
sion of Henry VII., A.D. 1485., to the  
Accession of Edward VI. A.D. 1547.

303  
CHAP.



## CONTENTS.

v

### CHAP. VII.

History of the Manners, Virtues, Vices, remarkable Customs, Languages, Drefs, and Diversions of the People of Great Britain, from the Accession of Henry VII., A.D. 1485., to the Accession of Edward VI. A.D. 1547. - - - Page 347

---

### APPENDIX to BOOK VI.

- NUMBER I. PERKIN WARBECK'S Proclamation, published in the Time of his Rebellion in the Beginning of the Reign of Henry VII. - 387
- NUMBER II. The Confession read by PERKIN WARBECK when fet in the Stocks on a Scaffold at Cheapfide. Extracted from Grafton, p. 299. Hall, 49. - - - 392
- NUMBER III. Differtation on the Character of PERKIN WARBECK, and on the Crimes imputed to Richard the Third - 395
- NUMBER IV. Copy of the Receipts of the Exchequer in the 24th Year of Henry VIII. - 454
- NUMBER V. Curious Extracts from an Account Book of Henry VII. - - - 467
- 

GENERAL INDEX - - - 469

THE

## PART VII

History of the Shantung Province	1
Geography of the Shantung Province	2
Climate of the Shantung Province	3
Population of the Shantung Province	4
Products of the Shantung Province	5
Administration of the Shantung Province	6

## APPENDIX A - PART VII

General Description of the Province	1
Geography of the Province	2
Climate of the Province	3
Population of the Province	4
Products of the Province	5
Administration of the Province	6
History of the Province	7
Geography of the Province	8
Climate of the Province	9
Population of the Province	10
Products of the Province	11
Administration of the Province	12
History of the Province	13
Geography of the Province	14
Climate of the Province	15
Population of the Province	16
Products of the Province	17
Administration of the Province	18
History of the Province	19
Geography of the Province	20
Climate of the Province	21
Population of the Province	22
Products of the Province	23
Administration of the Province	24
History of the Province	25
Geography of the Province	26
Climate of the Province	27
Population of the Province	28
Products of the Province	29
Administration of the Province	30
History of the Province	31
Geography of the Province	32
Climate of the Province	33
Population of the Province	34
Products of the Province	35
Administration of the Province	36
History of the Province	37
Geography of the Province	38
Climate of the Province	39
Population of the Province	40
Products of the Province	41
Administration of the Province	42
History of the Province	43
Geography of the Province	44
Climate of the Province	45
Population of the Province	46
Products of the Province	47
Administration of the Province	48
History of the Province	49
Geography of the Province	50
Climate of the Province	51
Population of the Province	52
Products of the Province	53
Administration of the Province	54
History of the Province	55
Geography of the Province	56
Climate of the Province	57
Population of the Province	58
Products of the Province	59
Administration of the Province	60
History of the Province	61
Geography of the Province	62
Climate of the Province	63
Population of the Province	64
Products of the Province	65
Administration of the Province	66
History of the Province	67
Geography of the Province	68
Climate of the Province	69
Population of the Province	70
Products of the Province	71
Administration of the Province	72
History of the Province	73
Geography of the Province	74
Climate of the Province	75
Population of the Province	76
Products of the Province	77
Administration of the Province	78
History of the Province	79
Geography of the Province	80
Climate of the Province	81
Population of the Province	82
Products of the Province	83
Administration of the Province	84
History of the Province	85
Geography of the Province	86
Climate of the Province	87
Population of the Province	88
Products of the Province	89
Administration of the Province	90
History of the Province	91
Geography of the Province	92
Climate of the Province	93
Population of the Province	94
Products of the Province	95
Administration of the Province	96
History of the Province	97
Geography of the Province	98
Climate of the Province	99
Population of the Province	100



THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER II. SECTION I.

*Ecclesiastical History of England, from the Accession of Henry VII. A.D. 1485., to the Accession of Henry VIII. A.D. 1509.*

THE ecclesiastical transactions in the reign of Henry VII. that merit a place in history, were not many and shall be related in as few words as possible. Cent. XV.

Cardinal Bouchier, who had been Archbishop of Canterbury thirty-two years, died in January A.D. 1486., and was succeeded by John Morton, Bishop of Ely, who had contributed greatly to the elevation of Henry to the throne. This primate convened a synod of the prelates and clergy of his province February 13th, A.D. 1487., at St. Paul's, for the reformation of Convoca-  
tion.

VOL. XII. B the

**Cent. XV.** the manners of the clergy. Complaints were made to the synod, that the preachers of the order of St. John of Jerusalem, in their sermons at Paul's Cross, inveighed against the vices of the clergy in the hearing of the laity, who all, said they, hate the clergy, and delight to hear their vices exposed. The Prior of St. John was called, and appeared before the synod, and promised to correct this great abuse. The invectives of these preachers, however, do not seem to have been without foundation; for many of the London clergy were accused in this convocation of spending their whole time in taverns and ale-houses, of concealing their tonsure, and allowing their hair to grow long, and of imitating the laity in their dress. They were severely reprimanded for these enormities. This convocation granted a tenth of their benefices for one year to the King, and instituted a new holy-day to commemorate the transfiguration of Christ, to be observed every year on the 7th of August.<sup>1</sup>

**Pastoral  
Letter.**

Immediately after the convocation was dismissed, the primate published a pastoral letter for the reformation of the lives and habits of the clergy. In this letter the good primate doth not trouble his clergy with recommending a single virtue or reproving a single vice; but he charges them, with great solemnity, not to wear short liripoops of silk, nor gowns open before, nor swords, nor daggers, nor embroidered girdles; to be very careful of their tonsure, and to keep their hair always so short that all the world may

<sup>1</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 618.



see their ears ; and he threatens them with very severe censures, if they do not observe these injunctions. He recommends residence on their benefices to all rectors and vicars who have only one living, and no dispensation, nor canonical impediment, nor lawful excuse for non-residence, that they may preserve their flocks from that rapacious wolf the devil.<sup>2</sup> Cent. XV.

The dissolute manners of the clergy, especially of the regulars, made a mighty noise at this time, and gave great offence to the laity, who were provoked to see the immense possessions, bestowed upon the church by the mistaken piety of their ancestors, so shamefully abused. The court of Rome became apprehensive that this discontent of the laity might produce disagreeable effects. Pope Innocent VIII. sent a bull to Archbishop Morton in March 1490., in which he acquaints him, that he had heard with great grief from persons worthy of credit, that the monks of all the different orders in England had grievously degenerated ; “ and that giving  
“ themselves up to a reprobate sense, they led  
“ lewd and dissolute lives, by which they brought  
“ ruin upon their own souls, set an ill example  
“ to others, and gave great offence and scandal  
“ to many.” His Holiness then directed the primate to admonish the abbots and priors of all the convents in his province, to reform themselves and those under them ; and if any of them did not obey that admonition, he gave him authority to visit and reform them by ecclesiastical.

<sup>2</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 620.

Cent. XV. tical censures, to cut off incurable members by deprivation, and to call the secular arm to his assistance when it was necessary.<sup>3</sup>

Monitory  
letter.

In obedience to this bull the primate sent monitory letters to the superiors of all the convents and religious houses in his province, admonishing and commanding them by the authority he had received from the Pope, to reform themselves and their subjects, from certain vices, of which they were said to be guilty, and of which he accused them. The monitory letter that was sent on this occasion to the Abbot of St. Alban's hath been published. If that abbot and his monks were stained with all the odious vices of which the primate says in his letter they were notoriously guilty, they were a most execrable crew, and stood much in need of reformation. Some of these vices are so detestable, that they cannot be so much as named in history. "You are infamous, (says he to the Abbot,) for "simony, usury, and squandering away the possessions of your monastery, besides other enormous crimes mentioned below." One of these crimes was, that he had turned all the modest women out of the two nunneries of Pray and Sapwell, (over which he pretended to have a jurisdiction,) and filled them with prostitutes; that they were esteemed no better than brothels, and that he and his monks publicly frequented them as such. His Grace seems to have been well informed; for he names some of these infamous women and their

<sup>3</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 630.

gallants.

gallants. The monks were at least as profligate as Cent. XV.  
 their abbot: for besides keeping concubines both  
 within and without the monastery, he accuses  
 them of stealing the church plate and jewels,  
 and even of picking the jewels out of the shrine  
 of their patron St. Alban. He allows them sixty  
 days to reform from all their vices, especially from  
 cutting down the woods, and stealing the plate  
 and jewels of the monastery; but if they did not  
 reform in that time, and become very chaste,  
 honest, and good monks, he threatens them with  
 a visitation.<sup>4</sup> What effect this monitory letter  
 had on the abbot and his monks we are not in-  
 formed: it is probable that it was not great. For  
 we learn from the same letter, that they had been  
 several times admonished before to no purpose.  
 When the monastics lived in idleness, wallowed  
 in wealth and luxury, and were doomed to celi-  
 bacy, the temptations to certain vices were too  
 strong to be overcome by monitory letters, which  
 they probably considered as things of course.

The avarice of Henry VII. was soon disco- Convoca-  
tions.  
 vered, and became universally known; and the  
 clergy secured his favour by granting him money  
 from time to time. Both the convocations of  
 Canterbury and York met, A. D. 1491., and  
 each of them granted him a tenth of their  
 livings for one year.<sup>5</sup>

Henry VII. neglected no opportunity of de- Petition to  
the Pope.  
 pressing the house of York, and exalting that of  
 Lancaster, from which he pretended to derive  
 his title to the throne. Henry VI. the last king

<sup>4</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 632.      <sup>5</sup> Ibid. p. 634, 635.



Cent. XV.

of the house of Lancaster, had been buried first in the abbey of Chertsey, to which there was a prodigious concourse of people to behold the miracles that were said to be wrought at his tomb. To put a stop to this, Richard III. removed the body from Chertsey, and interred it in the collegiate church in the castle of Windsor, to which the people had not such easy access. Henry presented a petition to the Pope, A. D. 1494., for his permission to translate the sacred remains of that pious king from Windsor to Westminster, a place of much greater celebrity, where many of the kings and queens of England lay intombed, though the dean and chapter of Windsor opposed the translation<sup>6</sup>. A mighty king applies to a foreign priest to overcome the resistance of his own chaplains; so small was the authority of kings, and so great the authority of popes, over the ecclesiastics of those times!

Still further to aggrandise the house of Lancaster, Henry, in the same year 1494., petitioned the Pope to canonise Henry VI., and transmitted a long list of the wonderful miracles wrought by that pious prince, both in his lifetime and after his death; particularly that he had given sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, strength to the lame, and had cured all other diseases. The Pope granted a commission to the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Bishop of Durham to examine into the sanctity of this royal candidate for canonisation, and into the reality of his miracles<sup>7</sup>. This affair, however, was

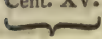
<sup>6</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 635.<sup>7</sup> Ibid. p. 640.

never accomplished, and Henry was never canon- Cent. XV.  
 ified, being as unfortunate after his death as he had  
 been during his life; nor are we informed what  
 put a stop to this pious project. The most pro-  
 bable conjecture is, that Henry VII. found that  
 the canonisation of a king would cost more mo-  
 ney than he had imagined, or was disposed to  
 expend.

Archbishop Morton died A. D. 1500., and was Jubilee.  
 succeeded by Henry Dean, Bishop of Salisbury.  
 This being the year of jubilee, prodigious multi-  
 tudes crowded to Rome from all Christian coun-  
 tries, to partake of the pardons and indulgences  
 that were then dispensed in great profusion. But  
 as many good catholics, who lived in distant  
 countries, wished to share in those benefits, but  
 were not able to bear the fatigue or the expence  
 of so long a journey, the Pope Alexander V., to  
 accommodate them, and to dispose of the spi-  
 ritual treasures of the church, which are inex-  
 haustible, sent agents into every country, fur-  
 nished with sufficient quantities of these sacred  
 commodities, which they sold to all who chose  
 to buy them. One Jasper Pons, a Spaniard, was  
 sent into England on this occasion, who managed  
 this traffic with so much address, that he collected  
 and carried off a great mass of money, without  
 giving much scandal.<sup>9</sup>

One of the arts employed by the nuncio to get Bull.  
 money and avoid scandal was this: He gave out,  
 that all the money he received for pardons, indul-  
 gences, &c. was to be expended in an expedition

<sup>9</sup> Antiq. Britain. p. 332.

Cent. XV.  against the Turks. To procure credit to this assertion, he brought a bull from the Pope to the King, in which His Holiness acquainted him, that he and his brethren the cardinals, in a solemn conclave, had resolved upon an expedition against the Turks, those cruel enemies of the Christian faith; that they had settled the plan of operations, and wanted nothing but money, fleets, and armies, for which they depended on the religious zeal of Christian princes and states. He acquainted him with the plan of operations; that the Kings of Hungary, Poland, and Bohemia were to invade Romania; the French and Spaniards to attack the Turks in Greece; and the English, Venetians, and other maritime powers, to make an attempt on Constantinople with a strong fleet and army. He concluded with conjuring the King, in the most earnest manner, to engage with all his power in this most holy and pious undertaking. To this bull Henry returned a civil but evasive answer; the nuncio conveyed his money to Rome, and the expedition against the Turks was no more mentioned.<sup>9</sup>

Cent. XVI. Henry Dean, Archbishop of Canterbury, died A. D. 1502., and was succeeded by William Warham, Bishop of London. The disciples of Wickliff, then commonly called Lollards, had been so long and so cruelly persecuted, that their numbers were much diminished; and many who had imbibed those dangerous opinions, carefully concealed them. It appears also that the Lollards at this time were not in general so ambitious of

<sup>9</sup> Bacon, ad an. 1500.



the crown of martyrdom as they had been formerly; for many of them, when they were accused of heresy, and threatened with the cruel death inflicted on heretics, recanted, and burnt their faggot, to preserve themselves from burning. The fires, however, in which heretics were consumed, were not extinguished. Many, both men and women, were reduced to ashes for the crime of heresy in the last years of Henry VII.; of whose sufferings those readers who take pleasure in perusing such shocking relations will find a full account in the work quoted below.<sup>10</sup>

Cent. XVI.

## SECTION II.

*Ecclesiastical History of England, from the Accession of Henry VIII. A.D. 1509, to the Accession of Edward VI., A.D. 1547.*

**T**HAT the state of religion and of the church of England underwent great changes in the reign of Henry VIII. is universally known. But it is necessary to remark, that these changes were brought about by the state, and not by the church, and that therefore the history of them belongs to civil rather than to ecclesiastical history; for this reason, the occasions, causes, and other circumstances of the most important of these changes, have been related in their proper places, in the first chapter of this book; and it only now remains to give a brief account of the transactions

The church reformed by the state.

<sup>10</sup> Fox, Acts and Monuments, vol. i. p. 710—715.

Cent. XVI.

The Eng-  
lish attach-  
ed to  
Rome.

of this period that were more strictly ecclesiastical, which may be comprised within moderate limits.

Few nations in Europe seemed to be more firmly attached to the court and church of Rome, than the English at the accession of Henry VIII.

The clergy, both secular and regular, were universally devoted to the papacy, and more the subjects of the Pope than of their native sovereign. They defended all the doctrines, rites, and ceremonies of the church with much zeal, and persecuted all who presumed to call any of these in question with unrelenting cruelty. The laity, indeed, sometimes railed at the vices, and repined at the riches of their spiritual guides; but the far greatest number of them entertained no doubts of the infallibility of the Pope, or of the truth of any of the tenets of the church. The King had been inspired by his instructors with the highest veneration for his holy father at Rome, and with the most violent hatred to heresy and heretics. This attachment of the King and the clergy to the see of Rome continued unabated during the first nineteen years of this reign. The transactions therefore of that period were of the same kind with those of former periods, and do not merit a minute investigation.

Conse-  
crated rose.

The Popes of the times we are delineating seldom neglected to present some consecrated trinket that was much valued, and that cost them little, to those princes at their accession, from whom they expected substantial favours. Julius II. sent a consecrated rose of gold dipped in chrism, and perfumed with musk, to Archbishop Warham

April 5th, A. D. 1510., to be presented to the King at high mass, with his apostolical benediction. Henry received the precious rose, and more precious benediction, with profound reverence and excessive joy.<sup>11</sup>

Cent. XVI.

The convocation of the province of Canterbury met at St. Paul's, February 6th, A. D. 1511., and made the King a more valuable present, by granting him a subsidy of £25,000.<sup>12</sup>

Subsidy.

Great profits accrued in those times to the archbishops and bishops, and the officers of their courts, from the registration and probation of testaments, the administration of the goods of intestates, and the trial of causes in their several courts; and violent disputes arose about the division of these profits. In former times the testaments of all persons were proved and registered in the court of the diocese wherein he had resided and died, and the several bishops and their officials had the administration of the goods of those who died intestate within their dioceses. Causes were also tried in the court of the diocese in which the parties resided, though an appeal lay to the archbishop's court. This arrangement had been established by a constitution of the papal legate Ottobon, and confirmed by uniform practice. But the late Archbishop Morton, being a cardinal, chancellor of the kingdom, and prime minister, had great power, which he employed in making encroachments on the privileges and emoluments of his suffragans and their courts. He pretended that the testaments of all persons,

Dispute between the primate and his suffragans.

<sup>11</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 652.<sup>12</sup> Ibid.

who



Cent. XVI. who had effects in different dioceses, or who died possessed of *bona notabilia*, should be proved and registered in the archbishop's court, and that the goods of intestates in these circumstances should be administered by his officials. Besides this, he brought almost all litigations into his own court (to which he gave the new name of the prerogative court) by prohibitions, advocations, and admitting appeals before sentence. These innovations were opposed by his suffragans, and by none so keenly as by William Warham, who acted as advocate to Richard Hill, Bishop of London, who appealed to the Pope against them. But when Warham was advanced to the primacy, he changed his mind, and carried these encroachments farther than his predecessor Cardinal Morton had done, and rejected all the proposals of his suffragans for an accommodation<sup>13</sup>. This contest continued long, and was conducted with great violence and rancour; which is one proof, among many others, that the celibacy of the clergy did not diminish their love of money, or make them more indifferent about amassing wealth.

Divisions  
among the  
regulars.

Divisions and disputes prevailed among the regular, as well as among the secular clergy of England in this period, particularly between the Franciscans, or gray friars, and the Dominicans, or black friars, about the immaculate conception of the Virgin Mary, maintained by the former, and denied by the latter. This question was agitated several years with great warmth, and appeared to

<sup>13</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 653—659.

be of such importance, that it engaged the attention of the whole Christian world. At length, however, an end was put to this controversy by a decree of the Pope in favour of the Franciscans; a new festival was instituted to commemorate the immaculate conception of the Holy Virgin, and all who denied it were declared to be heretics.<sup>14</sup>

Cent. XVI.

If the clergy at this time were at variance among themselves, they were at still greater variance with the laity about the immunities of the church; that is, of the clergy, and their exemption from the jurisdiction of the civil courts and civil magistrates. This had been a bone of contention between the clergy and laity for several centuries, and had sometimes involved both in very great distress. This controversy was revived and inflamed by an act of parliament, A. D. 1512., by which all who were accused of murder or robbery were to be tried in the civil courts, except bishops, priests, and deacons; and if found guilty, were to be denied the benefit of clergy<sup>15</sup>. This act was exclaimed against by the great body of the clergy as a most impious invasion of the immunities of the church, because subdeacons, acolyths, exorcists, &c. were thereby subjected to be tried for murder or robbery by laymen, and to be hanged if they were found guilty. The pulpits every where rung with declamations against this act; and the Abbot of Winchelcomb, in a sermon at Paul's Cross, declared, that all persons, whether spiritual or temporal, who had assented to that infamous act, had incurred the

Disputation.

<sup>14</sup> Fox, vol. ii. p. 732.<sup>15</sup> Statutes, 4 Henry VIII. cap. 2.

Cent. XVI. censures of the church. This zealous Abbot also published a book, to prove that the persons of clerks, in the lower as well as the higher orders, were sacred, and that they could not be tried and punished by the laity for any crimes<sup>16</sup>. The temporal lords, and the house of commons, exasperated at this attempt of the clergy to emancipate themselves from the restraints of law, and from punishment for the greatest crimes, petitioned the King to repress their insolence, and compel them to retract their opinion. The matter was debated before the King in council, the judges, and a numerous audience, both of the clergy and laity. The Abbot of Winchelcomb was advocate for the immunities which the church and clergy claimed; and Dr. Standish, one of the King's spiritual council, pleaded against them. After a long debate, the audience in general being convinced that Dr. Standish had the better of the argument, requested the bishops to command the Abbot to recant his opinion. But this they positively refused; declaring, that it was their own opinion, and the doctrine of holy church.<sup>17</sup>

Richard  
Hunne's  
affair.

When things were in this state, an event happened that inflamed the animosity between the clergy and the laity, especially in London. One Richard Hunne, a respectable citizen, was sued by the priest of his parish, in the legate's court, for a mortuary, which he pretended to be due to him for the burial of a child of his only five weeks old. Hunne, by the advice of his council,

<sup>16</sup> Burnet's Hist. Reform. vol. i. p. 12, 13.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid. p. 13.

sued



fued the priest in the king's bench, in a premu- Cent. XVI.  
nure, for bringing him before a foreign court. }  
The clergy, to extricate the priest, accused Hunne of heresy, and imprisoned him in the Lollard's Tower at St. Paul's, where he was found hanged December 4th, A. D. 1514. The clergy gave out that he had hanged himself. But this was not believed, and the coroner's inquest, after a careful examination of the body, the posture in which it was found, and other circumstances, brought in their verdict, wilful murder by those who had the charge of the prison. Many witnesses were examined, whose evidence tended to criminate the bishops, Sumner, and the bell-ringer, and Sumner afterwards confessed that the chancellor Doctor Horsey, himself, and the bell-ringer, had first murdered Hunne, and then hung up his body against the wall.<sup>18</sup>

This affair made a prodigious noise in London, and excited violent outcries against the clergy, which were rendered more vehement by the method that was taken to silence them. Fitz-James, Bishop of London, and other prelates with whom he consulted, imagined, that if Hunne was convicted of heresy, the people would no longer espouse his cause, or lament his fate. That Bishop, therefore, attended by the Bishops of Durham and Lincoln, twenty-five abbots, priors and doctors, six notaries, and great multitudes of the secular and regular clergy held a court at St. Paul's, December 16th, for the trial of one who had been ten days in his grave. At that court Richard

Burnt for  
heresy  
after his  
death.

<sup>18</sup> Burnet's Hist. Reform. vol. i. p. 14. Fox. vol. ii. p. 739—744.

Cent. XVI. Hunne was accused of various heresies contained in the preface to Wickliff's bible, which had been found in his house, and was esteemed a sufficient proof that he had held all these heresies. Proclamation was made, that if any one chused to answer for the accused he should appear immediately. No counsel chose to plead the cause of such a client before such a court. Hunne was pronounced a heretic, his body was taken up December 20th, and burnt in Smithfield<sup>o</sup>. The people were shocked at this horrid spectacle, and greatly disgusted with their spiritual guides.

His children restored.

The discontent excited by these acts of cruelty was not confined to the people of London. The parliament that met February 5th, A. D. 1515., restored the children of Richard Hunne to all their father's effects: and the house of commons sent up a bill to the house of peers, April 3d, for bringing his murderers, particularly Doctor Horsey, to justice. But the clergy were too numerous in that house for such a bill to pass. The Bishop of London made a violent declamation against it; in which he affirmed, that Hunne had hanged himself; that the coroner and his jury were perjured caitiffs; and that if the bill passed, the heretics would become so bold, that he would not be safe in his own house. The bill was thrown out after the first reading.<sup>20</sup>

Dr. Standish questioned.

The clergy were greatly offended with Doctor Standish, for his pleading against their immunities; and the convocation, which sat at the same time

<sup>20</sup> Burnet's Hist. Reform. vol. i. p. 114. Fox, vol. ii. p. 739—744.  
<sup>2</sup> Ibid.

with the parliament, brought him before them, and threatened him with the severest censures. Cent. XVI.  
 Expecting neither mercy nor justice from his enraged brethren, he implored the King to protect him from the danger he had incurred by acting in the capacity of his spiritual counsel. The clergy assured the King, that they did not intend to question Doctor Standish for any thing he had said in the late conference, but for certain lectures at Paul's Cross; in which he had advanced many things contrary to the law of God and the liberties of holy church, which they were bound to maintain. On the other hand, the temporal lords, the judges, and the house of commons, petitioned the King to preserve the undoubted rights of his crown, and his temporal jurisdiction over all his subjects, and to protect Doctor Standish from the malice of his enemies.<sup>21</sup>

These petitions threw the King into great perplexity. He had a great veneration for the church and clergy, but he was also fond of power, and tenacious of his rights. On this occasion he consulted Doctor Veysey, dean of his chapel, (of whose learning and probity he entertained a good opinion, and charged him, upon his allegiance, to give him his real sentiments on this important question. Having taken some time to consider, the Doctor declared to the King, upon his faith and conscience, that the trial of clerks by the secular judges, for crimes committed against the laws of the land, was neither contrary to the law of God, nor inconsistent with the true liber-

Conferences and disputes.

<sup>21</sup> Burnet. p. 15.



Cent. XVI. ties of the church. This opinion, and the arguments with which it was supported, gave Henry great satisfaction. Two very solemn conferences were held before him, and many of the prelates, lords, and judges, and principal men, both of the clergy and laity, in which this question was debated at great length, and with no little warmth by Doctor Standish and Doctor Veysey on one side, and the champions for the immunities of the church on the other. At the last of these conferences, when the greatest part of the audience seemed ready to adopt the opinion of the two doctors, Cardinal Wolsey fell upon his knees before the King, and most earnestly entreated him to refer the matter in dispute to the Pope, to avoid his incurring the censures of the church. On which the King said, that he thought Doctor Standish and others of his council had answered all their arguments fully. The Lord-chief-justice Fineux observed, that bishops could not try clerks for capital offences; and if they were not amenable to the civil courts, they might commit the greatest crimes with impunity. The King then, addressing himself to the clergy, said, “ Know you well, that we will maintain the right  
“ of our crown and our temporal jurisdiction,  
“ as well in this as in all other points, in as  
“ ample manner as any of our progenitors have  
“ done before our time.” The Archbishop of Canterbury, alarmed at this declaration, fell on his knees and begged that the final determination of this question might be delayed till they had time to consult the court of Rome.

But to this no answer was given; the King retired, and the conference ended.<sup>22</sup> Cent. XVI.

A warrant being issued for apprehending Doctor Horsey, the Bishop of London's chancellor, in order to his being tried in the king's bench for the murder of Richard Hunne, he absconded, and was concealed in the archbishop's palace at Lambeth. At last, when this affair threatened very serious consequences, it was terminated by a compromise, most probably suggested by the clergy. It was agreed, that the convocation should drop all proceedings against Doctor Standish; that Doctor Horsey should appear in the court of king's bench, and plead not guilty; and that the attorney-general should acknowledge the truth of this plea, to prevent a trial. All this was accordingly done; and in those days it was thought no small triumph, that a great king had brought a clerk to the bar, though he did not, or durst not, bring him to trial.<sup>23</sup> Compro-  
mise.

Though the clergy in this period were divided among themselves, and at variance with the laity, there was one thing in which they agreed too well, and were too well seconded by the secular arm; the persecution of the unhappy Lollards. The infernal spirit of persecution, which had languished in some degree in the preceding reign, raged with great violence in the first nineteen years of the present reign; for though Henry VIII. was tenacious of the rights of his crown, he had no regard to the rights of conscience, and no mercy on those who presumed to judge for themselves Persecu-  
tion.

<sup>22</sup> Burnet, from Keilwey's Reports.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

Cent. XVI. in matters of religion, or to dissent in the least from the established system of belief and worship. To give a minute detail of all the horrid cruelties that were inflicted on those who were condemned as heretics for reading the scriptures, for denying transubstantiation, purgatory, the worship of images, the invocation of saints, the infallibility of the Pope, or any other tenet of the church, would not only swell this section to a most inconvenient size, but would greatly distress every reader of feeling and humanity. It is sufficient to remark, that all who were convicted of what was then called heresy, both women and men, old and young, and adhered to their opinions, were condemned as obstinate heretics, delivered to the secular arm, and burnt to ashes, without mercy, and without exception. The number of those unhappy victims was considerable, particularly in the diocese of Lincoln, under Bishop Langland, the King's confessor, and a most cruel persecutor<sup>24</sup>. Those who, through fear of the painful death with which they were threatened, abjured or renounced their opinions, (which were very many,) had various penances prescribed to them, and various punishments inflicted upon them, of which some were very severe and ignominious<sup>25</sup>. Some of the English prelates at least seem to have resolved to extinguish heresy, by the total extirpation of heretics. But in this they did not succeed. On the contrary, the more fiercely persecution raged, the more heresy and heretics increased;

<sup>24</sup> Fox, p. 744—750.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid. p. 450, &c.



the greater was the compassion of the people for the sufferers, and their indignation against the persecutors. Cent. XIV.

Henry VIII. was not only a most dutiful son, but a most zealous champion of the church of Rome in the first half of his reign, and fought the battles of the Pope, both by his sword and by his pen. With this last instrument he took the field against Martin Luther, by his book, *de Septem Sacramentis*, of the Seven Sacraments. A splendid copy of this royal performance was presented to the Pope in full consistory in October, A.D. 1521., by Doctor John Clark, Dean of Windsor, the King's ambassador at Rome, and received with great respect and ceremony. The Pope assured the ambassador, that he would recommend the book to all Christian princes, and publish it with as honourable a testimony from the holy see as ever was given to the works of St. Austin and St. Jerome; and that he would immediately adorn the King with some honourable title, as a reward for his religious zeal and learned labours. Accordingly His Holiness, by a bull, in the same month bestowed on Henry the title of Defender of the Faith; and in the same bull he extolled his book, as a most wonderful performance, sprinkled with the dew of divine grace; and returned immense thanks to Almighty God, who had been graciously pleased to inspire His Majesty's excellent mind, always inclined to that which was good, with so much grace from Heaven<sup>26</sup>. Henry was now the greatest favourite

Henry  
writes  
against  
Luther.

<sup>26</sup> Collier, Records, vol. ii. No. iv.

Cent. XVI. of the court of Rome; and if he had died at this time, would probably have been canonized.

Luther replies.

Few authors have had the pleasure of receiving such extravagant praises for their works, as Henry received for this performance. But neither the lustre of his crown, nor the acclamations of his admirers, intimidated his antagonist. Luther, irritated at some contemptuous expressions that the King had used, published an answer to his book; in which he treated him with unbecoming asperity, or rather scurrility, of which he afterwards repented. Of this it will be sufficient to give one example. “If he had erred  
 “like other men, he might have been forgiven;  
 “but when he knowingly and wittingly invents  
 “lies against the majesty of my King in heaven, I have a right to bespatter his English  
 “Majesty with mire, and trample the crown  
 “of this blasphemer against Christ under my  
 “feet<sup>27</sup>.” When Luther’s passion subsided, he became sensible of the error he had committed, and wrote a long letter of apology, dated September 1st, A. D. 1525.; in which he most earnestly implored forgiveness for the intemperate language of his book, to which, he says, he had been excited by His Majesty’s enemies, and not by his own inclination<sup>28</sup>. But the King was not to be appeased. To expose Luther he published his letter, and an answer to it, “To shew  
 “the world that he was not so weak as to be  
 “ensnared by the flattery of a little foolish friar,

<sup>27</sup> Collier, Records, vol. ii. No. iii.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid. No. 5.

“ nor

“ nor so fickle as to retract what he had written, and what he knew to be right.” <sup>29</sup> Cent. XVI.

This controversy between the King and Luther, and the title of defender of the faith, which he had received from the Pope, of which he was exceedingly vain, inflamed his zeal for the church of Rome, and his hatred of the reformers in Germany, and of those who inclined to their opinions in England. Luther had also irritated his great favourite, Cardinal Wolsey, by calling him, in his apologetical letter to the King, “ that plague of your kingdom, that monster, hated by God and man, the Cardinal of York.” Luther’s person being out of the reach both of the King and Cardinal, who were equally incensed against him, they spent their resentment upon his works, and on those who read them. The Cardinal, by virtue of his legantine commission, sent a mandate to all the bishops, abbots, and priors, in England, enjoining them to cause an order to be read in all the churches under their jurisdiction in the time of divine service, commanding all persons, both of the clergy and laity, who had any books written by that pestilent heretic, Martin Luther, to deliver them to their ordinary within fifteen days, under the pain of being reputed and punished as heretics. With this mandate he sent a paper to be affixed to the door of every church, containing forty-two propositions, extracted from the works of Luther, which had been condemned by the

Luther’s  
books pro-  
hibited.



**Cent. XVI.** Pope as damnable heresies<sup>30</sup>. But all these precautions did not prevent the importation of Luther's works, or their being translated into English, but rather increased the curiosity of the people to be acquainted with them.

**Convoca-  
tions.**

A misunderstanding had prevailed for some time between Cardinal Wolsey and Warham Archbishop of Canterbury. The Cardinal, by his legantine power, his place of chancellor, his immense revenues, and his high favour with the King, quite eclipsed the Archbishop, by drawing almost all causes into his courts, and disposing of almost all preferments, both in church and state. But great as his power was, he sometimes stretched it too far. Archbishop Warham had summoned a convocation of the prelates and clergy of his province to meet at St. Paul's, April 20th, A.D. 1523., and the Cardinal had summoned a convocation of his province of York to meet at Westminster, at the same time. But as soon as the convocation of Canterbury met, and were about to proceed to business, the Cardinal summoned them to attend him April 22d, in a legantine council at Westminster. This extraordinary step gave great offence to the prelates and clergy of the province of Canterbury. They obeyed the summons; but when they came to treat of business, the proctors for the clergy observed, that their commissions gave them no authority to treat or vote but in convocation. This objection proved unanswerable, and the Cardinal, to his great mortification, was obliged to dismiss

<sup>30</sup> Strype, p. 37—40. Records, No. ix.

his

his legantine council. The convocation of Canterbury returned to St. Paul's, and granted the King one half of all their benefices for one year, to be paid in five years. The reasons they assigned for granting this extraordinary subsidy were these: " That their most pious King had prevented a schism in the papacy; that by a great army, and a most expensive war, he had preserved Italy and Rome from being conquered by the French; and that he had lately defeated and confounded all the Lutheran heretics, raging like madmen against the church and sacraments, by his most learned book, which it is impossible to praise sufficiently <sup>31</sup>. The convocation of the province of York sat at the same time at Westminster, and granted the King the same subsidy. <sup>32</sup>

Cent. XVI.

Though Cardinal Wolsey had been constrained to dismiss his legantine or national council, on account of the irregular manner in which it had been called, he was determined to hold such a council, and to shine at the head of all the clergy of England. He therefore summoned all the prelates, both of the regulars and seculars, and the representatives of the inferior clergy, to appear before him June 2d at Westminster. The pretence for calling this council was to reform the manners of the clergy, which the Cardinal said had been recommended to him by the Pope; and in doing it he declared he was determined to employ all the power and wisdom that God had given him <sup>33</sup>. What was done in this council for the reformation of the clergy we are not informed; but there is sufficient evidence,

National council.

<sup>31</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 699.<sup>32</sup> Ibid. p. 698.<sup>33</sup> Ibid. that

**Cent. XVI.** that no remarkable reformation took place at this time, and that the Cardinal, who appeared so zealous for reforming others, had not the wisdom to reform himself. The truth is, that a vicious corrupt clergy, though they might talk and flourish about reformation and purity of manners in their synods and councils, are not likely to be either very zealous or very successful in promoting the real reformation of themselves or others.

**Persecutions.**

There was one vice, indeed, which the clergy most zealously endeavoured to extirpate. This was what they called the damnable vice of heresy; which consisted in reading the New Testament in English, the works of Wickliff and Luther, and of others of that learning, in denying the infallibility of the Pope, transubstantiation, purgatory, praying to saints, worshipping images, &c. &c. Notwithstanding the cruel punishments that had been inflicted on those who entertained these opinions, their number was still considerable; particularly in London, and in Colchester, and other parts of Essex. They called themselves *the Brethren in Christ*, and met together with great secrecy in one another's houses, to read the New Testament and other books, and to converse on religious subjects. Many of them were apprehended and brought before Cuthbert Tunstall Bishop of London, and Doctor Wharton his chancellor. But Bishop Tunstall being a prelate of uncommon learning and eloquence, and of great humanity, he generally prevailed upon them to renounce, or rather to dissemble, their opinions, by which they escaped a painful death, but incurred the painful reproaches of their own minds.



minds <sup>34</sup>. This persecution was conducted with Cent. XVI.  
much greater severity in the dioceses of Lincoln  
and Coventry. <sup>35</sup>

Cardinal Wolfey was now, A. D. 1527., in the Wolfey's  
greatness.  
zenith of his power and greatness. The Pope  
being detained in prison by the Emperor, consti-  
tuted Wolfey his vicar-general; investing him  
with all the power of the papacy. Having thus  
obtained the power, though not the name, of  
pope, he ruled the church with the most despotic  
fway, and encroached on the most undisputed  
rights of the other bishops, as well as of the laity.  
Among other encroachments, he established a  
court in his own house, called York-house, for  
all testamentary matters, which almost annihi-  
lated both the business and emoluments of the  
prerogative court of the Archbishop of Canter-  
bury. Against this innovation the Archbishop  
remonstrated again and again, in very strong  
but decent and respectful terms. But to these  
remonstrances the haughty vicar-general paid  
no regard, till he received a message from the  
King, of whom alone he stood in some awe. <sup>36</sup>

Such were the principal transactions, and such Great  
changes.  
the state of the church of England, in the first  
nineteen years of the reign of Henry VIII. In  
that period the King was the most zealous cham-  
pion of the court and church of Rome, and  
fought the battles of four successive popes by his  
sword, his purse, and his pen. In consequence of  
this, he was the greatest favourite of the court of  
Rome, loaded with the most extravagant praises,  
adorned with the title of defender of the faith,

<sup>34</sup> Strype, b. i. ch. 7, 8. <sup>35</sup> Fox, p. 896., &c. <sup>36</sup> Strype, b. i. ch. 6.

Cent. XVI. and honoured with the precious presents of consecrated swords, capes, and roses. But the last nineteen years of this reign present us with a very different state of things. In that period the King broke off all subjection to, and connection with, the Pope, and court of Rome; became their most violent enemy, and laboured to induce other princes to shake off their yoke. He assumed the title of Supreme Head of the Church of England; was acknowledged such by his parliament, by the clergy, by almost all his subjects, and persecuted those to death who refused to acknowledge his supremacy and renounce the Pope. By this conduct he cancelled all his former merits with the Pope, the cardinals, and all the zealous sons of the church of Rome, who loaded him with curses instead of praises, and represented him as worse than Judas, Caiphas, or Pilate, and the greatest enemy to God and holy church that had ever appeared. At last His Holiness thundered out against him the dreadful sentence of excommunication; gave him to the devil, absolved his subjects from their oaths of allegiance, and commanded them to depose him. He enjoined all Christian princes to declare war against him, and to seize all his dominions and every thing that belonged to him, to which he gave them a right<sup>37</sup>. These great and surprising changes were not brought about at once, but by various steps, which we shall now endeavour to trace.

Instability  
of the  
church.

Though the authority of the Pope, and the tenets and ceremonies of the church of Rome, seemed to

<sup>37</sup> Strype, b. i. ch. 43. Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 792.

be firmly established in England in the first part of this reign, the foundations on which they rested were in some degree undermined, and the fabric was not so firm as it appeared. The revival of learning, and the invention of the art of printing, made books more attainable, and some degree of knowledge more general, than they had been in former times. This also gave an opportunity to persons of different opinions to communicate their sentiments to the public. A great number of small books against the authority of the pope, transubstantiation, purgatory, images, pardons, pilgrimages, &c. were published in England, and many of Luther's works were imported and translated. All these were circulated with great secrecy, and perused with great avidity by the people; which rendered great multitudes of them secretly disaffected to the church. The clergy were very sensible of their danger from this quarter, and exerted all their power to prevent the circulation of these books, especially of the New Testament in English, which they represented as perfect poison to the souls of Christians. But all their efforts were ineffectual. The nobility and principal gentlemen hated the clergy, on account of their exorbitant power and riches, their pomp and pride, their rapacity, luxury, and other vices, and the laity in general wished to see them humbled. In a word, the zealous attachment and great power of the King seem to have been the chief support of the papal power and popish church in England at this time; and when these supports were withdrawn, the ponderous



Cent. XVI. derous fabric could no longer stand. How these supports came to be withdrawn is now to be narrated.

Henry's  
doubts  
about his  
marriage.

Henry VIII. lived in great conjugal harmony with his Queen Katherine of Spain, his brother's widow, about eighteen years. When he first began to entertain doubts of the legality of his marriage cannot be ascertained: but it was not till A. D. 1527. that he began to disclose these doubts to his confessor Longland, Bishop of Lincoln, to his favourite Cardinal Wolsey, and to some others. Having studied this question with great attention, and consulted many of the most learned men in his dominions, he came to be fully convinced that his marriage was incestuous, and contrary to the laws of God and nature; and that the Pope could not dispense with these laws. This conviction, and perhaps some other considerations, made him ardently desirous of obtaining a divorce, that he might be at liberty to contract a more unexceptionable marriage; and he resolved to apply to the Pope for that purpose.

History of  
the divorce  
already re-  
lated.

From the time that Henry applied to the court of Rome (A. D. 1526.) for a divorce, that affair influenced all his councils and negotiations, and directed all his civil and political transactions for several years. It was impossible, therefore, to give a clear, distinct, intelligible account of these transactions, without relating his negotiations at the court of Rome for obtaining that divorce, the delays, artifices, and double-dealing of that court, which at length provoked him to withdraw his obedience to the Pope, and assume the supremacy

macy in his own dominions, which made way for the many important changes that followed in the church and state of England. For these reasons, the history of the King's divorce from Queen Katherine, and of its immediate consequences, hath been already given in the second section of the first chapter of this book, to which the reader is referred. We shall now proceed to relate such transactions as were purely ecclesiastical, and that seem to merit a place in history.

While Henry was negotiating his divorce at the court of Rome, he encouraged his prelates and clergy to persecute all heretics without mercy; and issued a proclamation, commanding his chancellor, the judges of both benches, the justices of the peace, and all other civil officers and magistrates, to assist the bishops in extirpating all heresies and heretics<sup>38</sup>. Thus instigated and supported, some of the English prelates were exceedingly zealous and active in the cruel business of persecution. Thomas Bilney and Thomas Arthur of Cambridge were men of learning; and having imbibed the principles of Luther and the other reformers of Germany, they propagated these principles in the university and other places, with ability and success, by their writings, their preaching, and their conversation. They were both apprehended and imprisoned A. D. 1527.; and after suffering a long imprisonment and many hardships, they were prevailed upon by the importunity of their friends, and the dread of a painful death, to abjure their opinions. But

Cent. XVI.

Persecutions.

<sup>38</sup> Fox, p. 930.

Cent. XVI.

Bilney was soon after seized with the most excruciating remorse for his hypocrisy, and could enjoy no peace of mind till he returned to the profession of his real principles. He was again imprisoned, and soon after burnt at Norwich as a relapsed heretic, and endured the flames with great composure and fortitude<sup>39</sup>. About the same time (1530.) Thomas Hilton, a priest, after a long and severe imprisonment, was burnt at Maidstone<sup>40</sup>. Doctor John Stokesley, Bishop of London, was a more cruel persecutor than any of the other English prelates of this time. By him Richard Bayfield, a priest and monk of St. Edmonsbury, was tried and convicted of heresy, for importing, reading, and circulating, a great number of books written by Luther, Oecolampadius, Zuinglius, and others of that damnable sect. When the sentence was ready to be passed, the Bishop sent a letter to the mayor and sheriffs of London, requiring them in the bowels of Jesus Christ, to be present at passing the sentence, and to take the prisoner into their custody, and burn him to ashes<sup>41</sup>. Soon after this, James Bainham, a gentleman of the Middle Temple, eminent for piety, virtue, and learning, was apprehended by an order of the chancellor Sir Thomas More, and conducted to his house at Chelsea, where he treated him for some time with great kindness, and endeavoured to persuade him to renounce his opinions. But finding all his efforts ineffectual, he commanded him to be tied to a tree in his garden, called the Tree of Truth, and whip-

<sup>39</sup> Fox, p. 910—924.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid. p. 910.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid. p. 933.



ped him with his own hand. He then committed him to the Tower, and put him to the rack, to extort from him the names of his friends in the Temple, who entertained the same opinions. All his goods were confiscated, and his wife was committed to prison, because she would not discover where her husband's books were concealed. Bainham bore all these sufferings with fortitude, without betraying his friends, or abandoning his principles; and the chancellor, despairing of making any impression upon him, sent him to Bishop Stokesley to be tried for heresy. He was accordingly tried before the Bishop December 25th, A. D. 1531., in Sir Thomas More's house at Chelsea, and returned such pointed answers, mostly in scripture language, to a great number of interrogatories, as discover him to have been a man of learning, good sense, and great integrity. He was found guilty of heresy; and the bishop and chancellor having assailed him with earnest intreaties and persuasions, to save himself from an exquisitely painful death, before the irrevocable sentence was pronounced, his courage failed him, and, with great anguish and agitation of mind, he subscribed his abjuration. But he soon and bitterly repented of what he had done, and wrote a letter to the bishop, expressing his sorrow for his abjuration, on which he was apprehended and condemned as a relapsed heretic, and burnt in Smithfield.<sup>42</sup> Several other persons, in, different parts of England at this time, shared

<sup>42</sup> Fox, p. 927—939.

Cent. XVI. the same fate, and were committed to the flames for heresy.

Cardinal Wolsey selected from both universities several persons who were most eminent for genius and learning, to adorn the new and magnificent college he founded at Oxford; and among others, he made choice of John Frith of Cambridge. But it was soon discovered that Frith and several others of this select society were infected with heresy, and they were cast into prison and very harshly treated. The Cardinal, who, to his honour, was averse to persecution, being informed of this, commanded them to be set at liberty, thinking they had suffered sufficiently for their imprudence in discovering their opinions. Soon after Frith recovered his liberty, he went to the continent, where he remained about two years, and then returned to England. His return was not long a secret, and so much diligence was used by Sir Thomas More and Bishop Stokesley in searching for him, that he was at last discovered and apprehended, and committed to the Tower. When he was in the Tower he was engaged in a controversy with Sir Thomas More on transubstantiation, contending that the belief of that doctrine was not necessary to salvation, which Sir Thomas asserted. He had also a dispute with the Chancellor and his son-in-law Mr. Raftall, and Fisher Bishop of Rochester, on purgatory. He was drawn into both these controversies much against his will, and managed them with great modesty, as well as learning. But his antagonists had a  
more

more effectual way of silencing him than by their writings. They brought him to trial for heresy, and pronounced him guilty, because he denied that the belief of transubstantiation and purgatory was necessary to salvation. For that crime, this amiable, virtuous, and learned man, (for such he appears to have been,) was burnt in Smithfield July 4th, A. D. 1533.; and in his company one Andrew Hewel, a young man who had been instructed by him, and seemed ambitious to share his sufferings.<sup>43</sup> Though Mr. Frith behaved with the most undaunted firmness after he was apprehended, he had neglected no means of escaping from his pursuers, and had suffered great hardships for several months in wandering about under different disguises, in hopes of getting beyond seas. But the ports were so strictly guarded, that he could not escape.

Tracee's  
testament.

So ardent was the zeal of some of the English prelates at this time against what they call heresy, that they not only wreaked their vengeance on the living, but on the ashes of dead heretics, by committing them to the flames. William Tracee, a gentleman in Gloucestershire, in his last will, declared, that he did not think it necessary to pray to saints, or to celebrate masses for the souls of the dead, and therefore he left no money for that purpose. When this testament was produced in court to be proved, it was challenged as heretical, and carried to Archbishop Warham. Tracee was tried and found guilty of heresy A. D. 1532., and a sentence was pronounced, that his body

<sup>43</sup> Fox, p. 941—946.



Cent. XVI. should be taken out of the grave and burnt. The execution of this sentence was committed to Doctor Parker, Chancellor of Worcester, by whom it was executed. Though Henry was sufficiently fierce against heresy and heretics, he was shocked at this transaction when it came to his knowledge. Doctor Parker was questioned for burning Tracee's body without a writ *de heretico comburendo*, (which he did not think necessary in burning a dead heretic), and compounded for his delinquency by paying 300l. to the King.<sup>44</sup>

Many  
abjured.

Besides those above-mentioned, a great multitude of men and women in different parts of England were cruelly persecuted at this time for denying transubstantiation, purgatory, the worship of images, praying to saints, and other peculiar tenets and ceremonies of the church of Rome. But the far greatest part of these sufferers, after enduring imprisonment and other hardships, were prevailed upon, by the importunity of their friends and the fear of death, outwardly to renounce opinions which they inwardly believed, and to become hypocrites rather than martyrs. Enough hath been said on this unpleasant subject at present, to shew the cruel intolerant spirit of the King and clergy of England, immediately before their separation from the church of Rome; and to preserve the memory of those good, pious, and brave men, who preferred death to dissimulation, and resigned their lives rather than their principles, which they thereby more

<sup>44</sup> Fox, p. 951.

effectually

effectually recommended, than they could have done by any other means. Cent. XVI.

When the patience of Henry VIII. was worn out by the dilatory delusive conduct of the court of Rome, and he almost despaired of obtaining what he thought justice from that court, in the affair of his divorce, the ardour of his attachment to Rome began to abate: he could then bear to hear that the power of the Pope was not unlimited; that he could not dispense with the laws of God; and even that the authority which the bishops of Rome had so long exercised over the universal church, was an usurped authority, from which he at length determined to emancipate himself and his subjects. This he knew would save them no little labour and a great deal of money, and would bring a great accession both of power and revenue to the crown. He was aware that he would meet with great opposition in the execution of this design, and that the court of Rome would move heaven and earth to raise him up enemies, both at home and abroad. He resolved therefore to proceed with caution, and to carry the parliament, the convocation, and his other subjects, along with him in every step. Henry resolves to break with the Pope.

So early as A.D. 1529. Henry threw out a threatening, that if the Pope did not do him justice without delay, he would withdraw himself and his subjects from all obedience to him, and connection with him. This threatening was not, perhaps, sincere; it is certain it was not believed. The Pope and cardinals could not imagine that the great champion of the church, Parliament.

Cent. XVI. who had been so proud of the honours he had received for fighting their battles with his sword, his purse, and his pen, would ever forsake them: it had, therefore no effect; and Henry, meeting with fresh delays and disappointments, resolved to execute, or at least to shew the Pope that he could execute, what he had threatened. The parliament that met for the first time Nov. 5th, A. D. 1529., proved very complying with the King's views, and was therefore continued about six years by various prorogations; and in its several sessions made great changes in the state of the church of England. In the very first session, the house of commons discovered not a little dissatisfaction with the conduct of the clergy, particularly, with the exorbitant exactions of the spiritual court in the probates of wills, and of the parish priests in mortuaries; and laws were made for regulating and restraining these exactions<sup>45</sup>. When these bills were passing the house of commons, some of the members spoke with great warmth against the extortions of the spiritual courts, and others painted the cruelty of incumbents in demanding mortuaries in very strong colours<sup>46</sup>. In a word, the clergy of England, immediately before the Reformation, and at the opening of this parliament, were in very disagreeable circumstances; they were not only hated by all who secretly wished for a reformation, for the cruelty with which they persecuted those whom they denominated heretics; but they were envied and disliked on several accounts, by

<sup>45</sup> Statutes, 21 Hen. VIII. Cap. 5. 6.

<sup>46</sup> Wilkins, tom. iii. p. 739.



the generality of the laity of all ranks; and they were also in a præmunire, and at the King's mercy, which made them more tractable, and more feeble in their opposition to the great changes that soon after followed, than they would have been in better circumstances. Cent. XVI.

In the next session of this parliament, which commenced July 30th, A. D. 1530., a bolder step was taken. The house of lords wrote a very spirited letter to the Pope, accusing him in very plain terms of ingratitude and injustice in delaying and declining to grant their sovereign the divorce which he solicited, which had been pronounced just and necessary by the most famous universities and most learned men in Europe. In conclusion they declared, that if His Holiness refused or delayed to grant their just request, they would seek and find relief some other way<sup>47</sup>. This famous letter was subscribed by twenty-eight spiritual and forty-two temporal lords. It was evidently intended to alarm the Pope, by shewing him, that if the King was provoked by further delays to withdraw his obedience to the see of Rome, he would not be deserted by his subjects, nor even by his clergy. But it did not produce the desired effect. His Holiness returned a smooth and artful answer, (September 27th, A. D. 1530.,) in which he bestowed the highest commendations upon the King, expressed his own gratitude for his many great services, and his earnest desire to oblige him as far as he could with justice, in the strongest terms. But that when the Queen sus-

<sup>47</sup> Herbert, p. 141.

Cent. XVI. peeted the two cardinals appointed to try the cause in England of partiality, and appealed to the apostolical tribunal, he could not refuse to admit her appeal without injustice. That all the subsequent delays had been owing to the King himself, who refused to send a proctor to Rome to plead his cause. He concluded with saying, "As for what you mention in the end of your letter, that unless we grant your request herein you shall imagine that the care of yourselves is remitted into your own hands, and that you are left at liberty to seek remedy herein elsewhere: this is a resolution neither worthy of your prudence, nor becoming your Christianity; and we therefore, of our fatherly love, exhort you to abstain from any such rash attempt."

The King  
supreme  
head of the  
church.

The King now almost despaired of obtaining a divorce by a sentence of the Pope, and therefore he brought that affair before his parliament in its next session, March 30th, A. D. 1531., as hath been already related. He laid the same business also at the same time before the convocation, and produced the opinions of so many universities and learned men against the legality of his marriage, as convinced a great majority of both the upper and lower house, that the marriage was contrary to the laws of God and nature, and that the Pope could not dispense with these laws. The King being now confident of the concurrence both of the parliament and convocation in any steps he should find it necessary to take against the Pope, he boldly assumed

<sup>48</sup> Herbert, p. 145:

the title of supreme head of the church of England. Cent. XVI.  
 This title appeared for the first time in the petition of the convocation of the province of Canterbury to the King, for relief from the penalties of their *præmunire*, by a pardon. It did not pass in the convocation without opposition; but being assured by Thomas Cromwell, and some others of the privy council, that their petitions would be rejected if they gave not the King that title, the opposers silently acquiesced. Both the clergy and the laity in the north were more bigotted than those in the south; and the giving the King this title met with more opposition in the convocation of York than of Canterbury; but as they found that they could not obtain their pardon on any other terms, they at length submitted <sup>49</sup>. Only Culbert Tunstall, Bishop of Durham, protested against that title. <sup>50</sup>

This was not designed to be an insignificant empty title, but was intended to convey to the King, in his own dominions, all the powers and revenues which the Popes had long possessed in England. To convince the court of Rome that this was his intention, and that he could accomplish it, the next session of parliament, A. D. 1532., transferred one considerable branch of revenue, the annats or first fruits from the Pope to the King <sup>51</sup>. This was a severe blow, as these annats amounted to no small sum, and as it was a prelude to similar transfers of other branches of the papal revenues. This proceeding was very

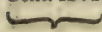
Annats  
given to  
the King.

<sup>49</sup> Burnet, p. 112.

<sup>50</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 745.

<sup>51</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 117.



Cent. XVI.  disagreeable to many of the English clergy as they saw its tendency to a breach with Rome, and to subject them in all things to their own sovereign, and the laws of their country, in common with the laity. Archbishop Warham, finding that the torrent began to run strong against the Pope and church, particularly in the house of commons, protested in the hands of a notary public before three witnesses February 24th, 1532., in his palace of Lambeth, against all the laws that had been made, or that should thereafter be made, by the present parliament, in derogation of the authority of the Pope, or the rights and immunities of the church<sup>52</sup>. The design of this private protest against those laws to which he had given his consent in public, is not very obvious.

The commons complain of the clergy.

The house of commons in this session presented a petition to the King against the clergy, complaining that they harassed the laity by vexatious prosecutions in their spiritual courts; and that they made and executed laws and canons without the royal assent; and that some of these canons were contrary to the laws of the land. The King transmitted this complaint of the commons to the convocation that was then sitting, and commanded them to return an answer. In their answer (which is written with uncommon art, they affirm, that they exercised their spiritual jurisdiction with the greatest lenity, except “ upon certain evil-disposed persons, infected and utterly “ corrupt with the pestilent poison of heresy, and “ to have had peace with such, it had been against

<sup>52</sup> Wilkin, p. 746.

“ the gospel of our Saviour Christ, wherein he  
 “ faith, *non veni mittere pacem, sed gladium.*” In Cent. XVI.  
 their answer to the second article of complaint,  
 they assert roundly, “ We repute and take our  
 “ authority of making laws to be grounded upon  
 “ the scripture of God, and determination of  
 “ holy church.” They add, that as they derived  
 their authority to make laws from God, “ We  
 “ may not submit the execution of our charge  
 “ and duty, certainly prescribed by God, to Your  
 “ Highness’s assent, although in very deed the  
 “ same be most worthy.” With respect to the  
 inconsistency which the commons pretended was  
 between the laws of the land, and the canons of  
 the church, they observed that as the canons were  
 made by the authority, and were perfectly agree-  
 able to the will of God, it would be proper for  
 His Grace and the parliament to change their laws,  
 and bring them to a perfect conformity to those  
 of the church. This was a strain rather too  
 bold for the times, as they soon after found. <sup>53</sup>

The King was far from being pleased with this Convoca-  
tion.  
 answer, and soon brought the clergy to lower  
 their tone. He sent them two propositions, to  
 which he demanded their assent: “ 1. That no  
 “ constitution or ordinance shall be hereafter by  
 “ the clergy, enacted, promulgated, or put in exe-  
 “ cution, unless the King’s Highness do approve  
 “ the same by his high authority and royal assent.  
 “ 2. That whereas divers of the constitutions  
 “ provincial, which have been heretofore enacted,  
 “ be thought not only much prejudicial to the

<sup>53</sup> Wilkin, p. 750.

Cent. XVI. “ King’s prerogative, but also much onerous to  
“ His Highness’s subjects, it be committed to the  
“ examination and judgment of thirty-two per-  
“ sons; whereof sixteen to be of the upper and  
“ lower house of the temporality, and other fix-  
“ teen of the clergy; all to be appointed by the  
“ King’s Highness: so that, finally, whichsoever  
“ of the said constitutions shall be thought and  
“ determined by the most part of the said thirty-  
“ two persons worthy to be abrogate and annul-  
“ led, the same to be afterwards taken away, and  
“ to be of no force or strength.” Nothing could  
be more disagreeable to the generality of the  
clergy than these two propositions, which tended  
to deprive them of the independent power of mak-  
ing and executing laws, which they pretended  
they had received from God, and to subject the  
sacred canons of the church to be examined and  
repealed by laymen. The convocation held sever-  
al meetings on this subject, and proposed various  
emendations: in particular, they proposed to sub-  
mit all their canons to the examination of the  
King alone: “ Having (say they) especial trust  
“ and confidence in your most high and excellent  
“ wisdom, your princely goodness, and fervent  
“ zeal to the promotion of God’s honour and the  
“ christian religion, and especially your incom-  
“ parable learning, far exceeding, in our judg-  
“ ment, the learning of all other kings and  
“ princes that we have read of.” But all this flat-  
tery was ineffectual. No alteration of the pro-  
positions would be admitted; and they were at last  
(May 16th, A. D. 1532.) obliged to give their  
assent



assent to the propositions as they stood. But before they did this, they gave in a paper to the King, in which they declared, that they gave their assent to these propositions only in consideration of his high wisdom, great learning, and infinite goodness to them and the church; and asserted in the strongest terms, their divine right to make and execute laws without the royal assent, "which" (add they) Your Highness yourself, in your own "book, most excellently written against Martin "Luther, doth not only acknowledge and confess, but also with most vehement and inexpugnable reasons and authorities doth defend, "which we reckon that of your honour you "cannot, nor of your goodness you will not, revoke." This was a severe stroke, which was probably remembered to their disadvantage.<sup>54</sup>

Cent. XVI.

Archbishop Warham did not long survive this mortifying transaction. He died in the month of August, A. D. 1532. He was a man of learning, and possessed uncommon prudence and command of temper, which he had frequent opportunities of exercising. In the former part of his pontificate he was eclipsed and controlled by the overpowering influence of Cardinal Wolsey, who, by his favour with the King, and his legantine commission from the Pope, ingrossed almost all power, both in church and state; and in the last part of it, he was much disquieted by the misunderstanding between the King and the Pope, by the attacks of the laity upon the church and clergy, and by the increase of those opinions which he esteemed

Death of  
Archbishop  
Warham.

<sup>54</sup> Wilkin, p. 748—755.

here.

Cent. XVI. heretical. His severity in the prosecution of heretics was the greatest blemish in his character; but it should be considered, that in those times mercy to those who dissented from the church was considered as one of the greatest crimes in a prelate, and persecuting them to death as one of the greatest virtues; so strangely were the minds of men perverted by bigotry and superstition.

Doctor  
Cranmer  
primate,

Henry having for some time entertained a very high opinion of the learning, prudence, and integrity of Doctor Thomas Cranmer, resolved to raise him to the primacy, and with that view recalled him from his embassy to the imperial court. Cranmer, who was neither covetous nor ambitious, was far from being delighted with the prospect of this great promotion; on the contrary, foreseeing the difficulties and dangers with which it would be attended, he declined it with much earnestness and sincerity. But the King was positive; and he complied, in hopes of promoting a reformation in the church, of which he was sensible of the necessity.<sup>55</sup>

consecrated.

A difficulty soon occurred. Doctor Cranmer had strong scruples about taking the oath of canonical obedience to the Pope, both because he thought it inconsistent with the oath he was to take to the King, and because he apprehended that it would restrain him from promoting that reformation in the church which he intended; and for these scruples it is certain there was some ground. But as the King at this time entertained hopes of a reconciliation with the court of Rome, which he

<sup>55</sup> Strype's Life of Cranmer, ch. 4.

still desired; and as the Pope had approved of the election of Doctor Cranmer, and had sent over all the bulls for his consecration; it was thought necessary not to omit the oath which these bulls required. This question was at length referred to certain canonists and casuists, who proposed the following salvo, that the primate elect, before he took the oath to the Pope, should make a formal protestation: "That he did not intend, by taking that oath, to restrain himself from doing what he thought to be his duty to God, to his King, and his country." This salvo, though liable to great objections, was adopted. He made the proposed protestation before he took the oath of canonical obedience, and was consecrated March 13th, A.D. 1533., by the Bishops of Lincoln, Exeter, and St. Asaph<sup>56</sup>. As both the parliament and convocation were then sitting, the new primate was immediately engaged in very important transactions, which have been already related, viz. the dissolution of the King's marriage with the first Queen Katherine of Spain, and the confirmation of his marriage with his second Queen Anne Boleyn.<sup>57</sup>

Several efforts were made by Henry A. D. 1533., aided by his ally the King of France, to prevail upon the Pope to dissolve the marriage between him and Queen Katharine, to prevent a total rupture between Rome and England, and to pave the way for a reconciliation. But all these efforts were unsuccessful, and a rash sentence pronounced by the Pope (under the influence, it is

Breach  
between  
Rome and  
England.

<sup>56</sup> Burnet, p. 128.

<sup>57</sup> See chap. i. sect. ii.



Cent. XVI.

saïd, of passion) in a full consistory, March 23d, A. D. 1534., confirming the marriage between Henry and Katharine, and declaring it lawful, brought that tedious and perplexing affair to a crisis, and produced a total breach between the court and church of Rome and the court and church of England<sup>58</sup>: one of the most important and propitious events in the history of Great Britain.

Acts of  
parlia-  
ment.

The breach being now made became daily wider and wider: mutual injuries were multiplied; and the English parliament made several acts, and the convocation several canons, which rendered a reconciliation almost impossible. The act that had been made in a former session of this parliament against the payment of first-fruits to the Pope was confirmed, and many new clauses added concerning the election and consecration of prelates, without any application to Rome for bulls of any kind; and those who violated this law were declared to be in a *præmunire*<sup>59</sup>. By another act, all appeals to the Pope and his courts at Rome were prohibited under the same penalty; and the power of determining causes in the last resort was in some cases conferred on the primate, and in others on the King<sup>60</sup>. By another law, which is very long and particular, all payments to the Pope, for Peter-pence, dispensations, procurations, provisions, bulls, delegacies, rescripts, licences, faculties, grants, relaxations, rehabilitations, abolitions, &c. &c. are prohibited<sup>61</sup>.

<sup>58</sup> Wilkin. Concil tom. iii. p. 769.

<sup>59</sup> Statutes, 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid. cap. 19.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid. cap. 21.

By these laws the Pope was deprived of all the power and all the revenues he had long possessed in England. This was a severe blow, which, it is probable, His Holiness did not expect. These laws were first brought into the house of commons, and they treated the Pope with little respect or ceremony, calling him and his predecessors impostors, who had long deceived the world by false pretences, and usurpers of powers and prerogatives to which they had no title. If any person in England had used this language only a few years before, he would have been committed to the flames. The same parliament in the next session, November A.D. 1534., granted to the King, as supreme head on earth of the church of England, and to his heirs and successors, all the powers, prerogatives, and emoluments, they had taken from the Pope, which brought a great accession both of power and revenue to the crown.<sup>62</sup>

Cent. XVI.

Henry and his ministers were at no little pains to reconcile the minds of his subjects of all ranks to this great change in the government of the church, and to eradicate their veneration for the Pope, and their respect for his authority, to which they had been so long accustomed. With this view he procured and published the opinions of the universities of Oxford and Cambridge: "That the Bishop of Rome had no more authority in England, by the word of God, than any other foreign bishop." All the English bishops subscribed and sealed, and took a solemn oath to adhere to the same opinion. The name of the

Precautions.

<sup>62</sup> Statutes, 26 Hen. VIII. cap. 1. and 3.

Cent. XVI.

Pope was struck out of all the books that were used in the service of the church. A very strict injunction was issued, commanding all prelates to preach every Sunday and holiday in support of the King's supremacy, and against the authority of the Bishop of Rome, and to command their clergy to do the same. Instructions were sent to all the sheriffs to keep a watchful eye on the clergy in their several counties, and to send up the names of such as did not preach against the Pope's authority, and in vindication of the King's supremacy; or did it in a delusory superficial manner. Even schoolmasters were enjoined to give proper instructions to their scholars on these subjects. Several books were written and circulated with great industry, to convince the world that the dominion which the Bishop of Rome claimed and exercised over the Christian church, as Christ's vicar upon earth, was an usurpation, and had no foundation in Scripture<sup>63</sup>. Spies were sent into all parts of the country, and even into Scotland, to hear and report the observations that were made upon the late transactions<sup>64</sup>. These prudent precautions were neither unnecessary, nor without effect: they were not unnecessary, because several of the clergy, particularly of the friars, travelled up and down the country preaching with vehemence in support of the papal pretensions, and inflaming the minds of the people against the King for assuming the supremacy; they were not without effect, because they put a stop to the inflammatory declamations of those dangerous incendiaries; and

<sup>63</sup> Wilkin. p. 771—776.<sup>64</sup> Strype's Mem. ch. 21.



encouraged such of the clergy as wished for a Cent. XVI.  
 reformation, and even some who had nothing at  
 heart but their own promotion, to endeavour by  
 their preaching and writings to convince the  
 people, that the claim of the Bishop of Rome to  
 the government of the whole church was not  
 well founded; and that the King had an un-  
 doubted right to the supremacy in his own domi-  
 nions, by which the peace of the kingdom was  
 at this time preserved.<sup>65</sup>

Still further to secure the public tranquillity,  
 the sentence of divorce that had been pronounced  
 by the Archbishop of Canterbury between the  
 King and his first Queen Katharine, and the sen-  
 tence of the same prelate confirming the King's  
 marriage with his second Queen Anne Boleyn,  
 were confirmed by parliament; and by the same  
 act the succession to the crown was settled on  
 the King's issue male by Queen Anne, or any fu-  
 ture queen: and failing them, on the Princess  
 Elizabeth and her issue, by which the Princess  
 Mary was excluded as illegitimate. This act was  
 to be published in every county of the kingdom  
 before the 1st of May, A. D. 1534.; and if any  
 person, after that day, did any thing, by act or  
 writing, to disparage the King's present mar-  
 riage, or to defeat the succession as then settled,  
 he was to be punished as a traitor; and all sub-  
 jects above the age of twenty-one were appointed  
 to take a solemn oath, acknowledging the legality  
 of the King's marriage with Queen Anne, and en-  
 gaging to support the succession<sup>66</sup>. Fisher, Bishop  
 of Rochester, and Sir Thomas More, (as hath

<sup>65</sup> Strype, ch. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24.<sup>66</sup> Statutes, 25 Hen. cap. 22.

**Cent. XVI.** been before narrated,) fell sacrifices with this law; and the execution of two persons so eminent for their rank, and so renowned for their piety, virtue, and learning, struck terror into all others. The oath was taken not only by the laity of all ranks, but by all the clergy both regular and secular, though it contained a clause acknowledging the King's supremacy; and declaring that the Bishop of Rome had no more authority in England than any other foreign bishop<sup>67</sup>. The Pope therefore appeared now to have lost all his influence, and all his partisans in England. But this was a fallacious appearance. Great multitudes took this oath only to save their lives, and with a resolution to break it as soon as they could do it with safety.

**Proclamation.**

Though the church of England was now separated from the church of Rome, it still retained all the doctrines and ceremonies, together with the odious persecuting spirit, of that church. The King, in the beginning of 1535., issued a proclamation, threatening death without mercy to all who denied or disputed the doctrine of transubstantiation, or any of the other doctrines of the holy church, or who contemned or violated any of the laudable rights and ceremonies heretofore used; as holy bread, holy water, procession, kneeling, and creeping to the cross on Good Friday, &c. &c. By this proclamation such of the clergy as had married were deprived of their orders and benefices, and declared to be laymen, and such as presumed to marry afterwards

<sup>67</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 774. 780, 781, 782.

were

were not only to be deprived, but also imprisoned and punished as the King pleased<sup>68</sup>. Several Anabaptists, who had fled from persecution in Germany, and had taken shelter in England about this time, were apprehended and put to death, not only for their doctrine concerning baptism but chiefly for denying transubstantiation<sup>69</sup>. In a word, no idea was yet entertained of the right of private judgment in matters of religion. Henry was the pope of England; heresy was still accounted the greatest of all crimes, and subjected those who were convicted of it to the most cruel of all punishments.

Cent. XVI.

Cromwell  
vicegerent.

The King being now fully invested with the title of supreme head of the church of England, and with all the powers annexed to that title, resolved to exercise these powers in their full extent. To accomplish this, he appointed Thomas Cromwell, then secretary of state, his vicar-general and vicegerent, with authority to visit all ecclesiastical persons and communities in his dominions, to rectify and correct all abuses, and, in a word, to do every thing that he himself could do as supreme head of the church of England. He granted him also a power to give commissions under the great seal to such persons as he should think proper, to assist him in performing the duties of that high and arduous office. Cromwell accordingly gave commissions to Doctors Leighton, Lee, London, and many other persons, containing very ample powers to visit all churches, metropolitical, cathedral, and col-

<sup>68</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. 778.<sup>69</sup> Ibid. p. 779.



Cent. XVI. legiate; all monasteries, and priories, both of men and women; to enquire into the conduct of archbishops, bishops, and dignitaries; of abbots and priors, abbeſſes, priořeſſes, monks, and nuns, both as to ſpirituals and temporals: and to cenſure and puniſh ſuch as were found delinquents, according to their demerits.<sup>70</sup>

Viſitation  
of monaſ-  
teries.

Though theſe commiſſioners were authoriſed to viſit the ſecular clergy, even of the higheſt dignity, this, it is probable, was not deſigned to be executed, but only to exhibit an appearance of impartiality, and to conceal from the monaſtics the dreadful blow that was intended to be given them. It is certain the inſtructions that were given to theſe viſitors relate only to convents, and bore the following title: “Articles to be inquired into in this royal viſitation of monaſtics, eſpecially of thoſe who are exempt from the juriſdiction of their dioceſan, who are now at laſt ſubjected to the juriſdiction of His Majeſty.” Theſe inſtructions are very particular, and conſiſt of no fewer than eighty-fix articles: many of them relate to the ſtate and management of their revenues, their relics, jewels, plate, furniture, corn, cattle, and goods of every kind. Several of them ſeem to intimate a ſuſpicion, that the monks and nuns did not obſerve their vows of chaſtity very ſtrictly, and ſuggeſt the inquiries to be made on that ſubject. They were to inquire, whether the monks of any monaſtery were defamed for incontinency; whether women were obſerved to reſort to it by back-

<sup>70</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 784, 785.

ways;

ways; and whether boys and young men frequently slept with the abbot, or the monks. Cent. XVI.  
 With respect to nunneries, they were directed to examine very carefully the height of the outward wall, the strength of the doors and windows, and of their bars and bolts; to search very diligently for dark and secret passages; to inquire whether the gates and doors were kept shut, and whether the keys were ever committed to the keeping of any of the young nuns, &c. &c.<sup>71</sup>

Henry had various reasons to dislike the monks: Henry dislikes the monks. he was provoked by their declamations, both public and private, against his divorce: he suspected them of conveying intelligence to his enemies abroad, and of fomenting disaffection among his subjects at home. Though they had lately taken a solemn oath to support his supremacy, he knew they were still devoted to the Pope, his greatest enemy. Their spoils also presented a tempting bait to a prince who was at once profuse and covetous. It was evidently hazardous to attempt to overturn an establishment so ancient, so opulent, and which had long been esteemed sacred. But several circumstances now concurred to render such an attempt less dangerous than formerly. The monks were hated by the secular clergy, had lost the favour of the laity of all ranks by their vices, and could expect no protection from their great patron at Rome. Henry was encouraged to attack them by Cranmer and Cromwell, who thought their revenues might be employed to better purposes;

<sup>71</sup> Wilkin. Concil. tom. iii. p. 786—789.

Cent. XVI.

and the present visitation was intended to pave the way for their suppression, by detecting and exposing their secret enormities and vices.

Reports  
of the vi-  
sitors.

The visitors, having received their commissions and instructions, were dispatched into different parts of the kingdom at the same time, that the monks might have as little warning of their approach as possible. They executed their commissions with zeal and diligence, and made some curious discoveries almost in every house, not much to the honour of its inhabitants. In making these discoveries they were greatly indebted to the violent factions and animosities which reigned among the monks and nuns, who informed against one another, and against their superiors. Accounts of their proceedings were transmitted by the visitors to the vicar-general, and contained sufficient materials to render the monastics completely infamous, and the objects of universal detestation, for their gross absurd superstition and idolatry, their infernal cruelty, their shameful impositions on the credulity of the people, their abandoned unnatural incontinency, their drunkenness, gluttony, and other vices. Some of the old abbots and friars did not attempt to conceal their amours, which they knew to be impossible. The holy father, the Prior of Maiden-Bradley, assured the visitors that he had only married six of his sons and one of his daughters out of the goods of his priory as yet; but that several more of his children were now grown up, and would soon be marriageable. He produced a dispensation from the Pope permitting him to keep a mistress; and



and he acquainted them that he took none but young maidens to be his mistresses, the handsomest that he could procure; and when he was disposed to change, he got them good husbands<sup>72</sup>. But the page of history must not be stained with the abominations contained in the reports of these visitors. It may be sufficient to lay before the reader, a short description of their contents in the preamble to the act of parliament which they produced: “ Forasmuch as manifest sin, “ vicious, carnal, and abominable living, is daily “ used and committed in abbies, priories, and “ other religious houses of monks, canons, and “ nuns; and albeit, many continual visitations “ hath been heretofore had by the space of “ two hundred years and more, for an honest “ charitable reformation of such unthrifty, carnal, and abominable living, yet nevertheless, “ little or none amendment is hitherto had, “ but their vicious living shamefully increaseth “ and augmenteth,” &c.<sup>73</sup> It is but just to notice, that though the corruption of the monastics in England at this time was very general, it was not universal: some in almost every monastery were regular in their conduct, and at their own desire were set at liberty. A few convents were found to be well governed, and unexceptionable; and for the preservation of these, the visitors pleaded with great earnestness<sup>74</sup>. This affords a presumptive proof, that the complaints of the delinquent monks, of

<sup>72</sup> Strype, ch. 34. 35.<sup>73</sup> Statutes, 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 28.<sup>74</sup> Strype, p. 255.

Cent. XVI. the extreme severity of the visitors, were not well founded.

Small monasteries dissolved.

Having received ample information of the state of the convents, and the manners of their inhabitants, it was debated in council what was proper to be done; and on this subject several schemes were proposed<sup>75</sup>. It was believed to be dangerous to attempt the dissolution of all the religious houses in the kingdom at once; it was therefore very prudently resolved to begin with the smaller monasteries, which were said to be the most corrupt, and were certainly the weakest. The reports of the visitors were laid before parliament, which furnished the enemies of the monastics with materials for declaiming against them, and almost stopped the mouths of their friends. By the last act of the long parliament in April 1536., all the houses of monks, canons, and nuns, that had not above 200l. of yearly revenue, and did not contain above twelve members, were dissolved, and all their lands and goods granted to the King. By the same act, all the resignations that had been made of religious houses by their superiors to the King were confirmed<sup>76</sup>. The number of religious houses dissolved by this act was three hundred and seventy-six, and their former possessors were removed into the greater convents of the same order. The annual revenues arising from their lands was computed to be £32,000; and their jewels, plate, and furniture, with their corn, cattle, and other goods, were estimated

<sup>75</sup> Strype, p. 271, &c.

<sup>76</sup> Statutes, 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 28.

at £100,000 : but both these computations were much below their real value. Cent. XVI.

Several severe proclamations had been issued by the King, at the requisition of the clergy, against all who read, or kept by them, Tindal's Translation of the New Testament into English. A copy of this book found in the possession of any person was sufficient to convict him of heresy, and subject him to the flames. The bishops were at incredible pains to prevent the importation of those dangerous volumes, to seize them after their importation, and to punish the importers and purchasers. They pretended that Tindal's Translation was full of errors and heresies; and they promised to prepare and publish a more faithful translation; but they were in no haste to perform their promise. In the mean-time, those of the people of all ranks who suspected that many errors prevailed in the church, and wished for a reformation, became more and more importunate and impatient to have the use of the Scriptures in their native language. At length Archbishop Cranmer, wishing to gratify this laudable desire of the people, obtained the King's permission to prepare a translation of the Bible, to be published by authority. To accomplish this work, Cranmer divided the New Testament into nine parts, chose nine of the best Greek scholars he could find, and committed the translating of one of these parts to each. When they were all translated and returned to him, he sent one of these parts to one of the most learned of his brethren the bishops, to be corrected, and returned with their observations.

Translation of the Bible.



**Cent. XVI.** Eight of the nine bishops complied with this requisition; but Stokesley, Bishop of London, returned his part (the Acts of the Apostles) with a furlly message: That he disapproved the allowing the use of the Scriptures to the people, which would betray them into damnable errors, and disturb the peace of the church. The primate expressing some surprise at this message, one of the company observed, that Doctor Stokesley would give himself no trouble about any testament in which he had no legacy; and besides, (said he,) the apostles were so poor that they are quite below the notice of My Lord of London. This translation was not published till about three years after the order for preparing it was granted.<sup>77</sup>

**Convoca-  
tion.**

In a convocation of the province of Canterbury at St. Paul's, June 21st, A. D. 1536., the Lord Cromwell took his seat above the Archbishop as the King's vicegerent. In the fourth session, June 23d, Doctor Gwent, prolocutor of the lower house, brought up a complaint to the higher house, that many dangerous errors and damnable heresies were now publicly preached in all parts of England; and produced a schedule of no fewer than sixty-seven of those abuses, errors, and heresies, and required that they should be reformed. Many of these pretended errors and abuses are now the established doctrines and practices of the church of England; such as preaching against transubstantiation, purgatory, extreme unction, auricular confession, penances, pardons, in-

<sup>77</sup> Burnet, p. 195.

dulgences,

dulgences, praying to saints, worshipping images, Cent. XVI.  
and relics; pilgrimages, holy water, hallowed oil,  
bread, candles, ashes, and palms; and in a word,  
against all doctrines that have no foundation in  
Scripture, and all ceremonies that are merely of  
human invention. Against all these, the clergy  
of the lower house of convocation complained,  
that some heretical preachers declaimed, and  
many of the people talked, with impunity<sup>78</sup>.  
This is a sufficient proof, that the principles and  
spirit of the Reformation had at this time made no  
great progress among the clergy of the province  
of Canterbury. Though they had with extreme  
reluctance renounced the supremacy of the Pope,  
they still retained their attachment to all the  
tenets and ceremonies of the church of Rome.

The clergy of the province of York were still York con-  
vocation.  
more averse to all reformation, than their bre-  
thren in the south. The vicegerent had sent ten  
interrogatories to them, to which he required  
their answers. We may guess at the questions  
by the answers. To the first they answered —  
That all who preached against purgatory, wor-  
shipping of saints, pilgrimages, images, &c. should  
be committed to the flames as heretics. To  
the second — That neither the King, nor any  
temporal man, could be supreme head of the  
church by the laws of God. To the third —  
That they were not sufficiently instructed in the  
fact to return any answer. To the fourth — That  
no clerk ought to be put to death without degra-  
dation. To the fifth — That no man ought to

<sup>78</sup> Wilkin. p. 805.

Cent. XVI. be drawn out of sanctuary, but in certain cases expressed in the laws of the church. To the sixth — That the clergy in the north had not granted the tenths and first-fruits to the King in convocation; and by the laws of the church they can make no such grant; and that they had not given their consent to the act of parliament. They think, that by the laws of God no temporal man can claim such tenths and first-fruits. To the seventh — That lands given to God, the church, or religious men, may not be taken away, and put to profane uses, by the laws of God. To the eighth — We think dispensations lawfully granted by the Pope to be good; and pardons have been allowed by general councils and the laws of the church. To the ninth — We think, that by the law of the church, general councils, interpretations of approved doctors, and consent of Christian people, the Pope of Rome hath been taken for the head of the church, and vicar of Christ; and so ought to be taken. This was a very extraordinary answer from men who had lately renounced the supremacy of the Pope, and acknowledged the supremacy of the King by a solemn oath. They had probably obtained a dispensation from Rome. To the tenth they answered — We think that the examination and correction of deadly sin belongeth to the ministers of the church, by God's law<sup>79</sup>. Besides these answers, they boldly demanded the restoration of the monasteries, and the repeal of several acts of parliament. In these answers and demands we

<sup>79</sup> Strype's Appendix, No. lxxiv.



discover the seeds of that formidable rebellion Cent. XVI.  
 called the pilgrimage of grace, that broke out in  
 the north in October, A. D. 1536., about two  
 months after this convocation. The demands of  
 the insurgents were in the same spirit, and almost  
 in the same words with the answers of the convo-  
 cation.

England was at this time a scene of great anxiety and agitation, of violent animosities and disputes between the friends and enemies of reformation. The bishops were equally divided. Cranmer of Canterbury, Goodrich of Ely, Shaxton of Sarum, Latimer of Worcester, Fox of Hereford, Hillsley of Rochester, and Barlow of Saint David's, favoured, and endeavoured to promote a reformation both in the doctrines and ceremonies of the church; which was opposed with equal zeal by Lee of York, Stokesley of London, Tunstall of Durham, Gardiner of Winchester, Sherborne of Chichester, Nix of Norwich, and Kite of Carlisle<sup>80</sup>. The dignitaries in the several sees generally co-operated with their bishops; the inferior clergy, and the laity of all ranks, were no less divided, and as warmly engaged in this controversy. Many books were published on both sides, and passionate altercations raged in cities, towns, and villages, between the two parties. The King, desirous to allay this ferment, which threatened the most dangerous commotions, gave a commission to the bishops and some other learned men to draw up certain articles of union, to be published by royal authority, as the creed and ritual of the

<sup>80</sup> Fuller, p. 212.

Cent. XVI.

church of England, in which all the subjects were to be commanded to acquiesce. After many meetings and much altercation, the commissioners finished their work: each party relinquishing some of their peculiar opinions, in order to preserve others. It consisted of two parts: the first contained the doctrines necessary to be believed; and the second, the ceremonies proper to be retained to promote devotion. In the first part, the people were commanded to believe every thing contained in the Scriptures and three creeds; that called the Apostle's, the Nicene, and the Athanasian. The three sacraments, of baptism, of penance, and of the altar, are explained, and declared to be necessary to salvation. In the explanation of baptism, the necessity of baptizing infants is asserted, and rebaptism is declared to be a damnable heresy. In the explanation of penance, auricular confession to a priest is made necessary; and the people were to be taught to give no less faith and credence to the words "of absolution pronounced by the ministers of the church, than they would give unto the very voice and words of God himself, if he should speak unto us out of heaven." This most impious and pernicious doctrine was too honourable and advantageous to the clergy to be soon relinquished. In the explanation of the sacrament of the altar, transubstantiation is asserted in the strongest terms that could be devised. This first part concludes with an explanation of the doctrine of justification, nearly the same with that which hath been adopted by all Protestant churches. In the second part, concerning ceremonies, images

were to be continued in churches, and the people were to be permitted to present offerings to them, to kneel, and to burn incense before them; but they were to be taught that this was not done to the images themselves, but to the honour of God; “for else there might fortune  
“of idolatry to ensue, which God forbid.” This doth not seem to have been the most effectual way to prevent idolatry. Saints were to be honoured, but not with that confidence and honour that are only due unto God: that it was proper to pray to them to be our intercessors, and to pray for us to Almighty God. The people were to be instructed, “to pray for souls departed,  
“and to commit them in our prayers to God’s  
“mercy, and also to cause others to pray for  
“them in masses and exequies, and to give  
“alms to others to pray for them; whereby they  
“may be relieved and holpen of some part of  
“their pain.” By this the emoluments of the clergy were secured under the name of alms. The people were to be enjoined and exhorted to observe almost all the former ceremonies; but they were to be taught, “that none of these  
“ceremonies have power to remit sin, but only  
“to stir and lift up our minds unto God, by  
“whom only our sins be forgiven<sup>91</sup>.” These articles were published by the King, and all his subjects were commanded to receive and obey them. The friends of reformation seem to have gained some advantage on this occasion. The scriptures and the three ancient creeds were made

<sup>91</sup> Fuller, p. 215, &c.



Cent. XVI.

the standards of doctrine, without any mention of tradition. Four of the seven sacraments were omitted; purgatory was left doubtful, pilgrimages were not enjoined, and several other things were explained and softened. Both parties, however, were discontented. The papists complained that too much of the former system was given up; and the reformers, that too much of it was retained. These articles were subscribed by all the members of both houses of convocation.<sup>82</sup>

Injunctions.

Thomas Lord Cromwell, the King's vicar-general, published injunctions from time to time, directing the clergy what doctrines they were to preach, and instructing them, in an authoritative manner, how to perform the various duties of their sacred office. This was humiliating to the clergy, but it was necessary. Many of the parish priests never preached, and others of them preached only on such subjects as tended to inflame the bigotry and superstition of the people. The vicar-general, therefore, in his injunctions, commanded all rectors, vicars, and curates to preach one sermon in each quarter of the year; "Wherein," says he, "ye shall purely and sincerely declare the very gospel of Christ, and in the same exhort your hearers to works of charity, mercy, and faith, specially prescribed and commanded in scripture, and not to repose their trust and affiance in any other works devised by men's fantasies; besides scripture; as in wandering to pilgrimages, offering of money, candles, or tapers, to images or relics, or kissing or licking the same. If ye have here-

<sup>82</sup> Wilkin, p. 817.

" tofore

“ tofore declared to your parishioners any thing  
 “ to the extolling or setting forth pilgrimages,  
 “ feigned relics, or images, or any such su-  
 “ perstition, ye shall now openly before the same  
 “ recant and reprove the same; shewing them,  
 “ as the truth is, that ye did the same upon no  
 “ ground of scripture, but as one led and se-  
 “ duced by a common error and abuse crept  
 “ into the church, through the sufferance and  
 “ avarice of such as felt profit by the same<sup>83</sup>.”

Cent. XVI.

These and several other injunctions in the same strain and spirit, that were published by the vicar-general, A. D. 1536-7., were drawn up by Archbishop Cranmer: but they were very disagreeable to the great body of the clergy, who still retained a cordial affection to all the gainful tenets of the church of Rome. So much were many of the clergy dissatisfied with these injunctions, that they read them in such a manner that none could understand them, and told their people in private, to do as their fathers had done, and that the old way was the best.<sup>84</sup>

Henry VIII. became more and more tenacious of his new title of supreme head of the church of England, when he found that it brought him a very great accession both of power and revenue. At the same time he knew that the monastics of all the different orders in his dominions were secret enemies to his supremacy, and devoted to the Pope. He determined, therefore, first to disgrace them, by exposing their vices and impostures, and then to ruin them and enrich the crown with their spoils. In

Visitation.

<sup>83</sup> Wilkin, p. 816.<sup>84</sup> Strype's Cranmer, p. 70.

Cent. XVI. order to this, he appointed a new visitation, A.D. 1537., of all the remaining religious houses, in the kingdom: and the commissioners were instructed to make strict inquiry into the vices, the superstitious practices, and the cheats of the religious of both sexes, by which they deceived the people and nourished superstition to enrich themselves. Many of the monks were so much alarmed at the report of this visitation, that they surrendered their houses and possessions to the King, without waiting the arrival of the visitors. These surrenders were made on various pretences; but the principal motives that influenced the surrenderers were to prevent the publication and punishment of their vices, crimes, and impostures, and to procure better treatment and more liberal pensions. The chief employment of the visitors in this and the two following years, seems to have been settling the surrenders of monasteries, and the pensions of the abbots, priors, and monks; making surveys of their estates; taking possession of their relics, jewels, and plate (which in some houses was of great value); selling their furniture; pulling down their churches, and such of their other buildings as were only suited and useful to monastics; disposing of their bells, lead, and other materials. It is almost incredible how many magnificent churches, cloisters, dormitories, libraries, and other buildings which had been erected at an immense expence of money and labour, were unroofed and ruined, in the short space of three or four years. To this dreadful havoc Henry and his courtiers were prompted partly by their avarice,



avarice, and partly to prevent the re-establishment of the monasticks.<sup>85</sup> Cent. XVI.

Monasteries suppressed.

To finish this great affair, a parliament was called, which met at Westminster April 28th, A. D. 1540. On the 13th of May a bill was brought into the house of peers for granting to the King, and his heirs and successors, all the houses, lands, and goods of all the abbies, priories, nunneries, chantries, hospitals; and religious houses, that had already been surrendered or suppressed, or that should hereafter be surrendered or suppressed. The journals take no notice of any opposition to this bill in the house of peers: but it certainly met with opposition. There were no fewer than twenty abbots in that house, who could not all be silent on that occasion<sup>86</sup>. Besides, we are informed that Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Latimer Bishop of Worcester, and several other prelates that favoured the new learning, (as the reformation was then called,) pleaded earnestly for the preservation of three or four houses in every county, to be converted into schools for the education of youth, and hospitals for the relief of the poor; and that by their opposition to his favourite bill, they incurred the King's displeasure, which he soon after made them feel<sup>87</sup>. Great art was used to persuade the temporal peers and the gentlemen of the house of commons to pass this bill, against which they had many objections. They were assured, "That if the monasteries were suppressed, and their houses, lands, and goods,

<sup>85</sup> Burnet, vol. i. p. 235. &c.

<sup>86</sup> Journals, Dugdale, p. 501.

<sup>87</sup> Strype's Cranmer, p. 72.

Cent. XVI. “ granted to their King, there should be created  
 “ forty earls, sixty barons, three thousand  
 “ knights, and forty thousand soldiers with  
 “ skilful captains, and competent maintenance  
 “ for them all; and that no more loans or sub-  
 “ sidies should ever be demanded<sup>88</sup>.” This bill  
 accordingly passed both houses with much less  
 opposition than might have been expected; and  
 in consequence of it, all the possessions of six  
 hundred and forty-five convents, ninety col-  
 leges, two thousand three hundred and seventy-  
 four chantries and free chapels, and an hundred  
 and ten hospitals, were annexed to the crown.  
 The yearly rent of their lands was estimated at  
 160,000*l.*; which (if we may rely on the opi-  
 nion of a right reverend and well-informed his-  
 torian) was not one-tenth of their real value<sup>89</sup>.  
 The jewels, plate, furniture, and other goods,  
 which had belonged to all these houses, must  
 have amounted to a prodigious sum, of which no  
 computation can now be made. In many of the  
 richer monasteries their vestments were of cloth  
 of gold, silk, and velvet, richly embroidered; their  
 crucifixes, images, candlesticks, and other uten-  
 sils, and ornaments of their churches, were of  
 gold, silver-gilt, and silver<sup>90</sup>. The gold taken  
 from the shrine of Thomas a Becket at Canter-  
 bury, filled, it is said, two chests, which eight  
 strong men could hardly carry. Much of the  
 jewels and plate in some monasteries was con-  
 veyed away before their dissolution, and some of  
 it was probably secreted by those who had it in

<sup>88</sup> Coke's 4 Institute, f. 44.<sup>89</sup> Burnet, p. 269.<sup>90</sup> See Strype's Cranmer, Append. No. xvi.

charge; but after all, immense quantities came into the treasury, where it did not long continue. Cent. XVI.

The abolition of all the monastic orders in England, and the alienation of their property, was a very bold measure, and affords a striking proof of the great power and awful determined character of the King, and of the superior abilities, courage, and wisdom of his minister and vicegerent Cromwell. It contributed greatly to promote the permanent prosperity of the kingdom in many respects, as well as the reformation of religion, which could not have been accomplished while those nurseries of idleness, vice, and superstition remained.

Though Henry had now emancipated himself and his subjects from the dominion of the Pope, he still continued as much attached as ever to some of the most absurd tenets of the church of Rome, particularly transubstantiation; and persecuted those who presumed to call that doctrine in question with the most unrelenting cruelty. A remarkable example of this occurred A. D. 1538. One John Nicolson, who taught a school in London, and to conceal himself from his former persecutors, had assumed the name of Lambert, being brought before Archbishop Cranmer, and accused of heresy, for denying the corporal presence of Christ in the eucharist, appealed to the King, as supreme head of the church of England. Henry, vain of his theological learning, and instigated by Gardiner Bishop of Winchester, the most artful of men and the greatest of flatterers, determined to bring

Lambert  
burnt.



Cent. XVI. Lambert to a solemn trial before himself in Westminster-hall. Letters were written to all the prelates and principal nobility to attend this trial. When the appointed day arrived, the King appeared in great state, clothed in white, and seated under a canopy of the same colour, to denote the purity of his faith. The spiritual lords were seated on his right hand, and the temporal peers on his left; and the hall was crowded with spectators, attracted from all parts of the kingdom by the news of this extraordinary trial. When the prisoner was brought into the court, he appeared to be greatly amazed and disconcerted at the sight of the august assembly, and the stern countenance of the King, who, standing, commanded one of the bishops to declare the occasion of the meeting. This being done, the King, after railing at the prisoner with great vehemence for having changed his name, asked him, "Dost thou believe the real corporal presence of the body and blood of Christ in the sacrament of the altar?" "I believe," said Lambert, "with St. Augustine, the presence of Christ in the sacrament in a certain manner." The King, in a passionate tone, commanded him to give a direct answer to the question. Lambert fell upon his knees, and began to praise the King for his goodness, in condescending to hear one of the humblest of his subjects; but Henry interrupted him, saying, he came not there to hear his own praises; and commanded him instantly to answer his question; which he did, by acknowledging that he did not believe the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament.

sacrament. Ten bishops had been appointed to manage this debate, of which Cranmer was the first; who, addressing the prisoner with great mildness, attempted to prove from our Saviour's appearing to Paul at his conversion, that a body might be in more places than one at the same time. But Gardiner thinking that he used too much gentleness, broke in and urged the same argument with great asperity of language. He was followed by Tonsal of Durham, Stokesley of London, and other six prelates, who in succession argued for the corporal presence from various topics. Lambert, who was a man of good sense and learning, and had made this controversy very much his study, answered all his opponents in their turns, with great acuteness and strength of argument, though he was often interrupted, insulted, and ridiculed. At length, worn out with the fatigue of standing five hours, and disputing with so many antagonists, he remained silent. The King then asked him, "Will you live, or die?" "I commit my soul," said he, "to the mercy of God, and my body to the mercy of Your Majesty."—"I will have no mercy," said Henry, "on heretics;" and commanded Cromwell to read the sentence, which condemned the prisoner to be burnt as an obstinate heretic. This cruel sentence was executed with circumstances of uncommon cruelty<sup>91</sup>. It is impossible to contemplate this pompous display of barbarous inhuman bigotry without surprise and horror. May God preserve this happy island from

<sup>91</sup> Fox, p. 1024.



**Cent. XVI.** the return of that infernal spirit! Some have imagined that Cranmer, on this occasion, argued against the conviction of his own mind. But this is a mistake; there is sufficient evidence that at this time, and for some years after, he was a firm believer of the corporal presence.<sup>92</sup>

Many  
holidays  
abolished.

While Henry was thus sacrificing his innocent subjects to his bigotted attachment to the tenets of the church of Rome, he was doing some things which contributed not a little to reformation. The Romish calendar was crowded with saints; and the prodigious number of holidays greatly impeded industry and promoted riot and debauchery. He issued a proclamation, A. D. 1536., abolishing all the holidays in harvest, from July 1st to September 29th, except three, commanding the feasts of the dedication of all the churches in England, commonly called wakes, to be kept on one day, the first Sunday in October, and prohibiting the observation of the feasts of the patrons of churches<sup>93</sup>. This act and proclamation was sent to all the bishops, with a letter from the King, commanding them strictly to see it put in execution in their respective dioceses; and it was enforced by subsequent injunctions. By this, many days were rescued from riot, to be employed in useful labour.

Bible  
translated.

There was nothing the friends of the old learning (as the tenets of popery were then called) more dreaded and deprecated, than the translation of the scriptures into English, and granting the use of them to the people; nor was there any

<sup>92</sup> Strype's Cranmer, ch. 18. p. 66.

<sup>93</sup> Wilkin, tom. iii. p. 823.  
thing



thing that the friends of reformation more ar- Cent. XVI.  
 dently laboured to procure. This was a long and  
 violent struggle between the two parties. Arch-  
 bishop Warham sent a pastoral letter to all the  
 prelates of his province, A. D. 1526., acquainting  
 them that certain children of iniquity, blinded by  
 malice, had translated the New Testament into  
 English to spread heresy, and ruin men's souls;  
 and that some of these pernicious books had been  
 brought into England. He directed them, there-  
 fore, to command all persons within their dioceses,  
 who had any of these dangerous books, to de-  
 liver them up to their bishop, or his commissary,  
 within thirty days, under the pain of excommu-  
 nication, and of being punished as heretics<sup>91</sup>.  
 Four years after this, the cry for a translation of  
 the Bible, and the opposition to it still continuing,  
 the King published a proclamation; in which he  
 told his subjects, that he had consulted the two  
 primates, and several other bishops and learned  
 men; “ and that, by all those virtuous, discreet,  
 “ and well-learned personages in divinity, it is  
 “ thought that it is not necessary the scriptures be  
 “ in the English tongue, and in the hands of the  
 “ common people. And that having respect to  
 “ the malignity of this present time, with the  
 “ inclinations of the people to erroneous opinions,  
 “ the translation of the New Testament and the  
 “ Old into the vulgar tongue of the English,  
 “ should rather be the occasion of continuance or  
 “ increase of errors among the said people, than  
 “ any benefice or commodity towards the weal of

<sup>91</sup> Wilkin. p. 706.

Cent. XVI. “their souls<sup>95</sup>.” Such were the sentiments of the King and prelates of England on this subject at that time. But after Henry began to quarrel with the Pope, and Cranmer was advanced to the primacy, he changed his opinion, and began to listen to the opinions of his subjects, to have the scriptures in a language they understood. When Doctor Cranmer was advanced to the primacy, he stood in the highest degree of favour with the King, which was the cause of his unexpected promotion. This gave him so much influence and authority in the church, that the convocation of his province, December 9th, A.D. 1534., consented and agreed that he should make application to the King to name and appoint certain honest and learned men to translate the scriptures into English, to be put into the hands of the people, for their instruction<sup>96</sup>. Cranmer applied to the King accordingly, and obtained a commission to himself and some other learned men, to prepare a translation of the Bible, for the instruction of his subjects. For expedition in this work, which he had much at heart, he divided the Bible into several parts, and gave one to each translator. When the translation was finished, the printing of it was committed to Richard Grafton and Edward Whitchurch, who obtained permission from Francis to print it at Paris<sup>97</sup>. But on a complaint from the French clergy, the part that was then printed was seized. The printers, however, were permitted to retire with their types and presses, and

<sup>95</sup> Wilkin, p. 741.<sup>96</sup> Ibid. p. 776.<sup>97</sup> Strype's Cranmer, Append. No. xxxi.

finished their work in London. When Cranmer received some copies of this Bible, he said it gave him more joy than if he had received a present of £10,000. The King, by proclamation, A. D. 1537., commanded one of these Bibles, at the equal expence of the incumbent and the parishioners, to be deposited in every parish-church, to be read by all who pleased; and as some towns and parishes did not obey this first proclamation, it was enforced in a second, with severe penalties<sup>98</sup>. At last Cromwell procured permission, A. D. 1539., to all the subjects, to purchase copies of this English Bible for the use of themselves and their families<sup>99</sup>. By such slow steps, the people of England obtained the inestimable privilege of perusing the word of God in their own language, which had been long denied them. This privilege was not obtained without much difficulty and opposition from the popish party.

Besides this translation of the Bible, some other books were published about this time, by the King's authority, for the instruction of his subjects; as the King's Primer, A. D. 1535., which was a collection of twenty-nine small tracts, consisting of explanations of the creed, the Lord's prayer, the ten commandments, and several psalms and prayers for different occasions; the Bishops' Book, A. D. 1537., or the godly and pious institution of a Christian Man, which was drawn up by a committee of bishops, and

Other  
books.

<sup>98</sup> Wilkin, p. 856.

<sup>99</sup> Strype's Cranmer, ch. 17. Append. No. xxv.



Cent. XVI. revised and corrected by the King<sup>100</sup>. Though these books contained too many of the peculiar tenets and superstitious ceremonies of the church of Rome, they contributed not a little to diffuse a spirit of inquiry among the people, and thereby promoted the reformation. The Bishops' Book, or the Institution of a Christian Man, was subscribed by the two archbishops and nineteen bishops, and confirmed by an act of parliament. The publication of the English Bible, and of these books, gave great joy to the friends of the reformation.

Images  
removed.

The images and relics of saints had long been the chief objects of the superstitious veneration of the people of England, and of all the other nations of Europe in communion with the church of Rome. This kind of devotion was very much encouraged by the clergy, especially by the monastics, who had the custody of those images and relics, and were enriched by the offerings of their deluded worshippers. To increase their gains, they published accounts of miraculous cures pretended to be wrought by certain images, and were guilty of many other deceits and impositions. Some of these were discovered and exposed at the dissolution of the monasteries, which gave a check to that species of superstition<sup>101</sup>. But many images and relics still re-

<sup>100</sup> Strype's Mem. ch. 31. Cranmer, ch. 13.

<sup>101</sup> A crucifix at Boxley in Kent, which moved its head, arms, and legs, by springs and wheels concealed in the body of it, was managed by a priest. The blood of Christ at Hales in Gloucestershire, as it was pretended, was discovered to be the blood of a duck renewed weekly. Burnet, p. 242.

mained

mained in cathedrals and other churches, that were the objects of popular veneration, and attracted crowds of pilgrims. The King therefore sent instructions to all the bishops, A. D. 1538., directing them to command their clergy to teach the people in their sermons, “not to repose their trust and affiance on works devised by men’s fantasies, as in wandering to pilgrimages, offering of money, candles, or tapers, to feigned relics or images, or kissing or licking the same, or such like superstition.” They were further instructed, that if they knew of any such feigned images in any of their dioceses, that were abused with pilgrimages or offerings, to take them down without delay, for avoiding that most detestable offence of idolatry<sup>102</sup>. Besides these general instructions, particular injunctions were given for pulling down some of the richest and most frequented shrines, as that of St. Richard at Colchester, and of St. Thomas Becket at Canterbury<sup>103</sup>. But as Becket had long been esteemed the greatest of saints, attracted the greatest crowds of pilgrims, and received the most valuable of offerings, he was treated with greater ceremony. He was solemnly tried before the King in council, and found to be neither a saint, nor a martyr. Not a saint, because he had rebelled against his sovereign; not a martyr, because he had fallen in a fray, in which he was the aggressor. He was therefore condemned as a traitor, all the rich ornaments of his altar and shrine confiscated, his festival abolished, and all his images thrown down,<sup>104</sup>

<sup>102</sup> Fox, p. 102.<sup>103</sup> Wilkin, p. 840.<sup>104</sup> Ibid. p. 835. 847.

Thus

Cent. XVI.

Thus far had the reformation of the church of England proceeded before the meeting of the parliament in April 1539., when an effectual stop was put to its further progress, though much remained to be reformed. As the changes that had been made were chiefly owing to the influence of Archbishop Cranmer and Lord Cromwell with the King, so the stop that was now put to any further changes was partly owing to the decline of that influence, and partly to the insinuating arts and persuasions of the popish party. Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, represented to the King, that the Emperor and the Kings of France and Scotland, at the instigation of the Pope, were meditating an invasion of his dominions; that many of his own subjects were so much offended with the late innovations in religion, and so much disquieted by their fears of greater innovations, that they were ripe for rebellion; and that the only way to avert all these dangers would be to convince the world by some signal act, that though he had withdrawn from the obedience of the Pope, he had not renounced the catholic faith. Some of the reformers also contributed not a little to alienate the King's mind from them, by declaiming with too much vehemence against certain doctrines of the church of Rome, to which he was still attached.

Influenced by these, and perhaps by other motives with which we are unacquainted, Henry resolved to proceed no farther in the road of reformation, and to secure the remaining tenets and ceremonies



ceremonies of the church of Rome by a law, Cent. XVI.  
 with the most intimidating functions.

The parliament met April 28th, and the Lord Parlia-  
ment.  
 Chancellor Audley May 5th presented the following message from the King to the house of peers: "That it was His Majesty's desire above  
 "all things, that the diversities of opinions concerning the Christian religion, in his kingdom,  
 "should be with all possible expedition plucked  
 "up and extirpated: and therefore since this  
 "affair was of so extraordinary a nature, that it  
 "could not well be determined in a short time,  
 "considering their various sentiments, by the  
 "whole house, the King thought it necessary, if  
 "it seemed good unto them, that they should  
 "chuse a committee of themselves to examine  
 "into these different opinions; and whatever  
 "they decreed concerning them, might be with  
 "all convenient speed communicated to the  
 "whole parliament." The house complied with this message, and chose a committee of ten members, five of the old and five of the new learning, which was thought to be most equitable<sup>105</sup>. But it did not contribute to expedition: for after eleven meetings and many warm debates, they could agree upon nothing; nor was there any probability that they ever would agree, which made it necessary to adopt some other method.

The Duke of Norfolk, who was at the head of the popish party, and in high favour with the King, acquainted the peers, May 16th, that their committee could come to no agreement.

<sup>105</sup> Parliament. Hist. vol. iii. p. 140.

Cent. XVI. He there laid before the house the six following articles to be examined by the whole parliament; and that their determination upon them should be formed into a law, to which all the subjects should be compelled to conform by certain penalties:

1. Whether the sacrament of the altar be the real body of our Lord, without transubstantiation, or not?<sup>106</sup>

2. Whether that sacrament should be given to the laity in both kinds or not?

3. Whether vows of chastity made by men or women ought to be observed by the law of God, or not?

4. Whether private masses ought to be retained by the law of God or not?

5. Whether priests may marry by the law of God, or not?

6. Whether auricular confession to a priest be necessary by the law of God or not?

These were the questions that were the great subjects of those violent disputes between the friends and enemies of the Reformation, that disturbed the peace of the kingdom; and it was to put an end to these disputes, by giving victory to the one party, and imposing silence on the other, that a parliamentary decision of them was now required. The popish party possessed decisive advantages in the discussion of these questions in this parliament. The King ardently desired them to be determined in favour of that party, and his influence was irresistible. The

<sup>106</sup> Provided the corporal presence was acknowledged, the popish party was willing to give up this word.

liamentary abbots had not yet resigned their <sup>Cent. XVI.</sup> seals, and twenty of them were actually present in the house of peers<sup>107</sup>. The other party, however, did not tamely yield the victory; but having scripture, reason, and the most ancient fathers on their side, they supported their opinions with great spirit, and protracted their proceedings to a great length. Archbishop Cranmer, it is said, maintained the tenets of the reformers no less than three days, with such dignity, eloquence, and learning, as compelled the admiration of his greatest enemies<sup>108</sup>. Numbers at length prevailed. All the six questions were determined in conformity to the doctrines of the church of Rome; and the Lord Chancellor reported to the house May 30th, "that it was His Majesty's "pleasure that some penal statute should be enacted, to compel all his subjects, who were any "way dissenters or contradictors of these articles, "to obey them." The house appointed the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Ely and St. Asaph, with Doctor Petre a master in Chancery, to prepare one bill; and the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of Durham and Winchester, with Doctor Trigonnell, also a master in Chancery, to prepare another. Both bills were communicated to the King on Sunday June 1st, and he preferred that, prepared by the Archbishop of York and his committee, who were all zealous for the old learning; and there is good evidence that a great part of that bill was drawn

<sup>107</sup> Dugdale's Summons to Parl. p. 501.<sup>108</sup> Herbert, p. 219.



**Cent. XVI.** by the King himself<sup>109</sup>. To make it pass more easily, the Lord Cromwell, by the King's direction, laid the above six questions before the lower house of convocation June 2d, and obtained answers to them agreeable to the tenets of the church of Rome, expressed in very strong terms; to convince parliament that these were the sentiments of the clergy<sup>110</sup>. At last this famous bill was brought into the house of peers June 7th, and passed June 10th; on which day the King sent a message to Archbishop Cranmer, desiring him not to come to the house, since he could not give his assent. But he returned for an answer, that he thought it his duty to attend, and declare his dissent<sup>111</sup>; a very bold answer considering to whom it was made. This bill passed the house of commons on June 16th, and received the royal assent on the 28th, the last day of the session.

Act of the  
six articles.

By this act, commonly called the bloody act, if and person by word, writing, printing, or any other way denied or disputed the real presence of the natural body and blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ, conceived by the Virgin Mary, in the blessed sacrament of the altar, after the consecration, under the form of bread and wine; or that in the flesh under the form of bread, is not the very blood of Christ; or that with the blood under the form of wine, is not the very flesh of Christ; he was to be adjudged an heretic, and to suffer death by burning; and all his lands, goods, and chattels, were to be forfeited to the King, as in the case of high treason. If any affirmed or taught that communion in both

<sup>109</sup> Wilkin. p.848.

<sup>110</sup> Ibid. p.845.

<sup>111</sup> Fox, p. 1037.

kinds was necessary; or that priests might marry; Cent. XVI.  
 or that vows of chastity were not perpetually  
 binding; or that private masses were not lawful  
 and laudable; or that auricular confession to a  
 priest was not necessary; they were to suffer  
 death as felons<sup>112</sup>. Commissioners were appointed  
 in every county to discover and apprehend all  
 offenders against any part of this act, that none  
 who were guilty might escape.

The atrocious cruelty of this act is too obvious Cruelty of  
that act.  
 to need any illustration, Could any thing be  
 more barbarous than to consign to the flames all  
 who had the courage and honesty to acknowledge,  
 that they could not renounce their reason, and  
 disbelieve the united testimony of all their senses?  
 To condemn the clergy to celibacy, was suffi-  
 ciently cruel; but to punish a person with death  
 for saying so, was the extreme of cruelty. But cruel  
 as this act was, nothing could exceed the joy and  
 exultation of the popish party on its passing, ex-  
 cept the terror and dejection of the friends of  
 the reformation. A member of the house of  
 peers wrote thus in a letter still extant: “ And  
 “ also news here, I assure you never prince shewed  
 “ himself so wise a man, so well learned, and so  
 “ catholic, as the King hath done in this parlia-  
 “ ment. With my pen I cannot express his mar-  
 “ vellous goodness, which is come to such ef-  
 “ fect, that we shall have an act of parliament so  
 “ spiritual, that I think none shall dare to say, in  
 “ the blessed sacrament of the altar doth remain  
 “ either bread or wine after the consecration;

<sup>112</sup> Statutes, 31 Hen. VIII. cap. 14.

Cent. XVI. “nor that a priest may have a wife; nor that it  
 “is necessary to receive our Maker in both  
 “kinds; nor that private masses should not be  
 “said as they have been; nor that it is not ne-  
 “cessary to have auricular confession. Finally,  
 “all in England have cause to thank God, and  
 “most heartily to rejoice of the King’s most  
 “godly proceedings<sup>113</sup>.” On the other hand,  
 many of the reformers fled to the continent to  
 save their lives. Shaxton Bishop of Salisbury,  
 and Latimer Bishop of Worcester, resigned their  
 sees and retired to a private station<sup>114</sup>. Arch-  
 bishop Cranmer was greatly dejected, and sent  
 away his wife to her friends in Germany. The  
 King, however, had still so great a regard for  
 him, that he sent the Duke of Norfolk and Lord  
 Cromwell to dine with him, and to assure him of  
 his unchangeable esteem and favour.<sup>115</sup>

Too cruel  
 to be exe-  
 cuted.

The King and the friends of Rome overacted  
 their part on this occasion, by making this act so  
 sanguinary that it could not be executed without  
 rendering the kingdom a scene of unexampled  
 horror and bloodshed. This soon appeared. The  
 commissioners appointed to put it in execution  
 in London, in fourteen days committed and in-  
 dicted no fewer than five hundred persons;  
 among whom were Shaxton and Latimer, and  
 all the reforming preachers. The Lord Chan-  
 cellor Audley waited upon the King, and repre-  
 sented the fatal effects of these violent proceed-  
 ings in such strong colours, that Henry relented,

<sup>113</sup> Strype’s Cranmer, Append. No. xxvi.

<sup>114</sup> Rym. p. 641. 643.

<sup>115</sup> Strype’s Cranmer, ch. 19.



and commanded the prisoners to be liberated <sup>116</sup>. Cent. XVI.  
 This gave a check to the too forward zeal of the commissioners in London, and in other parts of the kingdom; and while the Lord Cromwell retained his office of the execution of this terrible act, it was in a manner suspended. Melancthon, one of the most learned and moderate of the German reformers, who was much respected by the King, wrote him a long and pathetic letter, expostulating with him on the severity of this law, exposing the artifices of Gardiner its chief promoter, and conjuring him to pursue milder measures, as more consistent with the spirit of christianity. “ O impudent and wicked Winchester! (said he,) who, under these colourable fetches, thinketh to deceive the eyes of Christ, and the judgments of all the godly in the world. These things have I written that you may understand the crafty flights, and so judge of the purpose and policy of these bishops <sup>117</sup>.” This letter, it is probable, made some impression on the King’s mind. However that may be, the storm did not fall so suddenly on the reformers as they dreaded, and their enemies desired, though it afterwards fell very heavy.

As the greater monasteries were surrendered in this and the following year, and a great mass of wealth in lands, money, and goods, had already come into the King’s hands, it was now thought to be time to perform some of the pompous promises that had been made to procure the dissolution of the religious houses. The Lord Cromwell

New  
 bishop-  
 rics.

<sup>116</sup> Hall, f. 234.

<sup>117</sup> Fox, p. 1070.

Cent. XVI. brought a bill into the house of peers May 23d, to empower the King to erect new bishoprics, deanries, and colleges, by letters patent, and endow them out of the revenues of the suppressed monasteries. This bill was so universally acceptable that it passed that house the same day; and was sent to the commons, by whom it was passed with the same alacrity. A draught of the preamble of this bill, written in the King's own hand, is still extant; to which is annexed, in the same hand, a scheme of eighteen new bishoprics, as many deanries and several colleges, the places where they were to be seated, and the monasteries out of which they were to be endowed<sup>118</sup>. This is a proof that Henry intended great things. But before he proceeded to execute them, he had granted away so many of the lands, and squandered away so much of the money, that he could not perform what he had projected. In virtue of the above act, he erected only six new bishoprics, at the following places, viz. Westminster, Oxford, Peterborough, Bristol, Chester, and Gloucester. These sees were all founded in the course of the years 1540. 1541. and 1542.<sup>119</sup> This was one of the greatest advantages the nation derived from the suppression of the religious houses. Before this, several of the dioceses were (and perhaps still are) too extensive.

Parliament.

The parliament, after two prorogations, met again April 12th, A.D. 1540. The King had been long engaged in the irrational and hopeless project

<sup>118</sup> Burnet, p. 262. Strype's Mem. Append. No. cvii.

<sup>119</sup> Rym. tom. xvi. p. 795, &c.

of compelling all his subjects to entertain exactly the same religious opinions, and to change these opinions as often as he changed his own. With this view the cruel act of the six articles had been lately made, to burn or hang all who dissented from the established system. The title of that act was: For abolishing diversity of opinions concerning the Christian religion. But with all its terrors it did not accomplish that end. Religious controversies and diversity of opinions still continued. The Lord Cromwell, as the King's vicegerent in spirituals, made a long speech to both houses, in which he acquainted them, that the King was grieved at the discord and dissension that prevailed among his subjects in religion; and that he earnestly desired to bring them all to a perfect agreement in their religious principles, and a perfect uniformity in their religious worship. That in order to this, he had appointed one committee of bishops and learned men to prepare a system of the Christian doctrines, which all his subjects should be compelled to believe; and another committee to settle the religious rites and ceremonies, which all should be compelled to observe in worship. He told them further, that His Majesty, who was a true christian and a most learned divine, would assist both these committees. The parliament unanimously approved of the design, and appointed the committees to meet every Monday, Wednesday, and Friday in the forenoon, and every day, except Sunday, in the afternoon, on that business. The committees laboured with great diligence in this arduous, or rather imprac-

Cent. XVI.



Cent. XVI. practicable work, as appears from many of their papers that are still extant<sup>120</sup>. But as they were composed of an almost equal number of members of the old and new learning, they proceeded very slowly, and could not finish their work in time to be presented to parliament before its dissolution. This was foreseen, and the parliament near the end of the session made a very extraordinary law to oblige all the subjects of the kingdom to believe a system of doctrines that was not yet composed, and to observe a system of ceremonies that was not yet prepared. By this law it was enacted, “That whatsoever was  
 “determined by the archbishops and bishops,  
 “and other divines now commissioned for  
 “that effect; or by any other appointed by the  
 “King, and published by the King’s authority,  
 “concerning the Christian faith, or the ceremonies of the church, should be believed and  
 “obeyed by all the King’s subjects, as well as  
 “if the particulars so set forth had been enumerated in this act<sup>121</sup>.” This seems to be the utmost bounds to which submission, not to say severity, could be carried.

Persecution.

Thomas Lord Cromwell, knight of the garter, lord privy seal, lord chamberlain, and lord viceroy, was created earl of Essex, April 14th; and to all these honours and great offices he had been raised from a very humble station by the King’s favour. But his fall was as sudden as his rise was great. When he was sitting in council

<sup>120</sup> Strype’s Mem. Append. No. lxxxviii. Burnet, book iii. Records. No. xxi.

<sup>121</sup> Burnet, p. 283.

June 10th, not conscious of any guilt, or apprehensive of any danger, he was seized and committed to the Tower. He was attainted by an act of parliament for heresy and high treason, without being heard, and beheaded on Tower-hill July 28th. The friends of the reformation soon found that they had sustained a mighty loss by the fall of this great man; for he was hardly laid in his grave, when three of the most learned and zealous preachers of the new learning, Doctor Robert Barnes, Thomas Garret, and William Hie-rome, were burnt July 30th in Smithfield for heresy, on the act of the six articles<sup>122</sup>. Three papists, Powel, Fatherstone, and Abell, who had been found guilty of treason for denying the King's supremacy, were hanged, drawn, and quartered, at the same time and place; which made a foreigner, who was a spectator of this horrid scene, cry out, " Good God! how unhappy are the people of this country, who are hanged for being papists, or burnt for being enemies to popery."<sup>123</sup>

Doctor Edmund Bonar had been a most active agent for the King in his contest with the court of Rome, and a zealous advocate for his supremacy, which recommended him to Cromwell and Cranmer; and by their influence he was promoted to the see of Hereford, and soon after translated to that of London. But they were deceived by appearances, and knew not his real character. He was a bold, ambitious, unprincipled, and cruel man. Perceiving that the popish party prevailed at court, and being placed at the head of the commissioners for executing

<sup>122</sup> Fox, p. 1095.<sup>123</sup> Ibid. p. 1096.

Cent. XVI. the act of the six articles in London, he acted with great violence and cruelty in that capacity. Of his cruelty at this time, we shall only give one example, as too many of the same kind will afterwards occur. One Richard Mekins, a young man, or rather a boy, not above fifteen years of age, had been heard to say, that the sacrament was only a ceremony, or a signification. For this he was imprisoned and brought to trial. Bonar, in his charge to the grand jury, exhorted them to have no mercy on heretics of any age or condition. Two witnesses were produced; the one declared that he heard the prisoner say, that the sacrament was only a ceremony: and the other, that he heard him say, that it was only a signification. The jury gave in their verdict, that they found nothing. On this Bonar stormed, and sent them back to reconsider the matter. They gave the same verdict a second time, which threw the Bishop into a violent rage, and made him pour out a torrent of threats and curses. The jury being asked on what they founded their verdict; answered, on the inconsistency of the evidence. Being told by the Recorder, that as the court sustained the evidence of these witnesses, that was a sufficient reason for them to sustain it; they found the bill, and the petty jury found the prisoner guilty of speaking against the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament. This unhappy youth was quite illiterate, and professed his willingness to believe any thing they pleased to dictate, to save his life; but in vain. He was committed to the flames, and reduced to ashes<sup>124</sup>. A strain of

<sup>124</sup> Hall, f. 244. Fox, p. 1096.



cruelty that is almost incredible, but is too well attested to be doubted. Several others were burnt in different parts of England: and multitudes were imprisoned and involved in great distress, by the commissioners for executing the act of the six articles. Cent. XVI

From this period Henry became very unsteady and fluctuating in his sentiments and conduct with respect to religion, sometimes forwarding but more frequently restraining reformation, and even restoring some of the superstitious ceremonies that had been abolished. He renewed, however, this year, 1541., May 6., his injunctions to the clergy, to provide English Bibles of the largest volume, and deposit them in their churches, for the use of their people; his former injunctions on that subject having been generally disobeyed by those who were enemies to reformation<sup>125</sup>. He also republished October 4th, his injunctions for removing out of cathedrals and other churches, all shrines and images to which pilgrimages had been made, and offerings had been presented, with all tables recording pretended miracles, as his former injunctions for that purpose had been very imperfectly executed<sup>126</sup>. But about the same time he published a proclamation, commanding the festivals of several saints which had been abolished, to be restored and observed.<sup>127</sup> The King unsteady.

He had been prevailed upon, chiefly by the importunities of Cromwell and Cranmer, to appoint an English translation of the Bible to be made, and English Bible.

<sup>125</sup> Wilkin. p.856.<sup>126</sup> Ibid. p.857.<sup>127</sup> Ibid. p.859.

Cent. XVI. a copy of it to be deposited in every church; and had even permitted private persons to have copies of it in their houses for the use of themselves and their families. This was exceedingly disagreeable to the great body of the clergy, who were enemies to all reformation. They made loud complaints, that the laity abused this privilege, by reading aloud to great crowds in the time of mass, by commenting upon, and disputing about the scriptures, which gave rise to all the new opinions (which they called heresies) that prevailed. They complained also, that the translation was faulty in many places, and calculated to countenance heresy. These complaints at length had their effect. Henry was provoked that any of his subjects dared to entertain opinions different from those he had dictated to them; and ascribing this to the use of the scriptures in their own language, he determined to set limits to that liberty, or to take it entirely away. A convocation met at St. Paul's in January, A. D. 1542., and Archbishop Cranmer declared to both houses, that it was the King's intention that the prelates and clergy should consult together about the unsettled state of religion, and deliberate about the most proper remedies, and correct what they thought stood in need of correction, particularly the English translation of the Old and New Testament. The primate directed the lower house to deliberate on these things, and report the result of their deliberations. In the third session, February 3d, this question was put, Whether the great English Bible should continue to be used in  
the

the church or not? The majority were of opinion, Cent. XVI. that it could not be continued till it was revised and corrected. In a subsequent session, one committee of bishops and doctors was appointed to revise and correct the English translation of the New Testament, and another that of the Old Testament. The majority of both these committees were against any English translation of the scriptures; and determined not to be in haste to execute their commission. To puzzle the matter, Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, who was at the head of the popish party, and one of the committee for revising the New Testament, produced a list of one hundred Latin and Greek words which he pretended had a peculiar majesty and significancy in them, which could not be preserved in English, and therefore proposed that they should be retained in the translation. This absurd proposal was evidently designed to render the translation almost useless. The Archbishop, perceiving the refractory temper of the clergy, obtained a mandate from the King to the convocation, commanding them to refer the revival of the English Bible to the two universities, which they reluctantly obeyed.<sup>128</sup>

The popish party, under the influence of the Duke of Norfolk and the Bishop of Winchester, still prevailing at court, the reformation rather declined than advanced. An act very unfavourable to it was made in the next session of parliament, that began January 22d, A.D. 1543. By that act the liberty of reading the English Bibles

<sup>128</sup> Wilkin. p. 861.



Cent. XVI. in the churches was taken away, and they were removed. None under the rank of gentlemen were to have English Bibles in their possession, or to read them in private; and the subjects were commanded to regulate their faith and practice by the injunctions published, and to be published, by the King. The penalties by which that act was enforced, breathed that barbarous spirit with which the supporters of popery were then animated. For the first offence, they were to recant; for the second, to bear a faggot; and for the third, they were to be burnt.<sup>129</sup>

The  
King's  
book.

Henry having thus deprived his subjects of the use of the Scriptures in their own language, made haste to furnish them with that perfect system of the Christian doctrines that he had promised. The committee of bishops and doctors appointed to prepare that system had applied to it with great diligence for a considerable time, and it was published May 29th, A. D. 1543., with this title: "A necessary Doctrine and Erudition for any Christian Man, set forth by the King's Majesty." It had a preface written by the King, or at least in his name, commending it highly, and exhorting and commanding all his subjects to study it diligently, and to make it the rule of their faith and manners, to put an end to all diversity of opinions in religion. The following paragraph in the preface to this once famous book, designed to supply the place of the Bible, gives a very distinct account of its method and contents: "For knowledge of the order of the matter in this book contained.

<sup>129</sup> Statutes, 34 Henry VIII. cap. 1.

"Forasmuch

“ Forasmuch as we know not perfectly God, but  
“ by faith, the declaration of faith occupieth in  
“ this treatise the first place. Whereunto is next  
“ adjoining, the declaration of the articles of our  
“ creed, concerning what we should believe. And  
“ incontinently after them followeth the explica-  
“ tion of the seven sacraments. Then followeth  
“ conveniently the declaration of the ten com-  
“ mandments, being by God ordained the high-  
“ way wherein each man should walk in this life;  
“ to finish fruitly his journey here, and afterwards  
“ to rest eternally in joy with him; which because  
“ we cannot do of ourselves, but have need always  
“ of the grace of God, as without whom we can  
“ neither continue in this life, nor without his  
“ special grace do any thing to his pleasure,  
“ whereby to attain the life to come, we have,  
“ after the declaration of the ten commandments,  
“ expounded the seven petitions of our Pater  
“ Noster, wherein be contained requests and suits  
“ for all things necessary to a Christian man in  
“ this present life; with declaration of the Ave  
“ Maria, as a prayer containing a joyful rehear-  
“ sal and magnifying God in the work of the in-  
“ carnation of Christ, which is the ground of  
“ our salvation, wherein the blessed Virgin our  
“ Lady, for the abundance of grace wherewith  
“ God endowed her, is also with this remem-  
“ brance honoured and worshipped. And for-  
“ asmuch as the heads and senses of our people  
“ have been imbusied, and in these days tra-  
“ vailed with the understanding of free will,  
“ justification, good works, and praying for souls  
VOL. XII. H departed;



Cent. XVI. “ departed; we have, by the advice of our clergy,  
 “ for the purgation of erroneous doctrines, de-  
 “ clared and set forth openly, and without ambi-  
 “ guity of speech, the mere and certain truth  
 “ in them; so as we verily trust, that to know  
 “ God, and how to live after his pleasure, to the  
 “ attaining everlasting life in the end, this book  
 “ containeth a perfect and sufficient doctrine,  
 “ grounded and established in holy Scripture<sup>130</sup>.”

Such were the contents of this royal publication, the established standard of truth and orthodoxy, by which all the people of England were to regulate their faith and practice, till the King thought proper to change his opinion; and then all his subjects were bound, by an act of parliament, to make a similar change in their opinions. It is difficult to conceive how tyranny in the King, and servility in the parliament, could be carried further.

The  
King's  
Primer.

Henry laboured this point of uniformity with uncommon ardour, and seems to have determined that none of his subjects should think, speak, or act, in public or in private, in matters of religion, but as he directed them. Not contented with dictating a system of doctrines which they were to believe, and of the ceremonies they were to practise in the church, he published a manual of prayers, which he strictly commanded all his subjects to use in their private devotions, prohibiting the use of any other prayers in their closets. This was called the King's Primer Book; and in his preface to it, he acquaints his loving subjects, “ That forasmuch as

<sup>130</sup> Strype's Mem. p. 379.

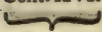


“ we have bestowed right great labour and dili- Cant. XVI.  
 “ gence, about settling a perfect stay in the other  
 “ parts of our religion, we have thought good to  
 “ bestow our earnest labour in this part also,  
 “ being a thing as fruitful as the best, that men  
 “ may know both what they pray, and also with  
 “ what words, lest things special good and prin-  
 “ cipal, being inwrapped in ignorance of the  
 “ words, should not perfectly come to the mind  
 “ and to the intelligence of men ; or else things  
 “ being nothing to the purpose, nor very meet to  
 “ be offered unto God, should have the less effect  
 “ with God, being the distributor of all gifts <sup>131</sup>.”

In a word, Henry was determined to reduce all his subjects to a most correct and perfect uniformity in all things, even the most trivial, that related to religion. Some of them, for example, kept St. Mark's day as a fast, and others of them kept it as a feast. He was much offended at this, and published a royal injunction to all his loving subjects, to eat flesh on St. Mark's day <sup>132</sup>. This was not one of his most disagreeable injunctions.

After the fall of Cromwell Earl of Essex, Arch- Cranmer  
in danger.  
 bishop Cranmer was in a dangerous situation, and had a difficult part to act. As he knew the animosity of the popish party against him, and their great influence at court, he was not ignorant of his danger, and endeavoured to guard against it, by acting with the greatest caution, and by living as privately as his station would permit. But all his caution and privacy would not have preserved him, if the King had not en-

<sup>131</sup> Wilkin. p. 873.<sup>132</sup> Ibid. p. 860.

**Cent. XVI.**  pertained such a strong conviction of his integrity, and so grateful a sense of his services, as could not be shaken by all the efforts of his enemies. Of this it may not be improper to give one example. After several plots, equally artful and iniquitous against the Archbishop, had miscarried, the Duke of Norfolk, the Bishop of Winchester, and the other popish members of the privy council, waited upon the King, and made a heavy complaint against the Archbishop, "That he and his learned men had so infected  
" the whole realm with their unfavoury doctrine,  
" that three parts of the land were become abominable heretics; therefore they desired that  
" the Archbishop might be committed to the  
" Tower until this might be examined." When the King seemed unwilling to grant their desire, they represented, "That the Archbishop being  
" one of the privy council, no man dared to object  
" matter against him, unless he were first committed to durance; which being done, men  
" would be bold to tell the truth, and say their  
" consciences. The King at length consented that  
" they might bring the Archbishop before the  
" council next morning, and examine him; and  
" if they found cause, they might commit him to  
" the Tower." Henry, probably repenting of what he had done, sent a messenger to the Archbishop about midnight, desiring him to come and speak with him immediately. On his arriving, the King told him of the complaint that had been made, and the consent that he had given, and asked him, "What say you,  
" My



“ My Lord ; have I done well or ill ?” The pri-  
 mate humbly thanked the King for giving him this  
 warning, and declared he was content to be com-  
 mitted to the Tower for the trial of his doctrine, if  
 he might have a fair trial, and hoped that His Ma-  
 jesty would take care to have him fairly tried.  
 “ O Lord God ! (cried the King,) what fond sim-  
 plicity have you to permit yourself to be impri-  
 soned, that every enemy of yours may take ad-  
 vantage against you ? Do you not know, that  
 when they have you once in prison, three or  
 four false knaves will soon be procured to wit-  
 ness against you, and condemn you ? No, not  
 so, My Lord ; I have a better regard to you than  
 to suffer your enemies to overthrow you. Ap-  
 pear before the council ; require them to pro-  
 duce your accusers ; and if they refuse, shew  
 them this ring, (giving him a ring,) which  
 they well know that I use for no other purpose,  
 but to call matters from the council into mine  
 own hands.” He was sent for by the council  
 early next morning ; and when he arrived, he was  
 not admitted into the council chamber, but ob-  
 liged to stand about an hour in the anti-chamber  
 among servants. The King being informed of  
 this by the physician, Doctor Bulls, was much of-  
 fended. “ Have they served My Lord so ? (said  
 he.) It is well enough ; I shall talk with them  
 by and by.” When the Archbishop was called  
 in to the council, he was told, that complaints  
 had been exhibited to the King and them, that  
 he, and others by his permission, had infected the  
 whole realm with heresy, and that it was the  
 King’s



Cent. XVI. King's pleasure that he should be committed to the Tower in order to his trial. When Cranmer had required to see his accusers face to face before he was committed, and was refused, he said, "I am sorry, My Lords, that you have compelled me to appeal from you to the King, who by this token (presenting the ring) hath taken this matter into his own hands." This put a stop to their career. They waited in a body on the King to restore his ring, and resign the cause into his hands. He received them with a stern countenance, reproved them severely for their contemptuous treatment of the Archbishop, and then added, "I would you should well understand, that I account My Lord of Canterbury as faithful a man towards me, as ever was prelate in this realm, and one to whom I am many ways beholden by the faith I owe unto God; (laying his hand on his heart;) and whoever loveth me, will regard him on that account." This gave such a check to Cranmer's enemies, that they made no more attempts against him during this reign.<sup>133</sup>

Prayers in English.

This striking proof of the steadiness of the King's friendship encouraged Cranmer to attempt the reformation of some of the many absurd superstitions that still remained. He proceeded, however, with great prudence and caution, and never attempted any change till he had first convinced the King of its propriety, and obtained his permission and command. He had long wished to see the prayers of the church in English, that the people might pray

<sup>133</sup> Strype's Cranmer, ch. 28.

to God in language they understood, and might know for what they prayed. The King was preparing to invade France in person, A.D. 1544., and prayers and processions were to be made as usual for his success; and the Archbishop embraced this opportunity to convince him, that the people would join in these prayers with much greater fervency, if they were in English, than they could do, if they were in an unknown tongue. By the King's permission, he composed a number of prayers in English, which he delivered to His Majesty for his perusal, who, having approved of them, sent them back to the primate, commanding him to cause them to be used in all the churches of his diocese, and to send copies of them to all the bishops of his province with a similar command. This royal injunction was probably composed by Cranmer, and is couched in very strong expressive language. One reason assigned for this great innovation, of praying in their native tongue, is thus expressed: "That the people might feel the  
 " godly taste thereof, and godly and joyously  
 " with thanks receive, embrace, and frequent the  
 " same." This injunction was dated June 11th. About two months after, when the navy was ready to sail, the council sent a similar injunction to the Archbishop, commanding him to order prayers and processions twice a-week in all the churches of his province for success and victory to His Majesty's arms, and that the prayers should be in English<sup>134</sup>. These injunctions gave great joy to the friends of the Reformation, who

<sup>134</sup> Strype's Cranmer, ch. 29.



Cent. XVI. began to hope, that they would soon see the whole service of the church in English.

Ceremonies abolished.

The King was prevailed upon at the same time to abolish some of the superstitious ceremonies which still remained; such as watching and ringing bells all night on the vigil of All-hallows; that the images in churches, and the crosses, should not be covered with vails in the time of Lent, as they had been formerly: that none should kneel or creep to the cross on Palm Sunday or any other time. The royal injunction for abolishing these ceremonies was procured by the application of the Archbishop, with the Bishops of Worcester and Chichester, and the execution of it, as usual, was committed to the Archbishop.<sup>135</sup>

Cranmer had for some time been engaged in another work for promoting the reformation and settlement of the church. This was the revival of the canon law, or rather forming a new code of ecclesiastical laws for the government of the church of England. The canon law had long been esteemed almost of divine authority, and far more excellent and obligatory than any other human laws. In that law, the authority and power of the Pope was carried to a most extravagant and impious height; and the laws of kings and princes, that were contrary to the decrees and canons of the Bishop of Rome, were of no force. After the abrogation, therefore, of the papal power, and the many other changes that had been made contrary to the canons, the authority of the

<sup>135</sup> Strype's Cranmer, p. 134.



canon law could not be acknowledged in England; Cent. XVI.  
 and it was not proper that the church should remain long without a system of laws suited to her circumstances. Accordingly the King gave a commission to thirty-two persons, (A.D. 1543.,) sixteen of spirituality, and sixteen of the temporality, to examine all canons, constitutions, and ordinances; and to establish all such laws ecclesiastical as shall by the King and them be thought convenient to be used in all spiritual courts; and this commission was confirmed by parliament<sup>136</sup>. This work was not finished till A.D. 1545., when it was presented to the King for his confirmation. But he either refused or neglected to confirm it; and this system of laws was not established till the succeeding reign. Various reasons have been assigned for this; but they are only conjectures.

No further progress was made in the reformation of the church in the short remainder of this reign. Persecution.  
 On the contrary, the persecutions on the cruel act of the six articles were renewed, and several persons were burnt, A.D. 1546., for denying the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament. The most remarkable of these sufferers was Mrs. Anne Askew, a lady of an opulent and ancient family in Lincolnshire, and, which was much more to her honour, of very uncommon ingenuity, learning, piety, and virtue. She was unhappily married to a Mr. Kyme, against her own inclination, by her father's authority. Her husband, who was a zealous Papist, treated her so ill, that she was obliged to leave his house and went to London.

<sup>136</sup> Statutes, 43 Hen. VIII. cap. 15.

Cent. XVI.

Having expressed her disbelief of the corporal presence, she was apprehended, imprisoned, and examined by the council. At her examination she answered many questions with such acuteness, as surprised her persecutors. Sir Martin Bowes, Lord Mayor of London, thus addressed her: "Foolish woman, sayest thou that the priests cannot make the body of Christ?"—"I have read," said she, "that God made man, but I never read that man made God."—"If a mouse," asked His Lordship, "eat the bread after it was consecrated, what shall become of the mouse? What sayest thou, foolish woman?"—"What shall become of her say you, My Lord?"—"I say," replied he, "that that mouse is damned."—"Alas!" said she, "Alas, poor mouse!" His Lordship did not think fit to ask her any more questions. She was tried by the commissioners for executing the act of the six articles, found guilty, and condemned to the flames. After her condemnation it was discovered that she had conversed with the Duchess of Suffolk, the Countess of Hertford, and some other ladies, who were suspected of favouring the Reformation, and against whom they wished for evidence. She was therefore removed from Newgate to the Tower, and there interrogated concerning these ladies, but would discover nothing. She was then laid on the rack and tortured, in the presence, and, as it is said, by the hands of the chancellor, Lord Wriothesley, with so much severity, that it deprived her of the use of her limbs, but extorted no discovery. She was carried to Smithfield and placed at the stake in a chair,  
and



and there reduced to ashes. She suffered with amazing cheerfulness; and one who was present at her execution says, she had an angel's countenance and a smiling face. John Laffels, a gentleman of a good family and fortune, who had a place at court; Nicholas Bellenian a priest, and John Adams a taylor, were burnt at the same place and time. The imaginary crime for which all these persons suffered this cruel death, was denying the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament of the altar; a doctrine for which Henry continued to be a flaming zealot to his last moments, which were now approaching. He died January 6th, A. D. 1547.<sup>137</sup> Cent. XVI.

The reformation of the church of England hath no concern with the personal character of this prince, or the motives of his conduct. It must stand or fall by its own merits. It was left by Henry in a very imperfect state, but was happily carried much farther in the short reign of his amiable and virtuous son Edward VI.

## CHAPTER II. SECTION III.

*The Ecclesiastical History of Scotland, from the Accession of James IV. A.D. 1488., to the Death of James V. A.D. 1542.*

THE ecclesiastical history of Scotland in the reign of James IV. contains very few events that merit a place in history, or at least very few such events have come to our knowledge. The Cent. XV.

<sup>137</sup> Strype's Mem. vol. i. ch. 31. Burnet, p. 341.



Cent. XV. truth is, that materials for a complete history of the church of Scotland before the Reformation, either do not exist, or are so scattered and se- creted that it is impossible to collect them. Nor have we much reason to regret this. The his- tory of this church in those benighted times, when ignorance, credulity, and superstition, with an abject submission to the imperious dictates of the Bishop of Rome, prevailed, could afford us but little rational instruction or entertainment. It will not be necessary, therefore, to divide this period into two sections, as the whole may be comprehended within moderate limits.

Shevez  
primate.

William Shevez was Archbishop of St. An- drew's and primate of Scotland at the accession of James IV. He appears to have acted a very bad part in the prosecution of his predecessor Patrick Graham, who had the merit to procure the erection of his see into an archbishopric, and thereby put an end to the pretensions of the archbishops of York to the primacy of the church of Scotland, which had been very trou- blesome. As the arts by which Shevez obtained his promotion were not very honourable, so we hear of no good that he did after he had ob- tained it. His pride engaged him in a violent contest with Walter Blackater, the first arch- bishop of Glasgow, by his refusing to acknow- ledge him in that character. This contest, after having disturbed the peace of the country for some time, was at length compromised. Glasgow was acknowledged to be an archbishopric; the bishoprics of Galloway, Argyle, and the Isles, assigned

assigned for its province, and the primacy reserved to St. Andrew's. Archbishop Shevez died, and was buried at St. Andrew's, A. D. 1496.<sup>138</sup> Cent. XV.

The opinions of Wickliff were early introduced into Scotland, and in some places they took deep root and continued long. To eradicate these noxious weeds, (as they were then esteemed,) Archbishop Blackater held a provincial synod at Glasgow, A. D. 1494., at which the King and council were present. Before this synod, George Campbell of Cefnock, Adam Read of Barlinking, John Campbell of Newmills, Andrew Shaw of Polkemac, Helen Chambers, Lady Pokelly, Isabel Chalmers, Lady Stairs, with about twenty others of inferior rank, in the counties of Kyle and Cunningham, were arraigned for heresy. The heresies of which these persons, who were commonly called the Lollards of Kyle, were accused, were the same with the doctrines of Wickliff, and nearly the same with those of all the Protestant churches, intermixed with a few absurd opinions, which they had rashly adopted, or which were falsely imputed to them by their enemies. Adam Read made a bold and spirited defence for himself and the others accused, which exposed the malice and ignorance of their accusers, and rendered them equally odious and ridiculous. This, however, would not have saved them, if the King, who had a friendship for some of the gentlemen, had not interposed, and put a stop to the prosecution<sup>139</sup>. It is much to the honour of James IV. that he was an enemy to perfe-

<sup>138</sup> Spottiswood, p. 60, 61.<sup>139</sup> Knox, p. 2, &c.

cution,



Cent. XVI. cution, and that not so much as one person suffered for his religious opinions in his reign.<sup>140</sup>

Arch-  
bishops of  
St. An-  
drew's;

Archbishop Shevez was succeeded in the see of St. Andrew's by the King's brother, James Stewart, Duke of Ross, Marquis of Ormond, Earl of Ardmannak, Lord of Brechen and Nevers, commendator of Dumfermline, and chancellor of the kingdom. Of this high-born prelate, who was loaded with so many honours, we know nothing, but that he died young, A.D. 1503. He was succeeded in his archbishopric by Alexander Stewart, the King's natural son, a boy of about eight years of age. Though this nomination was contrary to several canons, the Pope, for political reasons, confirmed it; for which the King wrote him a letter of thanks, full of the warmest expressions of gratitude; in which, among many other flattering things, he says, "We have often sent  
"our letters to you, most blessed father, but  
"never in vain. It was one strong proof of your  
"paternal affection to me, that soon after your  
"exaltation to the apostleship, you sent me a full  
"remission of all my sins; which was the more  
"valuable, because the salvation of the soul was  
"more precious than all other things. But to  
"that inestimable favour you have now added another, by committing the charge of the famous  
"archbishopric of St. Andrew's to my son, though  
"he is but a child<sup>141</sup>." This was certainly intended for a compliment, though it was really a reproach. This youthful prelate, the pupil and

<sup>140</sup> Calderwood's Hist. MSS. vol. i. p. 41.

<sup>141</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. i. p. 3.



favourite of Erasmus, fell, with his royal father, in the fatal battle of Flodden, in the eighteenth year of his age. Cent. XVI.

Robert Blackater, the first archbishop of Glasgow, died as he was going on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, A.D. 1509., and was succeeded in that see by James Beaton, of the ancient family of the Beaton of Glasgow. This prelate rose rapidly in the church, was deeply engaged in all affairs of the state, and shared in the good and bad fortune of the parties with whom he was connected.<sup>142</sup>

Another prelate flourished in this and the preceding reign, who is well entitled to a place in history, on account of his talents, his virtues, and his services and benefactions to his country. This was William Elphinston Bishop of Aberdeen. He was of an opulent mercantile family in Glasgow, and one of the first *eleves* of the university of that city. From thence he went to Paris, where, after he had studied several years, he read lectures on the civil and canon law to crowded audiences with great applause. On his return to his native country he was promoted in the church, and employed in several embassies both by James III. and James IV.; in which he acquitted himself with ability and success. His first bishopric was that of Ross, from whence he was translated to Aberdeen. In this city he founded an university, in which he built, furnished, and endowed the first college. He also built the bridge over the river Dee<sup>143</sup>. These were great, expensive, and useful

<sup>142</sup> See Biograph. Britan. art. James Beaton.

<sup>143</sup> Spottiswood, p. 105.

**Cent. XVI.** works from which his country derived great and permanent advantages. He lived admired and beloved for his charity, hospitality, public spirit, and other virtues, to a very advanced age. He was so deeply affected with the deplorable disaster at Flodden, that he never recovered his wonted cheerfulness, and died the year after, A.D. 1514. To embalm the memory of great and good men, the benefactors and ornaments of their country, is the most pleasant and useful province of the historian.

Assembly  
of the  
clergy.

The popes in the times we are now delineating, considered all the clergy in the Christian world as their immediate subjects, and claimed and exercised the right of taxing them at their pleasure. At this the clergy sometimes murmured and remonstrated, but were compelled to submit and pay these papal taxes. The Pope sent a legate, named Bajomanus, into Scotland, A.D. 1512., who held a synod of the clergy, both regular and secular, in the Dominican convent at Edinburgh, and demanded an annual tax of two shillings in the pound on every benefice of forty pounds a year and upwards. To this demand the synod consented, but with much reluctance; and it continued to be levied till the Reformation by the name of Bajomanus's tax. <sup>144</sup>

Competi-  
tion for  
offices.

By the great slaughter of the nobility at Flodden, many of the principal offices, both in church and state, became vacant, and the surviving clergy and nobles, instead of uniting together for the defence of their country, engaged in the most violent com-

<sup>144</sup> Lesly, p. 356.

petitions for these vacant offices. For the arch-  
 bishopric of St. Andrew's three powerful compe-  
 titors appeared; Gavin Douglas, uncle to the  
 Earl of Angus, and afterwards Bishop of Dunkeld,  
 was nominated by the Queen Regent, and sup-  
 ported by the Douglasses, who put him in pos-  
 session of the castle of St. Andrew's<sup>145</sup>. John Hep-  
 burn, Prior of St. Andrew's, was elected by the  
 convent, and supported by the Hepburns, a nu-  
 merous and powerful clan. By his office of prior  
 he was administrator of the see, and collected  
 the rents of it during the vacancy; and by the  
 assistance of the clergy and people he expelled  
 the servants of his rival, the Bishop of Dunkeld,  
 and got possession of the castle of St. Andrew's,  
 in which he placed a garrison. The third com-  
 petitor was Andrew Foreman, Bishop of Moray  
 in Scotland, Archbishop of Bourges in France,  
 and commendator of several rich abbies. Fore-  
 man was in such high favour with King James IV.  
 that he obtained letters from him under the privy  
 seal, permitting him to solicit the Pope for any  
 benefice that became vacant in Scotland, any  
 law to the contrary notwithstanding<sup>146</sup>. Of this  
 permission he now availed himself, and solicited  
 so effectually at the court of Rome that the Pope  
 Leo X. promoted him to the vacant archbishop-  
 ric, and to all the abbies the late Archbishop  
 had possessed; and also appointed him his *legatus*  
*a latere* in Scotland. He was then on an embassy  
 at the court of France; but as soon as he had  
 received his bulls from Rome he returned to Scot-

<sup>145</sup> Lesly, p. 374.<sup>146</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. i. p. 110.



Cent. XVI. land to prosecute his claims. It appears from an authentic letter of the Queen Regent to the Pope, that she had first nominated that excellent prelate William Elphinston, Bishop of Aberdeen, to the archbishopric, and that he had consented to accept of it; but his death prevented his promotion<sup>147</sup>. In another letter the arrangement that was first intended by the court is thus delineated: "That William Bishop of Aberdeen should be translated to St. Andrew's; that " that George Abbot of Holyrood-house should " be bishop of Aberdeen; Patrick Abbot of " Cambuskenneth should be abbot of Holyrood-house; that the abbey of Cambuskenneth " should be given *in commendam* to Andrew " Bishop of Caithness; the abbey of Arbroath " to Gavin Douglas; Dumfermlin to James " Hepburn; Inchefferay to Alexander Stewart; " Glenluce to the Bishop of Lismore; and Cold- " ingham to David Hume<sup>148</sup>." But this arrangement was disconcerted by the death of the Bishop of Aberdeen, and the subsequent contest for the primacy.

Letters to  
the Pope.

The Queen Regent and nobility were greatly interested in the disposal of these benefices. This appears from several letters written by them to the Pope and Cardinal with uncommon warmth. In these letters they put the Pope in mind " that " several of his predecessors had granted this " privilege to the Kings of Scotland by their " bulls; that they and their successors would " never grant any vacant prelacies in Scotland,

<sup>147</sup> *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, vol. i. p. 184.

<sup>148</sup> *Ibid.* p. 199.

" till

“ till they had waited eight months for the royal  
 “ nomination, which they would confirm.” They  
 declare in the strongest terms, “ that they would  
 “ not suffer their infant king to be deprived of  
 “ that privilege. They speak of Bishop Fore-  
 “ man with great asperity, as an upstart, and  
 “ enemy to his king and country, for which the  
 “ parliament had justly deprived him of all his  
 “ offices, banished him the kingdom, and would  
 “ never suffer him to return <sup>149</sup>.” But the Pope  
 paid no regard to all this warmth and threatening.

Cent. XVI.

Accom-  
 modation.

If the learned, virtuous, and amiable Gavin Douglas was ever a competitor for the primacy, as our historians affirm, he soon quitted the field to the other two competitors. When Bishop Foreman arrived in Scotland, both the court and the country were so much incensed against him, that he could hardly find any of the nobles willing to espouse his cause and publish his bulls. He was of the family of the Foremans of Hutton in the Merse, who had long been partisans of the Humes. He applied therefore to the Lord, then one of the most powerful noblemen in the kingdom, and prevailed on him to publish his bulls at the cross of Edinburgh. This produced a great change in his favour; and many, both of the clergy and laity, who had a high veneration for the authority of the Pope, favoured his cause. Things were in this state, when John Duke of Albany arrived in Scotland in June, A.D. 1515. He found the nation divided into two parties, and so warmly engaged, that he dreaded a civil war. To prevent this, he proposed an accommo-

<sup>149</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. i. p. 200—211.

**Cent. XVI.** dation, which he at length accomplished. Bishop Foreman, who was very rich, and fonder of power than of money, made great sacrifices to his rival to resign his pretensions to the primacy. He resigned the bishopric of Moray, the abbies of Arbroath, Drybrough, and Kilwinning, which were divided among Hepburn's friends: he allowed Hepburn to retain all the rents of the archbishopric which he had collected, and gave him a pension, it is said, of three thousand crowns a year<sup>150</sup>. To himself he reserved only the archbishopric and the abbey of Dumfermline. The Duke of Albany wrote an account of this accommodation to the Pope; in which he bestowed the highest praises on Archbishop Foreman, for the generous sacrifices he had made to preserve the peace of his country, and earnestly intreated His Holiness to make him a cardinal, which Julius II., his predecessor, had promised to do, in a letter to James IV.<sup>151</sup>

The encroachments of the popes of those times on the rights both of private and of royal patrons, were productive of many inconveniences and quarrels. The contest about the archbishopric was hardly ended, when another of the same kind commenced, on the death of George Brown, Bishop of Dunkeld. The chapter chose Andrew Stewart, son to the Earl of Athole, and put him in possession of the castles, houses, and lands belonging to the see. But Gavin Douglas, uncle to the Earl of Angus, was appointed bishop by the Pope. Stewart,

<sup>150</sup> *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, vol. 1. p. 217.

<sup>151</sup> *Ibid.*



supported by his father, kept possession of the lands and castles. The Regent interposed, and with much difficulty brought about an accommodation. Douglas resigned two benefices to Stewart, and obtained the bishopric. The Duke of Albany gave an account of this transaction to the Pope, by a letter dated at Edinburgh September 8th, A. D. 1516.; desiring him to ratify the contract of agreement, to prevent all doubts of its validity<sup>152</sup>. In all these contests the papal candidate prevailed.

Archbishop Foreman enjoyed the high station for which he had struggled so hard and paid so dear, only about seven years. He was a prelate who possessed very uncommon talents for and dexterity in business, which gained him a high degree of favour with two successive kings of Scotland, James III. and IV.; with two successive popes, Julius II. and Leo X.; and with that wise prince, Lewis XII. of France; who all loaded him with benefices. Julius II. gave him the following character, in a letter to James IV.: “Your ambassador, Andrew Bishop of Moray, hath acted, and still continues to act, with so much fidelity, prudence, diligence, and dexterity, that he hath given me the highest satisfaction; and I think him worthy of a more eminent station in the church. For this reason, and to gratify Your Majesty, I have requested the Pope to make him a cardinal at the next nomination of cardinals<sup>153</sup>.” The death of the Pope prevented his obtaining that dignity. Like his royal master James IV. he was an

<sup>152</sup> *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, vol. i. p. 222.<sup>153</sup> *Ibid.* p. 138.

Cent. XVI. enemy to persecution, and none suffered for religion during his incumbency.

Contest.

Almost every vacancy of the see of St. Andrew's produced a contest between the courts of Scotland and of Rome. The kings of Scotland claimed a right to present to all the vacant prelacies in their dominions within eight months, and that the popes should grant to their presentees the bulls necessary to their instalment. But the popes frequently filled up the vacancies without waiting for the royal presentation. This was a direct violation of the privilege of presenting within eight months, that had been granted and confirmed to the kings of Scotland by many bulls. But the popes were now become so arbitrary, that they broke through every barrier that limited their power. On this occasion two competitors for the primacy took the field: James Beaton Archbishop of Glasgow, chancellor of the kingdom, presented by the Regent; and Gavin Douglas Bishop of Dunkeld, who solicited and expected the papal appointment, by the great influence of Henry VIII. at the court of Rome. To counteract that influence great efforts were made. A letter was sent to the Pope, in the name of the King, the Regent, and the three estates of the kingdom; acquainting him, that Gavin Douglas Bishop of Dunkeld had fled to their enemy the King of England; for which they had banished him by an act of parliament, and earnestly intreating His Holiness not to listen to any application that might be made for appointing him archbishop of

St. Andrew's<sup>154</sup>. His rival, Beaton, in his capacity of chancellor, wrote a letter in the name of the privy council to Christiern King of Denmark; requesting him to give directions to his ambassador at the court of Rome, to oppose the elevation of the Bishop of Dunkeld to the archbishopric of St. Andrew's and abbey of Dumfermline<sup>155</sup>. How this contest would have ended is uncertain; if both competitors had lived to prosecute their claims. But it was terminated by the death of the Bishop of Dunkeld: and Beaton was translated from Glasgow to St. Andrew's, A. D. 1523., without any further opposition. Cent. XVI.

Soon after this, the cruel spirit of persecution, which had been long restrained, revived, and raged with no little violence. The first who fell a sacrifice to this infernal spirit, was Mr. Patrick Hamilton, a youth of noble birth, and nearly related to the royal family, being nephew to the Earl of Arran by his father, and to the Duke of Albany by his mother. Having early discovered a taste for learning, the abbey of Ferne, and some other benefices, were given him, to enable him to prosecute his studies. With this view he went to the university of Marburg in Germany, where he conversed with Francis Lambert, and became acquainted with the doctrines of Luther, which he cordially embraced, and hastened home to communicate the knowledge of them to his countrymen. On his arrival the warmth of his zeal made him declaim with vehemence against the corruptions and errors of the

<sup>154</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. i. p. 328.<sup>155</sup> Ibid. p. 333.



Cent. XVI. church. His eloquence, his youth, and noble birth, attracted crowded audiences, who heard him with admiration, and greedily imbibed his principles. This alarmed the fears, and inflamed the rage of the clergy. Archbishop Beaton invited him to a friendly conference in St. Andrew's. At his arrival there he was committed to the care of a friar Campbell, for his instruction and conversion. He was much an overmatch for his instructor, whose real object was to discover and inform his enemies of his opinions. When this was accomplished, and the young King was sent on a pilgrimage to St. Dulhacks in Ross, they seized Mr. Hamilton in his bed at midnight, and carried him to the castle. Next forenoon, February 28th, A. D. 1527., he was brought before the primate, the Archbishop of Glasgow, three other bishops, many abbots, priors, doctors, lawyers, professors of the university, and a prodigious crowd of spectators, in the cathedral, and accused of holding and propagating the damnable heresies of Martin Luther. He did not deny the charge, but defended the doctrines he had taught with many arguments, which served only to render his condemnation more certain. He was accordingly condemned as an obstinate heretic, delivered to the secular magistrate, carried from the bar to the stake, and burnt with circumstances of peculiar cruelty. Thus perished this learned, virtuous, and noble youth, in the twenty-third year of his age. The severity of his sufferings, and the fortitude with which he bore them, excited the pity and admiration of the great body of the spectators; but  
bigotry

bigotry and self-interest had so hardened the hearts of many of the clergy, that they applauded this barbarous deed as a most meritorious display of Christian zeal. The university of Louvain also wrote a letter to the Archbishop of St. Andrew's and his assessors, in which they loaded them with praises for burning so great a heretic; and exhorted them to persevere, till they had extirpated all the heretics in their country.<sup>156</sup>

*Tantum religio potuit suadere malorum.*

To such black deeds doth superstition prompt.

The clergy soon found that they had no reason to boast of the good policy, or good effects, of their severity. The propositions for which Mr. Hamilton had been condemned to the flames became public, awakened curiosity, and were examined by many of the clergy and laity, by the youth at the university, and even by the monks in their cells, who had never heard or thought of them before. The general result of this examination was, that they appeared neither so absurd, nor so pernicious, as to merit so severe a punishment, and not a few were fully convinced of their truth, and cordially embraced them. This soon appeared even in the city of St. Andrew's. Friar Alexander Seaton, confessor to the King, preached several sermons in that city in the Lent after Mr. Hamilton's execution. In these sermons he insisted only on the necessity of repentance, faith, and holiness of life, without ever mentioning purgatory, pilgrimages, miracles, worship of saints and images, the

<sup>156</sup> Fox, p. 888.

Cent. XVI. usual subjects of the sermons of those times. He also used some expressions which seemed to reflect on the negligence and vices of the clergy. The uncommon strain of these sermons raised a suspicion that he inclined to heresy; and after he had left the city, another friar was set up to preach against his doctrines. When he heard this he returned, and in some other sermons confirmed all he had advanced. He was then brought before the Archbishop, who charged him with having said, that bishops ought to preach, and that those who did not preach were dumb dogs. "Your informers, My Lord, (said Seaton) must have been very ignorant persons, who could not distinguish between the apostle Paul, and the prophet Isaiah, and friar Seaton. I said, indeed, that Paul exhorted bishops to preach, and that Isaiah called those who did not preach, dumb dogs. But of myself, I said nothing. If that is heresy, Paul and Isaiah are the heretics." The primate was nettled at this smart reply; but he concealed his resentment till he alienated the King from his confessor, which was not a difficult task. That young prince had been debauched by those who had the charge of his education, and unhappily indulged himself in vague amours; for which his confessor had reproved him sharply. Father Seaton observing a change in the King's manner of receiving him, took the alarm, and made his escape to Berwick. From thence he wrote a long expostulatory letter to the King, in which he offered to return and vindicate his doctrines, if he might have a fair trial before impartial judges.



judges. Having received an answer to this letter, Cent. XVI.  
 he proceeded to London, where he found an asylum in the family of the Duke of Suffolk.<sup>157</sup>

The death of Mr. Hamilton, and the flight of friar Seaton, did not deter others from adopting their opinions, and exposing themselves to the same dangers and sufferings: on the contrary, it so much increased the number and boldness of their followers, that the church history of Scotland in the remainder of this reign consists of little else but the trials and burnings of heretics. To give a minute detail of all those scenes of horror, would be very painful to the writer, and could not be very pleasant to the reader. It may be sufficient therefore to say, that many, both of the clergy and laity, were committed to the flames for heresy; that many others, eminent for their virtue and learning, abandoned their country to avoid the same fate; and that not a few wounded their consciences by recanting their opinions, to preserve their lives.<sup>158</sup>

James Beaton, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, had Cardinal Beaton.  
 paid great attention to the education and promotion of his nephew David Beaton. Besides several benefices which he procured for him while he was still a young man, he resigned the rich abbey of Aberbrothock in his favour; and the Pope, at the requisition of the King, confirmed the transaction<sup>159</sup>. He was a great favourite of the Duke of Albany during his regency, and afterwards a greater favourite of the young King, who ap-

<sup>157</sup> Spottiswoode, p. 65.<sup>158</sup> Ibid. Knox, p. 16, &c.<sup>159</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, p. 339.

Cent. XVI. pointed him lord privy seal A. D. 1528., from which time he was his chief confident and prime minister. He was sent upon several embassies to the court of France, where he negotiated both the King's marriages, and ingratiated himself so much with Francis, that he granted him some singular favours, and among others the rich bishopric of Merepoix. His uncle becoming infirm in his old age, he appointed him his co-adjutor, and devolved upon him all his power; the Pope created him a cardinal December 20th, A. D. 1539. The old Archbishop died A. D. 1539., and disposed of all his benefices by his testament, and particularly of his archbishopric, to his nephew and co-adjutor. This destination in other circumstances would have been disregarded; but being perfectly agreeable both to the King and the Pope, was confirmed<sup>160</sup>. Such was the rise of this aspiring prelate to a power almost unlimited, which he employed to the most pernicious purposes.

Persecu-  
tion.

The Pope had fixed his eyes on the younger Beaton some time before this, as a proper instrument to crush all heretics and heresies in Scotland, and with that view had favoured his promotion. A more proper instrument could not have been chosen for such a work. His uncle, the late primate, had been a cruel persecutor; but it was suspected that he felt some little reluctance to that horrid business. But the Cardinal was liable to no such weakness. He was a cool, deliberate, unrelenting tyrant, who took a pride and pleasure in the most atrocious

<sup>160</sup> See Biograph. Britan. art. D. Beaton.

acts of cruelty. To render him still more formidable, Pope Paul III. appointed him his *legatus a latere* in Scotland. Being now armed with all the powers he was capable of receiving, he made haste to apply them to the purpose for which they were designed; and he resolved to do this in a way that would strike those who knew they were suspected or obnoxious with the greatest terror. In May, A. D. 1450., he went from Edinburgh to St. Andrew's with a more numerous and splendid retinue than any former primate, attended by the Archbishop of Glasgow, by five other bishops, by several abbots, priors, and principal clergymen; by the Earls of Arran, Huntley, Marshal, and Montrose; and by many other lords and gentlemen. To all the great men of the clergy and laity assembled in the cathedral May 28th, the Cardinal delivered an oration, in which he complained of the great increase of heresy in all parts of the kingdom, and even in the King's court; represented the fatal consequences with which this would be attended, and the necessity of inflicting the severest punishments on all who were found guilty of that greatest of all crimes.<sup>101</sup>

The Cardinal having thus published his scheme for the extirpation of heresy, by burning all heretics, immediately proceeded to put it in execution. In the same assembly, Sir John Borthwick was accused of entertaining and propagating several heretical opinions, and dispersing heretical books. The heretical opinions of which he was

<sup>101</sup> Buchan. lib. xiv. Spottiswoode, p. 69.

accused,



**Cent. XVI.** accused, were the same with those that were professed by the other reformers of those times, which are well known, and need not be here enumerated. Among the heretical books, for the dispersing of which he was accused, the New Testament in English was the first. Sir John, who was commonly called Captain Borthwick, had concealed himself so carefully, that his enemies could not discover the place of his retreat; and as he did not appear in court to answer to the accusation brought against him, he was declared an obstinate heretic, and sentenced to be burnt as soon as he could be apprehended; and all persons were prohibited to entertain him, under the pain of excommunication. He was burnt in effigy in St. Andrew's the same day, and in Edinburgh about a week after. Thinking himself no longer safe in Scotland, he made his escape into England, where he published a defence of the doctrines for which he had been condemned, in which he exposed the cruelty and other vices of the Cardinal and clergy of Scotland with great freedom<sup>162</sup>. He was well received by Henry VIII., and employed his negotiations with the protestant princes of Germany.

Dean  
Thomas  
Forrest.

The Cardinal was more successful in his next attempt to burnt heretics. Dean Thomas Forrest, canon of St. Columbs, and vicar of Dollar, preached every Sunday on the epistle or gospel of the day; for which and some other singularities, he was accused of heresy to his ordinary George Crichton, Bishop of Dunkeld. The Bishop, when

<sup>162</sup> Fox, p. 1147, &c.

the Dean appeared before him, addressed him in this manner: "My joy Dean Thomas, I am informed that you preach the epistle and gospel every Sunday to your parishioners, and that you do not take the best cow and the best cloth from them, which is very prejudicial to other churchmen; and therefore, my joy Dean Thomas, I would you to take your cow and your cloth as other churchmen do. It is too much to preach every Sunday; for in so doing you may make the people think that we should preach likewise: it is enough for you, when you find any good epistle, or good gospel, that setteth forth the liberties of holy church, to preach that, and let the rest alone." To this sage admonition of his bishop, Dean Thomas made this answer: "I think, My Lord, that none of my parishioners will complain that I do not take the cow and the cloth; but I know that they will gladly give me any thing that they have; and they know that I will gladly give them any thing that I have. There is no discord amongst us. Your Lordship sayeth, it is too much to preach every Sunday: I think it is too little; and I wish that Your Lordship did the like." "Nay, nay, Dean Thomas, (said the Bishop,) we were not ordained to preach." "Your Lordship (said the Dean) directs me, when I meet with a good epistle, or a good gospel, to preach upon it. I have read both the Old and New Testament, and I have never met with a bad epistle, or a bad gospel: but if Your Lordship will shew me which are the good and which are the bad I

" will

Cent. XVI.

“ will preach on the good, and let the bad  
 “ alone.” “ I thank my God, (said the Bishop,)  
 “ I know nothing of either the Old or New Tes-  
 “ tament ; therefore, Dean Thomas, I will know  
 “ nothing but my portafs and my pontifical. Go  
 “ away, and lay aside all these fantasies, or you  
 “ will repent it when too late.” Dean Thomas  
 did not take the advice of his bishop, but con-  
 tinued to preach every Sunday. He was soon  
 after brought before the Cardinal, together with  
 two friars, Duncan Simpson a priest, and Robert  
 Foster a gentleman, in Stirling. They were all  
 condemned as obstinate heretics, and burnt on  
 the castle-hill of Edinburgh.<sup>163</sup>

List of  
 heretics.

All this was only a prelude to the horrors that  
 were intended. A list of three hundred and sixty  
 persons, who were to be tried for heresy, was  
 found in the King's pocket after his death. In this  
 list were the names of about one hundred noble-  
 men and gentlemen of fortune ; and at the head of  
 them, the Earl of Arran, presumptive heir to the  
 crown. But the troubles in which the kingdom  
 was involved in the two last years of James V.  
 prevented the execution of this execrable scheme,  
 by which the clergy proposed to secure their own  
 power and possessions, and enrich the crown, at  
 the expence of so much innocent blood.<sup>164</sup>

Cardinal Beaton had gained so great an ascend-  
 ant over the mind of James V. that he devolved  
 upon him the administration of all the affairs  
 both in church and state. This we learn from the  
 Cardinal himself in his letters to the Pope, and his

<sup>163</sup> Fox, p. 1153.<sup>164</sup> Sadler's Letters, p. 101.

other



other friends at Rome, in which he acquaints Cent. XVI.  
 them, that he was overwhelmed with business;  
 that the King had laid the whole weight of his  
 government upon him alone, and would not  
 suffer him to depart from court one moment <sup>165</sup>.  
 These letters were dated May 4th, A. D. 1540.  
 Great efforts were made by Henry VIII. to  
 weaken the attachment of the infatuated prince  
 to his dangerous favourite <sup>166</sup>, but without effect.  
 We may, therefore, without hesitation, ascribe all  
 the calamities that befell the King and kingdom  
 of Scotland in the last years of this reign, to the  
 pernicious councils of Cardinal Beaton. The  
 objects of these councils were—to keep King  
 James at a distance from, and at variance with,  
 his uncle the King of England, who courted his  
 friendship with great earnestness; to extinguish  
 that spirit of reformation that had spread from  
 England into Scotland; and to preserve himself  
 and the rest of the clergy from being deprived  
 of their honours, their power, and their posses-  
 sions. In pursuing these objects, he involved  
 the nation in a war with England; the events of  
 which proved so disastrous, that they deprived  
 the unhappy misguided King, first of his reason,  
 and soon after of his life.

All these disasters did not discourage this bold  
 and hardened politician. He attended the prince  
 whom he had ruined, and dictated a will for him  
 in his last moments, when he was incapable of  
 doing any deed that required the use of reason.

<sup>165</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. ii. p. 66.

<sup>166</sup> See Sadler's Letters.

Cent. XVI. By that will a council of regency was appointed, consisting of himself, the Earls of Arran, Argyle, and Huntley. He brought this will from Faulkland to Edinburgh, where he proclaimed it at the market-cross, and immediately took the reins of government into his hands.<sup>167</sup>

The Cardinal did not long retain his ill-gotten power. A convention met December 28th, A. D. 1542., only eight days after the King's death. In this convention no regard was paid to the pretended will, as the manner in which it had been fabricated was not unknown. The Cardinal, irritated at this, made a most violent declamation against appointing any single person, and particularly any of the name of Hamilton, regent. In this oration he gave the Hamiltons all the opprobrious names that language furnished. The Earl of Arran, who was presumptive heir to the crown after the infant Queen and her issue, stood up and said: "My lords, call me what names you please, but deny me not my right to the regency. "Whatever faults any of my name may have committed, none of you can say I have done him any injury. Neither am I minded to flatter any of my friends in their evil doing; but by God's grace shall be as forward to correct their enormities, as any within the realm can reasonably require me. Therefore yet again, my lords, in God's name I crave, that ye do me no wrong, nor defraud me of my just title, before you have experience of my government." The whole assembly, the Cardinal

<sup>167</sup> Euchan. lib. xv.

and a few of the clergy excepted, cried out, that the Earl of Arran's claim was most just, and could not be disputed. He was accordingly appointed guardian to the Queen, and governor of the kingdom, and invested with all the powers, prerogatives, and possessions of the crown<sup>168</sup>. In a letter to the Pope, dated at Edinburgh May 14th, A.D. 1543., the Earl of Arran informed His Holiness, that by his proximity of blood, and the law of nature, he had been raised to the regency, as well as by the assent of the people of Scotland<sup>169</sup>. He was at the same time declared to be the second person in the kingdom, and next heir to the crown, after the infant Queen and her issue.

The Earl of Arran was very unfit for the station to which he was raised, and the difficult part he had to act. Scotland was at this time divided into two parties, which might be called the French and the English parties. The first of these consisted of all the clergy, and such of the nobility, gentry, and commons as adhered to France and Rome, and were enemies to the Reformation and to England. This party had the ancient prejudices of the nation in their favour, and Cardinal Beaton at their head, than whom they could not have had a more able and artful leader. The other party consisted of all the nobles, gentlemen, and common people, who wished for the reformation of the church, and an intimate union with England by the marriage of the young Queen to the Prince of Wales. This party gained a great

<sup>168</sup> Knox, p. 36.<sup>169</sup> *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, vol. ii. p. 157.



Cent. XVI. accession of strength by the return of the Earl of Angus, and his brother Sir George Douglas, who had long been exiles; and of the Earls of Glencairn and Cassilis; the Lords Maxwell, Somerville, and Fleming; with several gentlemen, who had been prisoners in England. All these, gained by Henry, were sent into Scotland to promote his views. This party also derived great advantages from the vicinity, power, and wealth of England, and the extreme eagerness of Henry to accomplish the marriage. But the most powerful party, without a proper head, is a rope of sand. The Regent Arran was at the head of this party, and by his weak unsteady conduct ruined his party, brought disgrace upon himself, and many great calamities on his country.<sup>170</sup>

The imprisonment of the Cardinal, the arts by which he recovered his liberty, brought over the governor to his party, attained as great a degree of power as he had ever possessed, and defeated all the schemes of Henry VIII., have been already related<sup>171</sup>. We shall now therefore confine our attention to the events which have an immediate relation to religion.

As soon as the Cardinal had recovered his former power, he discovered that his pride, ambition, and cruelty were not in the least diminished. The great seal was taken from the Archbishop of Glasgow, and delivered in full parliament December 15th, A.D. 1543., to the Cardinal<sup>172</sup>. The same

<sup>170</sup> See Sadler's Letters.

<sup>171</sup> See ch. i. sect. 2. towards the end.

<sup>172</sup> Regist. Parl. f. 123.

day the governor, who had abandoned his principles as well as his party, and was entirely under the direction of the Cardinal, complained in parliament of the great increase of heresy in all parts of the kingdom, when an act was made for its extirpation, commanding all bishops and their officials to apprehend and bring to trial all who were suspected of heresy, and promising them the support and secular arm in that pious work.<sup>173</sup> Cent. XVI.

This act was not suffered to lie long dormant. Persecution.  
In January, A. D. 1544., the Cardinal visited some parts of his province in great state accompanied by the governor, the Earl of Argyle, justice-general, three bishops and several other lords and gentlemen. Many persons suspected of heresy had been imprisoned in Perth, and were now tried and found guilty. Some of them were banished, five men were hanged, and one woman was drowned<sup>174</sup>. These five men and the woman were respectable burghesses of Perth, and much beloved by their neighbours, who earnestly interceded with the governor and Cardinal to spare their lives. The governor, it is said, would willingly have granted the request; but the Cardinal, who ruled all, was inflexible. This intercession, however, was probably the cause that they were not committed to the flames, the usual punishment of heretics.

The governor and Cardinal were prevented from proceeding in their progress for the extirpation of heresy, by receiving intelligence of the great preparations that were making in England

<sup>173</sup> Regist. Parl. f. 123.<sup>174</sup> Calderwood's MSS. Hist.

Cent. XVI.

for a formidable invasion of Scotland in the spring. That invasion took place in the beginning of May this year 1544., and was most ruinous to the capital of Scotland, and the country between that and Berwick. The war between the two nations being thus kindled, it continued to rage with great violence all this and a great part of the next year; during which time the preachers and professors of the new learning met with little or no molestation, and the number of both greatly increased.

The first preachers of the doctrines of the Reformation in Scotland, two or three excepted, were more eminent for their zeal and piety, than for their learning. But one no less sincere and pious than his predecessors, but more distinguished for his abilities and learning, made his appearance in this interval. This was the famous Mr. George Wishart, a son of the family of Pitarrow in the Merns. Having passed through a course of education in his native country, he studied some time at Cambridge, and visited several countries on the continent for his further improvement. When he was in Germany, he became acquainted with the doctrines of the reformed, which he studied most carefully, and embraced most cordially. He then resolved to return home, to communicate to his countrymen the knowledge he had obtained. Passing through England, he arrived in Scotland A. D. 1544.; and having visited his family he immediately began to preach with the most undaunted boldness against the corruptions of the church, and the vices of the clergy. He met with a most



favourable reception wherever he appeared, particularly in Dundee, where he resided a considerable time, and preached in the principal church to crowded audiences, till he was prohibited by the magistrates, at the command of the Cardinal. He then visited Montrose, Perth, and several other towns in those parts, preaching every where to admiring multitudes, who were equally charmed with the novelty of his doctrine, and manner of preaching. Being invited into the west, where the Reformation had made the greatest progress, he preached at the market cross in the town of Ayr, to a prodigious crowd of people, while the Archbishop of Glasgow preached in the church to a few old women. In a word, the strength of his arguments convinced the more intelligent of the truth of his doctrines, while those who were not capable of judging of his arguments, were greatly affected by the eloquence, warmth, and fervour of his discourses. His converts were almost innumerable; and among these were not a few of the nobility and principal gentlemen of the kingdom.<sup>175</sup>

The Cardinal, and the clergy in general, were greatly incensed against this bold and dangerous adversary; and a resolution was formed to put an end to his attacks upon the church, by taking away his life by some means or other. Two attempts were made to cut him off by assassination; but he defeated the first by his courage, and the second by his caution. On the first of these

<sup>175</sup> Knox, p. 48, &c. Edit. 1644. Spottiswoode, p. 76, &c. Buchanan. lib. xv.

Cent. XVI. attempts he behaved in such a noble and generous manner as should have softened the hearts of his enemies, if that had been possible. A friar named Weighton, who had undertaken to kill him when he was in Dundee, knowing that it was his custom to remain in the pulpit after sermon till the church was empty, skulked at the bottom of the stairs with a dagger in his right hand under his gown. Mr. Wishart, (who was remarkably quick-sighted,) as he came down from the pulpit, observing the friar's countenance, and his hand with something in it under his gown, suspected his design, sprung forward, seized his hand, and wrenched the dagger from him. At the noise which this scuffle occasioned, a crowd of people rushed into the church, and would have torn the friar in pieces; but Mr. Wishart clasped him in his arms, and declared that none should touch him but through his body. "He hath done me no hurt, (said he,) my friends; he hath done me much good; he hath taught me what I have to fear, and put me upon my guard." With these and other speeches he appeased the people, and sent home the assassin in safety<sup>176</sup>. If he discovered much courage and presence of mind on this occasion, he discovered no less caution and sagacity on the next. When he was at Montrose, a messenger came to him with a letter from the laird of Kineer, acquainting him that he had been suddenly taken ill, and earnestly intreating him to come to him without delay. He immediately set out, accompanied by two or three friends; but

<sup>176</sup> Knox, p. 50.

when

when they were about half a mile from the town, Cent. XVI.  
 he stopped, saying, “ I suspect there is treason  
 “ in this matter. Go you (said he to one of his  
 “ friends) up yonder, and tell me what you ob-  
 “ serve.” He came back and told him, that he  
 had seen a company of spearmen lying in ambush  
 near the road. They then returned to the town,  
 and on the way he said to his friends: “ I know  
 “ I shall one day fall by the hands of that blood-  
 “ thirsty man (meaning the Cardinal); but I  
 “ trust it shall not be in this manner.”<sup>177</sup>

These two plots having miscarried, and Mr. Synod.  
 Wishart still continuing to preach with his usual  
 boldness and success, the Cardinal summoned a  
 synod of the clergy, to meet January 11th, A. D.  
 1546., in the blackfriars church Edinburgh, to  
 consider what was proper to be done to put a  
 stop to the progress of heresy, and to that torrent  
 of defection from the church that threatened her  
 ruin. Some proposals were made for reforming  
 the lives of the clergy, and obliging them to be  
 more diligent in the duties of their office, particu-  
 larly in preaching; but nothing was determined.

When the Cardinal was thus employed, he re- Mr. Wi-  
shart ap-  
prehended.  
 ceived information that the great enemy of the  
 church, Mr. George Wishart, was in the house  
 of Ormiston, only about eight miles from Edin-  
 burgh. He did not neglect this information, but  
 immediately applied to the governor, and with  
 some difficulty, it is said, procured a sufficient  
 force, with which he set out in the night, and  
 arrived at Elphinston, about a mile from Ormif-

<sup>177</sup> Knox, p. 51.



Cent. XVI.

ton. Here the Cardinal halted, and sent the Earl of Bothwell with a party of armed men to Ormiston to seize Mr. Wishart. Having surrounded the house that none might escape, they awaked the family, and demanded admittance. This Mr. Cockburn, the owner of the house, at first refused; but finding it in vain to resist, the Earl and a few of his followers were admitted. After some expostulations, the Earl of Bothwell gave a promise, confirmed by an oath, that he would protect Mr. Wishart from the malice of the Cardinal, and procure him a fair trial, or would set him at liberty. On this security, Mr. Wishart was produced and put into his hands.<sup>178</sup>

Delivered  
to the  
governor.

The Earl carried his prisoner to his own castle of Hails, and seemed at first to have some intention to perform his promise. But if he ever had such an intention, it was soon shaken, by the persuasion, it is said, of the Queen-dowager, with whom he was in love. To give him an excuse for violating his oath and promise, he was brought before the governor and council January 19th, and commanded, under the highest penalties, to deliver his prisoner to the governor before the end of that month. He complied with that command, and conducted Mr. Wishart to the castle of Edinburgh, from whence he was soon after carried to the castle of St. Andrew's.

Governor  
refuses to  
attend his  
trial.

The Cardinal having got this capital enemy of the church into his hands, loaded him with irons, and resolved that he should not escape. He summoned an assembly of the bishops and principal

<sup>178</sup> Knox, p. 54, 55.

clergy

clergy to meet at St. Andrew's, February 17th, for his trial, and invited the governor to be present on that occasion. With this invitation the obsequious governor would have complied, if he had not been dissuaded by his friends, particularly David Hamilton of Preston, a wise and good man, who convinced him by many arguments of the folly of drawing upon himself the guilt and odium that would attend the condemnation and execution of a man so innocent and so much admired. He wrote therefore to the Cardinal, that he could not come to St. Andrew's at the time proposed, and desired him to delay Mr. Wishart's trial to a more convenient season. The haughty prelate stormed at this refusal, returned an insulting answer to the governor, and determined to proceed without delay.<sup>179</sup>

A convocation of the prelates and clergy assembled in great state in the cathedral, March 1st, for the trial of Mr. Wishart, who was brought to the place prepared for him by a guard of a hundred armed men. In this pretended trial, all the rules of law, justice, equity, and even decency, were most grossly violated; the prisoner was loaded with the opprobrious names of heretic, runagate, thief, traitor, &c. at the reading of each of the eighteen articles of the charge against him, which he bore with inimitable patience. When he attempted to answer these articles, he was silenced when he had only uttered a few sentences. But these sentences were directly to the point, and really unanswerable.

Execution  
of Mr.  
Wishart.

<sup>179</sup> Buchan. lib. xv. p. 292.

Cent. XVI.

He earnestly begged leave to explain the doctrines he had preached, and to shew their conformity to the word of God; but this was denied him. After some hours were spent in insulting rather than trying the prisoner, the predetermined sentence was pronounced, condemning him to be burnt as an obstinate heretic<sup>180</sup>. This cruel sentence was executed the next day on the green before the castle. Thus perished Mr. George Wishart, one of the most pious and learned of the first preachers of the doctrines of the reformers in Scotland. His death was a loss to his persecutors, as well as to his friends. If he had lived a few years longer, the Reformation, it is probable, would have been carried on with more regularity and less devastation. He had acquired an astonishing power over the minds of the people; and he always employed it in restraining them from acts of violence, inspiring them with love to one another, and with gentleness and humanity to their enemies.

Exultation  
of the  
clergy.

The exultation of the clergy at the execution of Mr. Wishart, was excessive, and they loaded the Cardinal with praises as the most glorious champion of the church. They now imagined that they would enjoy their power, their honours, and riches, in tranquillity, and that none would dare to open their mouths against the church or clergy. But in this they were mistaken. The death of Mr. Wishart made a very different impression on the minds of the people in general; it excited their compassion for the meek and patient sufferer, and their

<sup>180</sup> Knox, Buchan. lib. xv. p. 292.



indignation against the authors of his sufferings. The effects of these passions very soon appeared. Cent. XVI.

The Cardinal was not a little elated with this bold achievement, the praises he received, and the advantages he expected to derive from it. Soon after, he spent some time at Finhaven in Angus, the Earl of Crawford's seat, in settling the preliminaries of a marriage between that Earl's eldest son, and one of his natural daughters, named Margaret, with whom he gave a very great fortune; and in celebrating that marriage. When the festivities on that occasion were ended, he returned to his castle of St. Andrew's, where a great number of artificers of different kinds were employed in adding to its beauty, conveniency, and strength. Marriage.

The Cardinal had many enemies, some on a civil or political, and others on a religious account; and the late execution of Mr. Wishart had greatly increased their number and inflamed their anger. John Lesly, brother to the Earl of Rothes, had been long at variance with him; and Norman Lesly, that Earl's eldest son, had lately quarrelled with him for denying him an estate, to which he thought he had a claim. These two, by often conversing together, heated one another, till at length they resolved to put him to death. They admitted into their secret and society William Kirkcaldy of Grange, (who was incensed against the Cardinal for depriving his father of the treasurer's office,) Peter Carmichael, and James Melville, who were zealous promoters of the Reformation, and admirers of Mr. Wishart.

These

Cent. XVI.

These five, after several consultations, determined to destroy the object of their resentment in his own castle. In order to this, they agreed to meet at St. Andrew's, in the evening of May 28th, with a few of their followers, on whose secrecy and courage they could rely. They met accordingly; and having settled their plan of proceeding that evening, they assembled next morning early, in number only sixteen, in the church-yard of the cathedral, near the castle, and waited till the gates were opened, and the draw-bridge down. Kirkcaldy of Grange, with other six of his accomplices, then walked down to the gate, were admitted without suspicion, and entered into conversation with the porter, asking him, when they would have an opportunity of waiting on the Cardinal; and other questions. By and by Norman Lesly, with three or four others, came and joined the company. At last John Lesly, with the rest of the conspirators, approached. When the porter saw John Lesly, knowing him to be an enemy to his master, he began to suspect some ill design, and attempted to draw up the bridge: but those who were already admitted seized him, took all his keys from him, and threw him into the ditch. Being now masters of the castle, they placed four of their number near the Cardinal's chamber, to prevent his receiving any intelligence. They then turned out at the postern, about one hundred artificers and labourers, and about fifty of the household, retaining only the governor's eldest son as a hostage. All this was done without any resistance, and with

so little noise, that the Cardinal was not alarmed Cent. XVI.  
 till they knocked at the door of his chamber. Being asked who was there? they answered, a  
 Lesly. Knowing the voice of his enemy John  
 Lesly, he apprehended his danger, and, with  
 the assistance of his chamberlain, barricaded the  
 door, which was very strong. After some un-  
 successful attempts to break it open, they brought  
 a grate with live coals, and threatened to set it  
 on fire. The door was then opened, most pro-  
 bably by the chamberlain, and they rushed in  
 with their swords drawn. They found the Car-  
 dinal seated in an elbow chair, who cried, "I  
 am a priest, I am a priest; you will not kill  
 me!" After a short and angry expostulation  
 they dispatched him with many wounds. His last  
 words were, "Fy! fy! all is lost, all is lost!"<sup>181</sup>

Thus fell, in his fifty-second year, Cardinal  
 Beaton, the most opulent and powerful church-  
 man that ever was in Scotland. That he was a  
 man of great abilities his history proves, and his  
 enemies did not deny; but his virtues were not  
 equal to his abilities. The general tenor of his  
 life was very unsuitable to his profession and his  
 vows. He had many natural children whom he  
 publicly acknowledged, and on whom he bestowed  
 considerable fortunes. He was a most consum-  
 mate dissembler. It cost him nothing to make  
 the strongest professions of love to those he hated,  
 of esteem to those he despised, and of friendship  
 to those he designed to ruin. His political schemes  
 were deep and artful, but indirect and crooked,

<sup>181</sup> Buchan. lib. xv. Knox, p. 71—73.



Cent. XVI. carried into execution by deception and fraud, when he had not power to employ force. He was proud and ambitious, cruel and unrelenting, especially to those who were zealous for the reformation of the church, which he knew would endanger his own greatness, and the power and possessions of the clergy. His death made a mighty noise, and produced very important consequences.

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER III.

History of the Constitution, Government, and  
Laws of Great Britain, from A. D. 1485. to  
A. D. 1547.

AS the civil, military, and ecclesiastical history of Britain in this busy period, hath unavoidably swelled to an uncommon size, it is necessary to compress the materials of the following chapters of this book, by expressing every thing in as few words as possible.

The constitution of Great Britain, the envy and admiration of surrounding nations, hath been the work of ages; in the course of which it hath been exposed to various dangers, and undergone various changes, before it reached that

Changes  
in the con-  
stitution.

degree of excellence, precision, and stability, to which it hath now attained. Many of these changes have been related in the third chapters of the former books of this work; and such of the changes in the government and laws of England in the present period, as seem to merit a place in general history, will be related in the first section; and those in the government and laws of Scotland, in the second section of this chapter.

## SECTION I.

*History of the Constitution, Government, and Laws of England, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.*

Nobility.

THE people of England were arranged in the same ranks and orders in society in this as in the former period; but a very considerable change was now made in the numbers and circumstances of the people in some of those ranks, particularly the highest and lowest.

So many noblemen had been killed, executed, and attainted, in the cruel contest between the houses of York and Lancaster, that only twenty-eight temporal peers were summoned to the first parliament of Henry VII.<sup>182</sup>: a very small number in so great a kingdom. This diminution of the number of peers diminished their weight in the scale of government; and as that was one object of the policy of Henry VII. he raised very few to the peerage. Only thirty-six temporal peers were summoned to the first parliament of

<sup>182</sup> Dugdale's Summons to Parl.



Henry VIII.<sup>183</sup> Though that prince was more profuse of his money, he was no less frugal of his honours than his father, and no more than forty-seven peers were summoned to the first parliament of his son Edward VI.<sup>184</sup> Some other things contributed to diminish the power and influence of the peerage in this period: the facility of alienating their estates; the strict execution of the laws against retaining great numbers of idle people in their service, by giving them liveries; and by that splendid expensive mode of living introduced in the reign of Henry VIII. In a word, the baronage of England was no longer that too powerful preponderating body they had long been; equally formidable to their sovereigns and their fellow-subjects.

The numbers of the people in the lowest rank in society, that of slaves, were also greatly diminished in this period. Sir Thomas Smith, who flourished in those times, and was secretary of state to Edward VI., in his Treatise on the Republic of England, mentions two kinds of slaves, *viz.* villains in gross, the absolute property of their masters and their heirs; and villains regardant, who were annexed to a particular estate, and transferred with it from one proprietor to another. “Neither of the one sort nor of the other,” says he, “have we any number in England; and of the first I never knew any in the realm in my time: of the second so few there be, that it is not almost worth the speaking about. But law

<sup>183</sup> Dugdale's Summons to Parl. p. 486.<sup>184</sup> Ibid. p. 509.

“ doth acknowledge them in both these kinds<sup>185</sup>.” That is, no law had been made for abolishing these kinds of slavery. Other causes had produced that effect. Several causes of the gradual decline of slavery in England have been already mentioned<sup>186</sup>. Another cause now contributed to produce that effect. It came to be a prevailing opinion among people of all ranks, that slavery was inconsistent with the spirit of Christianity and the rights of humanity, offensive to God, and injurious to man. Wickliff and his followers inculcated this doctrine with great warmth, and their declamations had a great effect. Henry VIII. granted a manumission A. D. 1514., to two of his slaves and their families; for which he assigned this reason in the preamble: “ That God had at first created all men equally free by nature, but that many had been reduced to slavery by the laws of men. We believe it therefore to be a pious act, and meritorious in the sight of God, to set certain of our slaves at liberty from their bondage<sup>187</sup>.” As these sentiments prevailed, slavery declined, and was at length extinguished, without any positive law. An attempt was made to procure a law for the general manumission of the bondmen in England; and a bill for that purpose was brought into the house of lords A. D. 1526., read three times in one day and rejected. But what could not be effected at once by a law, was gradually accomplished by humanity.<sup>188</sup>

<sup>185</sup> Smith's Republic, p. 160.

<sup>187</sup> Rym. tom. xiii. p. 470.

<sup>186</sup> See vol. v. p. 359.

<sup>188</sup> Journals, vol. i. p. 99.

A new race of people, differing in their origin, complexion, language, and manners, from the other inhabitants, appeared in England about this time, and soon became so numerous, and committed so many crimes, that a law was made 22 Henry VIII. for their expulsion. These people were called Gypsies or Egyptians; because they said, and it was generally believed, that they came originally from Egypt. The characters and practices of these remarkable wanderers are thus described in the preamble to the act of parliament for their expulsion: “Forasmuch as  
 “before this time divers and many outlandish  
 “people, calling themselves Egyptians, using no  
 “craft nor feat of merchandise, have come into  
 “this realm, and gone from shire to shire, and  
 “place to place in great company, and used  
 “great, subtil, and crafty means to deceive the  
 “people; bearing them in hand, that by pal-  
 “mistry they could tell men’s and women’s for-  
 “tunes; and so many times by craft and subtilty  
 “have deceived the people of their money, and  
 “also have committed many heinous felonies and  
 “robberies, to the great hurt and deceit of the  
 “people that they have come among<sup>189</sup>.” For these reasons the parliament enacted, that no more Egyptians should be admitted into the realm; and that if any of them landed, they should be immediately seized and commanded to depart. It was further enacted, That a proclamation should be published, commanding all the Egyptians in England to banish themselves

<sup>189</sup> Stat. 22 Hen. VIII. cap. 10.



out of the kingdom in sixteen days, under the penalty of imprisonment and the confiscation of their goods. But neither this law, nor several subsequent laws still more severe, produced the desired effect. Many thousands of those pernicious inmates remained in England long after this time; and considerable numbers of their posterity are still remaining.

Parliament.

So full an account hath been given of the constitution, powers, privileges, forms of proceeding, and other circumstances, of the two houses of parliament, in the third chapter of the fifth book of this work, that it will not be necessary to say much on these subjects in this chapter<sup>190</sup>. The changes that took place in parliament in this period were not many, and few of them were of great importance.

House of lords.

For several centuries the spiritual peers had been more in number than the temporal peers in the house of lords. But a great revolution happened in that particular in this period. By the dissolution of the monasteries and other religious houses, more than one half of the spiritual peers were cut off from the house of lords at one blow. No fewer than twenty-six parliamentary abbots and two parliamentary priors lost their baronies and their seats in the house of lords at the same time. When the parliament met after this great revolution, April 13th, 1539., the house of peers made a very different appearance from what it had done on all former occasions, from the time that the parliament had been divided into two houses. Forty-

<sup>190</sup> See vol. v. p. 360—371.

one temporal, and only twenty spiritual peers were present in that session <sup>191</sup>. This revolution was very favourable to the cause, and had been promoted by the friends, of the Reformation: but it was fatal to the cause of popery, which thereby lost a great number of its strongest pillars, and soon fell to the ground.

The forms of conducting business in parliament were not very firmly fixed, in the times we are now considering; at least some forms were then used which have long since been discontinued, which were very different from those that are now established. At the opening of every parliament the King was present, seated on his throne, but made no speech to the two houses. The speech was made by the Lord Chancellor; and as the chancellors in those times were generally prelates, those speeches were a kind of sermons on a text of scripture, and abounded in the most fulsome flattery of His Majesty, whose glorious perfections the humble prelate acknowledged himself incapable of describing. The Chancellor then named several committees, consisting of lords and commons, for the quicker dispatch of business; viz. one committee for receiving petitions from England, Ireland, Wales, and Scotland; another for receiving petitions from Gascony, and the English territories on the continent: one committee for trying the petitions from England, Ireland, Wales, and Scotland; and another for trying the petitions from Gascony, and the continent. This was a very

Forms of  
proceed-  
ings in par-  
liament.

<sup>191</sup> Journals, vol. i. p. 129.



ancient form ; but in those times it was far from being a mere unmeaning form, as it is at present. The triers of petitions had a great deal of power, and did a great deal of business. In particular, they had the same dangerous power with the lords of the articles in the parliament of Scotland, to select such petitions as they thought worthy of the attention of parliament, to form them into bills to be laid before the houses, and to reject others. This gave the King and his ministers a great advantage ; as it put it into their power to prevent any thing that was disagreeable to them from being introduced into parliament, except incidentally by the members in their speeches <sup>192</sup>. The forms of reading and passing bills were in some respects different from what they are at present. Bills were prepared and brought into the house by the triers of petitions, written upon paper, and after a first and second reading, were commonly delivered to the King's attorney and solicitor, to be examined, corrected, and put into legal parliamentary form <sup>193</sup>. No certain number of times was fixed for reading bills before they were passed. In the Journals of the house of lords we find some bills were passed on the first reading, with the unanimous consent of all the members, and that others were twice read on one day, passed, and sent to the commons <sup>194</sup>. Many were passed on the third reading, but some were read four times, some five times, some six times, some seven times, and some even eight times <sup>195</sup>.

<sup>192</sup> Journals, passim.

<sup>194</sup> Ibid. p. 125.

<sup>193</sup> Ibid. p. 11. & passim.

<sup>195</sup> Ibid. p. 26. 49. 52. 55. 56.



It seems to have been the intention of parliament in those times to pass those bills immediately on the first or second reading on which all were agreed; and to read those bills on which different opinions were entertained, till all, or a great majority of the members, came to be of the same sentiments. This, however, is only a conjecture, and may be a mistake. Several other peculiarities in the modes of conducting business in parliament might be collected from the Journals of the house of lords, if it were necessary.

The sessions of parliament in this period were seldom longer than five or six weeks, sometimes much shorter; but in these short sessions, both houses applied to business with great assiduity. They had often two meetings in the day; one at eight or nine o'clock in the morning, after breakfast; the other at two o'clock in the afternoon, after dinner <sup>196</sup>. Great pains were taken to secure a full attendance of all the members at every meeting. None could be absent without leave from the King, and without naming one or two who were present as proxies, to act in his name. Such as were absent without leave, and without proxies, were liable to a heavy fine. The names of all the members present at every meeting are carefully marked in the Journals, and from thence we find that there was constantly a very full attendance. <sup>197</sup>

Some of the parliaments of this period were of longer duration, and had a greater number of sessions, than those of former times. The parliament

Long parliaments.

<sup>196</sup> Journals, vol. i. p. 39, &c.

<sup>197</sup> Ibid. passim.

that

that met at Westminster 21 Henry VIII. November 3d, A. D. 1529., had seven sessions, each of them uncommonly long and full of business, and was not dissolved till April 4th, A. D. 1535., after having continued six years and four months.<sup>198</sup>

Unanimity  
in parlia-  
ment.

Though many of the laws that were made by the parliament of England in the reign of Henry VIII.; as the laws for abolishing the power of the Pope; for investing the King, a layman, with the supremacy of the church; and for the dissolution of religious houses, could not but be very disagreeable to many of the members, and particularly to the spiritual peers in the house of lords; it is astonishing how little opposition they encountered, and with what facility and rapidity they passed through both houses. The bill empowering the King, as supreme head of the church, to constitute bishops by his own authority, was brought into the house of lords, read three times, passed, sent to the commons, read three times by them, passed, and returned to the lords all in the same day<sup>199</sup>. At the end of the third and last session of that parliament, which finished the dissolution of the monastic orders, granted their houses, lands, and goods to the King, and made many other severe laws against the Pope and church of Rome, it is recorded in the Journals, "That the lords gave their suffrages and delivered their sentiments concerning all these acts; and such was their unanimity, that there was no difference of opinion about any one of them"<sup>200</sup>. So great an ascendant had this

<sup>198</sup> Stat. 21 Hen. VIII.

<sup>200</sup> Ibid. p. 163.

<sup>199</sup> Journals, p. 112.

awful prince gained over the minds of his greatest subjects. We meet with no protests or dissents in the Journals of the house of lords in this reign. That was a measure too dangerous to be attempted. So great was the authority, and so dreadful the displeasure of this prince, that the boldest of his subjects trembled at the thoughts of opposition.

The forms of electing the members of the house of commons, and the laws for preventing undue elections and false returns, were the same in this as in the former period. Great pains were taken to secure the constant attendance of all the members from the beginning to the end of every session. At the beginning of a parliament a list of the members returned was made out and called over at the first meeting, and all who were not present to answer to their names were fined. A very distinct account is preserved in the Journals of the house of lords, of the opening of the parliament that met at Westminster on Monday January 16th, A. D. 1542. On that day the Duke of Suffolk, attended by many other lords in their robes, came into the parliament chamber, and commanded the clerk of the parliament to call the names of all the knights, citizens, and burgesses, who were standing without the bar, and every one answered to his name. The Duke and the other lords then took their seats, waiting for the entry of the King, the commons still standing without the bar<sup>201</sup>. No less care was taken to secure the attendance of all the members to the end, than their appearance at the beginning, of every

<sup>201</sup> Journals, p. 164.



session. By an act of parliament, A. D. 1541., it was declared, that if any member left the house without the leave of the speaker before the end of the session, he should have no claim for wages from his constituents.<sup>202</sup>

Though both houses of the parliament of England in this period on many occasions acted a very mean part, and shamefully sacrificed their own undoubted rights and liberties, and those of the people, by complying with the imperious mandates and impetuous passions of their sovereigns and their ministers, there is sufficient evidence that the commons now began to acquire a greater degree of weight in the scale of government, than they had formerly possessed or exercised. Of this it would be easy to produce many proofs, but a few will be sufficient.

We have already seen, that in former periods the commons did not take the lead in granting supplies to the crown, but contented themselves with granting their own supplies and those of their constituents, while the peers in the house of lords, and the clergy in convocation, granted each their own aids, sometimes of a different kind from those granted by the commons<sup>203</sup>. It plainly appears, however, that greater attention was now paid to the commons in this important business, and that their assent was necessary to every grant, though some of the money-bills still originated in the house of lords. Of this it will be proper to give one example out of several that might be given. A bill

<sup>202</sup> Statutes.<sup>203</sup> Vol. iv. p. 391.

was brought into the house of lords February 22d, A. D. 1515. for granting the King tonnage and poundage during his life, was read a first time, and delivered to the King's attorney to be written out fair. It was read a second time on Friday the 23d, a third time on Monday the 26th, a fourth time on Tuesday the 27th, and passed. It was sent with eight other bills to the house of commons March 10th, where it was passed and returned to the lords March 28th<sup>204</sup>. On some occasions, when the King, by his ministers, had applied first to the lords for a supply, and they had agreed to grant it; instead of bringing in a bill for that purpose, they appointed a committee of the principal lords in their house to wait upon the commons, to communicate to them the requisition and the consent of the lords, and to request them to take that business into their consideration, and then retire<sup>205</sup>. This was a degree of attention and respect that had not been paid to the commons in any former period. The steadiness with which the commons sometimes declined complying with the King's demands, enforced by the consent of the lords, and the most earnest solicitations of the great Cardinal Wolsey in the zenith of his power, is another proof of the rising spirit of the house of commons<sup>206</sup>. Both the King and the Cardinal were so much disgusted with the opposition they met with in the house of commons to their exorbitant demands, that they formed the resolution of ruling without par-

<sup>204</sup> Journals, p. 25, 26. 31. 38.

<sup>205</sup> Parl. Hist. vol. iii. p. 86.

<sup>206</sup> Ibid. p. 38.

liaments ;

liaments; to which they adhered almost seven years, and from which they did not depart till they had exhausted all the illegal arts of extorting money. Some of these arts were such, that if they had been successful they would have put an end to parliaments, and to all the rights and liberties of the people of England. Commissions were sent into every county in England, A. D. 1525., empowering and commanding the commissioners to levy from the laity the sixth, and from the clergy the fourth part of their goods. But these commissions excited such an universal alarm, and threatened so great a storm, that the King thought proper to disavow and recal them by proclamation.<sup>207</sup>

In former periods, it hath been observed that when the privileges of the commons were invaded, they applied to the King or to the house of lords for redress<sup>208</sup>: but in this period they took the protection of their privileges, and the punishment of those who invaded them, into their own hands; which is another proof of their increasing power and consequence. A remarkable example of this occurred in the parliament that met at Westminster 16th January, A. D. 1543.: George Ferrers, member for Plymouth, was arrested for debt, and imprisoned in the Counter, Bread-street; of which the speaker having acquainted the house, they sent their serjeant to demand the prisoner. But the clerks of the Counter were so far from complying with this demand, that they gave him very ill language, broke his mace, and knocked down his

<sup>207</sup> Herbert, p. 66.

<sup>208</sup> See vol. v. p. 366.



servant. In the midst of this scuffle the two sheriffs of London arrived, to whom the serjeant applied; but they treated him with great contempt, and refused to deliver the prisoner. On his return to Westminster, his relation of the treatment he had received threw the house into a violent ferment. They declared unanimously, that they would do no business till they had recovered their member; went in a body to the house of lords, (according to an established custom of the two houses, communicating to each other any extraordinary emergency,) and by their speaker represented the indignity that had been offered them. The lords, after a short deliberation, replied by the chancellor, that the indignity was very great, but referred the redress of it, and the punishment of the offenders, entirely to the commons. The chancellor, at the same time, offered them his warrant for the liberation of their member, which they refused. The commons, on their return to their own house, sent their serjeant with his mace again, to demand their member. It being now known to the sheriffs how much their late treatment of the serjeant had been resented, they received him with the greatest respect, and immediately set the prisoner at liberty. But the serjeant, agreeably to the orders he had received, summoned the two sheriffs to appear at the bar of the house of commons next morning at eight o'clock, and to bring with them all who had been concerned in the late riot, and one Mr. White, at whose suit the member had been arrested. They appeared accordingly, and after a severe reprimand from the speaker, the two sheriffs,

sheriffs, with White the prosecutor, were committed to the Tower, and three of their officers to Newgate; but on a petition from the lord mayor of London, they were liberated in a few days<sup>209</sup>. This spirited conduct of the commons was applauded by the King.

Servility  
of parlia-  
ment.

But though it is certain that the house of commons acquired additional power and influence in the course of this period, it is no less certain, that both the houses of the parliament of England, on many occasions, discovered a spirit of servile submission to the imperious mandates and impetuous passions of their sovereigns, particularly of Henry VIII.; very dishonourable to themselves, and very pernicious to their country. Nothing but a servile unmanly dread of the frowns of royalty (which were indeed very terrible) could have induced them to give their assent to the many unconstitutional, unjust, absurd, contradictory, oppressive, and cruel laws that were enacted in the reign of that stern imperious tyrant. That many laws were made in that reign which merited the above epithets is undeniable. Could any thing be more subversive of the constitution than the law which gave royal proclamations the same authority with acts of parliament<sup>210</sup>? What could be more contrary to the plainest principles of justice and common honesty, than the law which absolved the King from the obligation of paying his debts, for which he had given security under his privy seal, and even obliged

<sup>209</sup> Hollingshead, p. 955. *Miscellanea Parliamentaria*, p. i—10.

<sup>210</sup> Stat. 31 Hen. VIII.

those who had received payment to refund the money they had received<sup>211</sup>? How absurd and indelicate was that law which enacted, “That if  
 “the King or his successors should intend to  
 “marry any woman whom they took to be a pure  
 “and clean maid, if she, not being so, did not  
 “declare the same to the King, it should be high  
 “treason, and all who knew it and did not reveal  
 “it were guilty of misprision of treason<sup>212</sup>!” By  
 act of parliament 28 Henry VIII., it was declared  
 to be high treason to assert the validity of the  
 King’s marriage with his first Queen Catherine  
 of Spain, or his second Queen Anne Boleyn;  
 and whoever refused to answer upon oath to  
 every thing contained in that act was declared to  
 be a traitor<sup>213</sup>. By another act, about seven years  
 after, (which did not repeal but confirm the  
 former act,) it was made treason to say any thing  
 to the disparagement or slander of the Princess  
 Mary or Elizabeth<sup>214</sup>. How captious, contradic-  
 tory, and cruel were these laws! If they had  
 both been put in execution, any man in England  
 might have been convicted of treason by the one  
 or by the other. If he refused to answer upon  
 oath, he was a traitor: If he asserted the validity  
 of the King’s marriages, or of one of them, he  
 was a traitor by the first act: if he denied it, he  
 disparaged the Princesses, or one of them, and  
 was a traitor by the second. The truth seems to  
 have been, that the servile parliaments of those

<sup>211</sup> Burnet, b. xi. Records. No. xxxi. Rolls of Parl. A. D. 1529.

<sup>212</sup> Burnet, vol. i. p. 313.

<sup>213</sup> 28 Hen. VIII. c. 7.

<sup>214</sup> 35 Hen. VIII. c. 1.



times were in such haste to gratify the present predominant passion of their imperious master, that they did not reflect on the absurdity, cruelty, and inconsistency of the acts they passed, or on the fatal consequences which they might produce. Of this many other proofs, if it were necessary, might be adduced.

Great  
power of  
the crown.

When the opulence and power of the great barons (which had long formed a balance to the power of their sovereigns) were gradually declining, by the alienation of their lands and the loss of their retainers, and when the spirit of parliaments was sinking into servility, the power and prerogatives of the crown were gradually increasing in the same proportion, and at length threatened the destruction of the constitution, and the establishment of an absolute monarchy. The accession of Henry VII., however defective his right might be, was a very happy event. It put an end to a most destructive civil war, the horrors of which had made so deep an impression on the minds of the people, that they seem to have been determined to suffer and submit to any thing, rather than rekindle those flames which had threatened them with destruction. That artful prince availed himself of this disposition of the people, and obtained such a settlement of the crown as he wished, and every thing he desired from parliament. His implacable hatred of the house of York and its partizans; his avarice, extortions, vexatious prosecutions on antiquated penal statutes, and the general severity of his government, created him many enemies, encouraged

raged pretenders to his throne, and procured them followers. But the great body of the nobility, gentry, and people, though secretly discontented, remained quiet; having the dreadful disasters of the late times fresh in their memories. The insurrections were soon suppressed, and served only to render the King more secure and arbitrary.

Henry VIII. at his accession was in the bloom of youth, engaged in the most ardent pursuit of pleasures and amusements of the most splendid and expensive kind, by which he soon dissipated the immense treasure accumulated by his parsimonious father; and thereby parted with one instrument of increasing his power, about which at that time he had no anxiety. He committed the management of affairs to his ministers, who sacrificed Empson and Dudley, the two hated instruments of his father's extortions, to the resentment of the people, which rendered the young monarch exceedingly popular. He still continued to pursue his ostentatious expensive pleasures with unremitting ardour, in which he was encouraged by his favourite Wolsey, who formed, and by his great abilities had nearly accomplished, the base design of rendering the King absolute, and the crown independent of the people, by imposing taxes without the consent of parliament. Loans had been often solicited and obtained, though the repayment of them was known to be very uncertain. Free gifts, called benevolences, had been frequently demanded, and by many granted, though with much reluctance. Both these methods of raising money were con-

Attempts  
to ruin the  
constitu-  
tion.



trary to the spirit of the constitution, and the last of them was contrary to an act of parliament; but as they did not avowedly extort money from the subjects without their own consent, they were by many complied with, and by all endured. But when Cardinal Wolsey proceeded to strike the last decisive blow for overturning the constitution, by sending commissioners into every county in England, A. D. 1526., to levy the sixth part of the goods of the laity, and the fourth part of the goods of the clergy, by the royal authority alone, the spirit of the nation was roused, and so great a ferment raised, that Henry found it necessary to disavow his minister and recal his commissioners. <sup>216</sup>

Great  
power of  
Henry  
VIII.

But though Henry was foiled in this attempt, he was not cured of his avarice and ambition. He still wished to have the money of his subjects at his command, and the power of ruling them as he pleased. To accomplish this in the latter half of his reign, he pursued a more indirect, but more insidious and more dangerous method, by managing parliaments, and making them subservient to his designs against the rights and liberties of his subjects. In this he was too successful. The long parliament, and all the subsequent parliaments in his reign, were so managed, that they denied him nothing. The methods of managing parliaments were no secrets even in those times; and there was one circumstance that greatly facilitated their operation. After the disputes with Rome commenced, the nation was divided into two great

<sup>216</sup> Herbert, A. D. 1526.

parties;



parties; the partisans of the Pope, and the friends of the Reformation; and these parties, knowing the King's temper, engaged in a formal contest which should flatter him most, and comply with all his requisitions with the greatest alacrity, to gain him to their side. This seems to be the reason that bills passed both houses with little or no opposition, that were exceedingly disagreeable to many, if not to a majority of the members. They dared not oppose with any vigour, for fear of irritating the furious monarch, and throwing him into the arms of the opposite party. It was not so much policy as his natural temper that made him, between these two parties, sometimes promote, and sometimes retard the Reformation. He was a papist, though he had quarrelled with the Pope. He hanged and beheaded those who acknowledged the papal authority, and burned those who denied the popish doctrines; and his obsequious parliaments gave their sanction to both. It was a parliament in which there were many, probably a majority, of zealous papists, that abolished the Pope's authority in England; invested the King with the title of supreme head of the church in his dominions; dissolved the religious houses, and granted all their goods to the crown<sup>217</sup>. It was a parliament in which we know there were many members in both houses who had cordially embraced the principles of the Reformation, that made the cruel act of the Six Articles, which condemned to the flames all who had the courage to

<sup>217</sup> 23 Hen. VIII. Burnet, vol. i. p. 144. Parl. Hist. vol. iii. p. 144.

avow and defend these principles; nor do we hear of any considerable opposition that was made to that act, except by Archbishop Cranmer, and his opposition was considered as an extraordinary thing, and an act of the greatest heroism. Parliaments gave the force of laws to royal proclamations, and to succeeding princes the power of repealing all laws made before they were twenty-four years of age <sup>218</sup>. Parliaments gave the King authority to regulate the religious opinions his subjects were to entertain, and the religious ceremonies they were to perform, and to change them as he pleased by proclamation from time to time. They gave him even the extraordinary power of settling the succession to the crown, by his letters patent or his last will <sup>219</sup>. In a word, these parliaments complied with all Henry's caprices, followed him in all his turnings and windings, and enacted whatever he dictated with little hesitation. In these circumstances the constitution was on the brink of ruin, and England was in those times very nearly an absolute, with the outward forms of a limited monarchy.

Perversion  
of law.

We hear of no very remarkable change in the constitution of the courts at Westminster, or in the ordinary administration of the laws in this period, except when the sovereigns interfered. Then indeed the laws were basely perverted, and the most shocking acts of oppression perpetrated, under the pretence of executing the laws and punishing offences. In the reign of Henry VII. these oppressions

<sup>218</sup> Parl. Hist. vol. iii. p. 132.

<sup>219</sup> Ibid. p. 196.



extended only to the imprisonment of many of the subjects on the most frivolous pretences, and detaining them in prison till they paid great compositions to obtain their liberty; to imposing exorbitant amerciamment for small delinquencies; exacting enormous reliefs from the royal wards; demanding excessive sums for pardons, and a most rigorous execution of antiquated statutes<sup>220</sup>. By these and various other methods the laws were made the instruments of oppression, the subjects harassed and plundered, and the King's coffers filled. In the reign of Henry VIII. (who was more jealous and vindictive than covetous) this perversion of law, and the forms of justice, took a more fatal turn, and deprived many persons of high rank, not only of their liberties, honours, and estates, but also of their lives, on very defective evidence, and sometimes without any trial. On what slender evidence were the amiable Queen Anne Boleyn, and her accomplished brother Lord Rochford, found guilty of high treason, condemned, and executed? On what trivial pretences did the convocation pronounce a sentence of divorce between Henry and his Queen Anne of Cleves, which was confirmed by parliament? How many noble persons were found guilty of high treason, without any trial, by acts of attainder in parliament, though they were in custody and earnestly intreated to be tried before they were condemned? Was not this a gross violation of the first and plainest principles of law and justice? Who after this will hesitate to pronounce Henry VIII. a

<sup>220</sup> Bacon. 629, 630. Hollingsh. 504. Polyd. Virg. p. 613—615.



tyrant and his parliaments the servile executioners of his imperious and cruel mandates?

Government sanguinary.

The courts of some of the popish bishops of this period were scenes of great cruelty, in which many good and virtuous persons of both sexes, and of all ages, were condemned to the flames, for reading the New Testament in English, or having it in their possession, or for any thing that indicated that they entertained opinions in religion different from the tenets of the church of Rome. But so much hath been said on this unpleasant subject in the second chapter of this book, that I shall here decline mentioning any particulars. Such readers as wish to be acquainted with those scenes of cruelty and horror, may consult the voluminous work quoted below<sup>221</sup>. It is proper to conclude this subject with observing that the executive government, both in church and state, in the reign of Henry VIII. was exceedingly sanguinary. A prodigious number of people, no fewer it is said than seventy-two thousand, were put to death as criminals in that reign. This account appears to be exaggerated, but the number was certainly very great.<sup>222</sup>

Revenues.

The ordinary stated revenues of the crown of England flowed from the same sources in this as in the three former periods, which need not be again described<sup>223</sup>. Its extraordinary and less certain revenues were derived from parliamentary grants of tenths and fifteenths, from loans, benevolences, forfeitures, amerciaments, fines, &c.

<sup>221</sup> Fox's Martyrology.

<sup>222</sup> Hollingsh. p. 186.

<sup>223</sup> See vol. vi. ch. 3. § 1. vol. x. p. 76—80.

That

That these revenues with good management, were sufficient to support the dignity of the crown, and defray all the expences of government, and even to yield a surplus, is evident from the great mass of money that was found in the coffers of Henry VII. at his death, amounting to 1,800,000*l.*, equal, in the quantity and weight of the precious metals, to 2,700,000*l.*; and in real value and efficacy to 8,000,000*l.* of our money at present. All that treasure, the ordinary and extraordinary revenues of the crown, the tenths and first fruits from the clergy, (which had been formerly paid to the Pope,) together with the inestimable spoils of all the religious houses in England, whose value almost exceeded the bounds of calculation, came into the possession of Henry VIII. For the management of this great influx of revenue several new courts were erected; as the court of augmentations, the court of surveyors of the King's lands, the court of first-fruits and tenths<sup>224</sup>: and if they had been well managed they might have made the crown independent of the country, and enabled the King to have reigned for a long time without a parliament. But, fortunately for the people of England, Henry dissipated all those treasures, died poor, and transmitted the crown to his son and successor, as dependent on the people for their supplies in parliament, as at any former period. The wanton, wasteful profusion of princes is always hurtful to themselves, but may accidentally, and in some circumstances, prove beneficial to their subjects, by preventing

<sup>224</sup> Stat. 27 Hen. VIII. c. 27—33. c. 39—42. c. 46.

greater evils. If Henry had been more frugal, he would have been more dangerous.

## SECTION II.

*History of the Constitution, Government, and Laws of Scotland, from A. D. 1488. to A. D. 1542.*

**T**HOUGH Scotland, during a great part of the period we are now considering, was a scene of great confusion, owing to the minorities of the kings, the factions of the nobles, and the wars with England, the cares of government and the execution of the laws were not neglected. On the contrary, greater attention was paid to those important objects, than could have been expected in such unhappy times. Many parliaments were held, in which a variety of wise regulations were made, for bringing criminals to justice, for preventing riots, tumults, and oppressions, and for promoting the peace and prosperity of the country.<sup>225</sup>

No remarkable change was made at this time in the ranks and orders of men in society. The great barons, by the extent of their estates and the number of their followers, still maintained that superior influence which they had long enjoyed, which they often employed for the protection and sometimes for the disturbance of their country, by their feuds and factions. The clergy had great possessions and great power; they were in general good landlords, and did not oppress their tenants, by whom they were beloved. A

<sup>225</sup> See Black Acts, James IV. and V.



few of them had some learning and skill in business, which raised them to the highest offices in the state; which, with their riches, their luxury, and their pride, excited the envy and hatred of the nobility. Their cruelty to the preachers and professors of the doctrines of the Reformation shocked the humanity of the people, who could not help pitying the sufferers and abhorring their persecutors. Their enemies daily increased, and their friends diminished; and towards the end of this period the mine was dug, which was soon after sprung, and involved them in sudden and irreparable ruin. Merchants, artificers, and husbandmen, when they were injured and oppressed by their too powerful neighbours, sought, and generally found redress and protection from the King's court, or from parliament, and it was against law to seek it from any other quarter. Several chieftains in Gallaway and Carrick had been accustomed to demand a certain annual payment, called *caupis*, from their poor neighbours for their protection. A complaint of this was brought before parliament, A. D. 1490., and an act was made prohibiting that demand<sup>226</sup>. The tenants on the King's lands were by far the happiest, as they were exempted from many services to which others were subjected. The lords and gentlemen in their neighbourhood observing this, were in use to demand, in an authoritative way, certain services from them; as carriages, shearing, ploughing, &c. Complaint of this was made to the same parliament, and it was immediately

<sup>226</sup> Black Acts, 2 James IV. c. 35, 36.

enacted,

enacted, “ That no lord, baron, or gentleman, “ should compel any of the King’s tenants to do “ them any service by coercion or dread, under “ the pain of being punished as oppressors of the “ King’s lieges<sup>227</sup>.” Whoever will peruse the statutes of this period, must perceive that many of them breathe a spirit of tenderness and humanity towards the common people, that do great honour to the legislators, and prove that they were not such fierce unfeeling barbarians as they have been sometimes represented. Upon the whole, there is sufficient evidence that the people of Scotland in those times, even in the lowest stations, were not so forlorn and unprotected by government, nor government so weak and unable to protect them, as hath been commonly imagined. James V. in particular, was a most strenuous protector of the poor from the oppressions of the rich and powerful, which procured him the honourable appellation of *the poor man’s king*.

Authority  
of the laws.

The authority of the laws was not only extended in this period over all ranks of people, but to the most remote extremities of the kingdom, and to the northern and western islands, where laws had formerly been little known or regarded. In the preamble to an act of parliament, A.D. 1503., it is observed, “ That there had been great abuse “ [abuse] of justice in the north parts and west “ parts of the realm; as the North Isles and South “ Isles, for lack [want] of Justice-aires, justices, “ and sheriffs, by which the people are almost be-

<sup>227</sup> Black Acts, 2 James IV. c. 38.

“ come



“ come wild<sup>228</sup>. ” To remedy this great evil, the parliament established justices and sheriffs in Orkney, Caithness, Ross, and the Western Isles, where there had been none before; and appointed justice-aires, or courts of justice, to be held at certain times and places in those remote countries<sup>229</sup>. These new magistrates, it is probable, found no little difficulty in the execution of their offices, among a people unaccustomed to the restraints of law, and haughty chieftains who had formerly been the only judges. To give countenance to his officers, and procure reverence for the laws, James V., a prince of great activity, and zealous in the administration of justice, resolved to visit in person those less civilized parts of his dominions. He sailed from Leith, A.D. 1535., with five stout ships, well-manned, attended by several of his chief nobility. It was given out that he was bound for France. But as soon as he was out of the Firth he changed his course, and sailed along the east, north, and west coasts and islands, to Whithorn in Gallaway. In this voyage he frequently landed, inquired into the state of the country, surprised and seized several of the most turbulent chieftains, and sent them to different prisons, where they were detained till they found security for their future good behaviour. By this expedition the King not only gained a more perfect knowledge of the country and its inhabitants, but struck such terror into the heads of the several clans, that they learned to respect

<sup>228</sup> 5 James IV. c. 93.<sup>229</sup> Ibid. c. 94, 95.



the laws, and remained quiet, it is said, for many years.<sup>230</sup>

Gypsies.

The number of those remarkable wanderers called Egyptians, or Gypsies, in Scotland at this time was very considerable, and formed a kind of commonwealth, under a chief of their own nation, called John Faw, Lord and Earl of Little Egypt. The authority of this Egyptian chieftain over his subjects was supported by government; and James V. published a proclamation, commanding all sheriffs and magistrates to lend him the use of their prisons and stocks whenever he demanded them. That prince also made an agreement or covenant in form with this Egyptian chief; who engaged on his part to carry all his subjects out of Scotland, and conduct them home to their own country of Little Egypt; and the King engaged to furnish him with ships for that purpose. But the Earl was not able to fulfil his engagement. Many of his subjects rebelled against him, under the conduct of one of them, named Sebastian Lalow, and refused to return home. This rebellion continued several years, as appears from another proclamation issued A. D. 1553., by James Duke of Chatelrault, Earl of Arran, &c. Governor of Scotland; commanding all sheriffs, magistrates, and other officers, to assist John Faw, Earl of Little Egypt, in apprehending his rebellious subjects, (many of whom are named in the proclamation,) and compelling them to obey and follow him into their own country<sup>231</sup>. Whether

<sup>230</sup> Drummond, p. 309.

<sup>231</sup> See Appendix.

this

this famous Gypsey, John Faw, was an impostor, or had really been the sovereign of a small territory in Egypt, as he pretended, I shall not determine; but his scheme of carrying all the Gypsies out of Scotland certainly miscarried.

We meet with no mention of slaves either in the histories or laws of Scotland in this period; which makes it probable that there were not many, if there were any, of that wretched degraded order of men in that kingdom at this time. Several severe laws had been made in the preceding period for the punishment and suppression of those troublesome people called forners and masterful beggars; and it was found necessary to renew and enforce the laws in the reign of James V. A. D. 1535.<sup>232</sup> A very wise regulation was made at the same time for supplying the wants of those who were really poor and unfit for labour. Every parish was to support its own poor, who were to wear badges given them by the headsmen of the parish.<sup>233</sup> Slaves, &c.

Such seems to have been the condition of the people in their several ranks, from the highest to the lowest, in the present period. A condition certainly not to be envied by us who live in happier times; but not so piteous and unhappy as it hath been sometimes represented. The high were not too high to be corrected, nor the low too low to be protected, by the laws.

Both James IV. and his son James V. ruled much by parliaments, which they frequently called. James IV. called eight parliaments in twenty-one years, and these assemblies were no less frequent in Parliaments.

<sup>232</sup> Black Acts 1535. c. 24.

<sup>233</sup> Ibid.



the succeeding reign. In this these princes acted wisely. Their parliaments did them many good offices; and if we may judge by their acts they neither did, nor intended to do them any injuries by encroaching on their prerogatives or their revenues. The parliaments of Scotland, it is true, interfered in some things that are not commonly believed to belong to parliaments; such as the marriages of their kings, the appointing ambassadors to foreign courts, and naming commissioners for negotiating truces and treaties of peace. But they did this only during the minorities, or at the desire of their kings; and they provided for defraying all the expences incurred on these occasions. So full a description hath been already given of the constitution, forms of proceeding, and other circumstances of the parliaments of Scotland in the third chapter of the fifth book of this work, that it is sufficient to refer the reader to that description; as it will suit the parliaments in the present, as well as it suited those in the preceding period<sup>234</sup>. The scheme of James I. to divide the parliament into two houses having unhappily miscarried, it was never revived; but the number of freeholders soon became too great to meet in one place, and many of them too poor to afford the expence of attendance. By a law of James II. all freeholders who have not above twenty pounds a year were freed from the obligation of attending parliament<sup>235</sup>. In the reign of James IV. that sum was thought too small, and a law was made to excuse all freeholders who had not above

<sup>234</sup> See book v. c. 3. sect. 2.

<sup>235</sup> James II. act 85.



an hundred marks a-year of rent from their personal attendance in parliament, but permitting, or rather requiring, them to send a proxy, by some lord or baron of their neighbourhood <sup>236</sup>. Hardly any accounts of the debates in the ancient parliaments of Scotland are preserved, and it is probable they were neither very many nor very long, as our ancestors in those times delighted and excelled more in acting than haranguing. It appears, however, from some hints, that there were debates, and these sometimes very warm. From the records of the parliament A.D. 1524., we plainly perceive that there were very hot debates, on chusing the committee *ad articulos*, (on the articles,) between the party of the Queen-dowager and the party of her husband the Earl of Angus, and that several protests were taken on both sides. But the minutes are so short, that it would not be easy to explain the grounds of these debates <sup>237</sup>. We know also that there were very violent debates on the appointment of the Duke of Albany to the regency in the minority of James V.; and still more violent debates on the appointment of the Earl of Arran to the regency after the death of that king. But few particulars of these debates are preserved.

The right of making and repealing laws, and imposing taxes, resided solely in the King and parliament; and we never hear of any of the kings of Scotland in the times we are now considering, who attempted to make, repeal, or dispense with laws, to impose taxes, or even to demand loans and be-

Making  
laws, &c.

<sup>236</sup> James IV. act 113.

<sup>237</sup> Records of Parl. A.D. 1524.

nevolences from their subjects by their own authority. The laws were called the King's laws; not because the King had made them, but because the execution of them was by the constitution committed to the King. The parliaments of Scotland sometimes set bounds to the undoubted prerogatives of the crown, when they apprehended they were in danger of being improperly exercised. An act was made in the parliament A.D. 1503., that the King should not pardon any who had been found guilty of wilful premeditated murder. But this was done (as appears by the act itself) at the earnest desire of the King, to free him from importunate solicitations, and was to continue in force only till it was recalled by the King<sup>238</sup>. No little pains was taken to promulgate the laws, and make them known to all the subjects. All sheriffs, provosts, and baillies, were commanded to take copies of the acts of every parliament, and to cause them to be proclaimed in all cities, burghs, and towns within their bounds<sup>239</sup>. The justice-clerk was directed to extract all the penal laws, and give copies of them to all the judges and sheriffs<sup>240</sup>. The acts of James V. were the first that were printed, by Thomas Davidson the King's printer, A.D. 1541., "That all sheriffs, stewarts, bailies, provosts and baillies of burrows, and other the King's lieges, might have copies thereof."<sup>241</sup>

Execution  
of the  
laws.

The best and wisest laws are of little use, if they are not properly executed by intelligent

<sup>238</sup> James IV. act 97.

<sup>239</sup> Ibid. act 60.

<sup>240</sup> Ibid. act 77.

<sup>241</sup> James V. act 108.



and upright judges. To this important business the government of Scotland paid no little attention in the present period. As all sheriffs of shires, stewards of stewartries, baillies of regalities and baronies, and provosts and baillies in burrows, were commanded to furnish themselves with copies of the laws; so they had a share in the execution of these laws, both civil and criminal, within their respective jurisdictions. Their courts, however, were not supreme, nor their sentences always final, but in many cases subject to be reviewed and reversed by the King's courts and the King's judges. The King and those to whom he delegated that part of his prerogative were the supreme and final judges, from whose sentences there lay no appeal.

The penal laws, or matters of dittay, as they were called, were executed by the high justiciary, or justice-general, whose jurisdiction (except in regalities) was universal. That great officer, his deputies and assessors, held justice-aire, or justice-courts, twice in the year in different parts of the kingdom, for the trial of all within a certain district who were accused of having committed crimes that deserved punishment. These courts were held with great solemnity, attended by all the lords, barons, and gentlemen in the district, and a great concourse of people. The King was sometimes present at these justice-aire, which rendered them more solemn and more effectual. At one of these courts, in May, A.D. 1529., at which the King was present, William Cockburn of Hunderland, and Adam Scot of Tushilaw, two turbulent predatory barons, were condemned and beheaded; the Earl

Justice-  
aires.



of Bothwell, the Lords Hume and Maxwell, the Lairds of Buccleugh, Fairnihiirst, Polwort, and Johnstone, were imprisoned<sup>242</sup>. James V. is highly and justly praised for the activity and spirit with which he pursued those who fled from, or resisted the officers of justice. In doing this, it is said, he sometimes spent whole days on horseback, enduring much fatigue, and exposing himself to no little danger. In one of these expeditions he apprehended and hanged no fewer than forty of the banditti on the borders, who had often endangered the peace of the two kingdoms, by their incursions into England, as well as plundered their fellow-subjects. Among others, their leader, John Armstrong of Giltknockhall, who had laid the north of England for many miles under contribution, was seized and hanged, though he offered a great sum of money for his life. These examples struck such terror into the other lawless people of those parts, that they either fled or remained quiet, and the country for some time enjoyed so much safety, that it became a common saying, *the rush-bush keeps the cow*.

There were now, and there had long been, several courts in Scotland for executing the civil laws respecting property, and determining disputes between subject and subject; as the sheriff's court, the regality and barony courts, and the baillie's court in burrows. But the jurisdiction of all these courts was confined within narrow limits; none of them was of sufficient dignity, nor the judges who presided in them sufficiently learned and respect-

<sup>242</sup> Buchan. lib. xiv.

able to be trusted with the decision of disputes of great importance between persons of high rank, or even with the final determination of matters of less moment. At all times, therefore, a court of supreme authority and universal jurisdiction was necessary. Such was anciently the *aula regis*, or king's court, not only in Scotland, but in all the other kingdoms of Europe. This was the great regality court of the whole kingdom, in which the King presided, the great officers of the crown were the judges, and all who held their lands immediately of the crown were suitors. This court sat in the hall of the King's palace; its authority was supreme; its jurisdiction was universal; and it received appeals from all inferior courts<sup>243</sup>. The greatness of this court, the multiplicity of its functions, with the incapacity and aversion of its members to perform them, occasioned its decline and fall before the commencement of our present period.

To supply the place of this great court, several Courts. other courts were established, in succession, by the King and parliament. The first of these, called the Session, was erected in the reign of James I., A.D. 1425., and hath been already described<sup>244</sup>. But this court was soon found to be defective; and several attempts were made to amend it in the two succeeding reigns, but to little purpose. One of the great defects of the court called the Session is thus described in the preamble to the act of parliament for abolishing it A.D. 1503: "There hath

<sup>243</sup> Du Cange Gloss. voce *Curia*.

<sup>244</sup> James I. act 72, 73, 74, 75. See vol. x. p. 104.

“ been great confusion of summons at every session, so that leisure and space at a proper time of the year could not be had for ending them; and the poor people are delayed from year to year, through which they wanted justice <sup>245</sup>. ”

To remedy this and other inconveniences, another court was erected by the same act, called the daily Council, which was to sit constantly at Edinburgh, or where the King resided or appointed, “ to decide all manner of summons in civil matters, complaints, and causes daily, as they should happen to occur; and that the judges should have the same power with the lords of session <sup>246</sup>. ”

But though this new court remedied some of the defects of the former, it was found to be in other respects equally ineffectual. Its judges had no fixed salaries; and not being bound to attendance by any penalties, they attended so ill, that very often a competent number of judges could not be collected to carry on the business of the court <sup>247</sup>.

Political arrangements, though they may appear feasible in speculation, sometimes contain defects, which nothing but experience can discover.

**Papal bull.** Complaints against the daily council being loud when John Duke of Albany arrived in Scotland and took upon him the government, that wise prince formed the plan of a supreme court of a greater dignity, efficacy, and stability, which it is probable he copied from the parliament of Paris, with which he was well acquainted. He was sen-

<sup>245</sup> James IV. act 92.

<sup>246</sup> Ibid.

<sup>247</sup> Lord Kaim's Law Tracts, p. 268.



fible that fuch a court could not be eftablifhed on folid grounds, without a competent fund for the falaries of its judges and other members. The dignified clergy were by far the richeft body of men in the kingdom, in proportion to their numbers ; and the Duke propofed to procure fome of their fuperfluous wealth, as a fund for this intended eftablifhment. With this view he directed his ambaffador at the court of Rome to represent to the Pope, (who was then confidered as the fovereign of all the clergy, and the guardian of all the revenues of the church,) that his moft obedient fon, James King of Scots, defigned to eftablifh a college of juftice, compofed of honourable and learned men, to adminifter juftice to his fubjects, and to petition His Holinefs to grant the King a fum of money annually out of the revenues of the prelates of his kingdom, for the fupport of his intended college. To render his fcheme more palatable to the Pope and clergy, the Duke agreed that one-half of the fenators or judges in his new college fhould always be clergymen. The Pope did not grant this petition till after the Duke of Albany had left Scotland and was deprived of the regency. But at length the perplexed ftate of affairs in Germany and England made both the Pope and the clergy more willing to gratify the King of Scotland ; and Clement VII., by a bull, A. D. 1531., granted him twelve thoufand ducats of gold a-year out of the revenues of the arch-bifhops, abbots, and priors of his kingdom, for the ufe of his intended college of juftice.<sup>248</sup>

<sup>248</sup> See the bull in Keith, Append. p. 74.

College of  
justice.

Soon after this bull was brought to Scotland a parliament met at Edinburgh May 17th, A.D. 1532.; to which the King communicated his intention "to institute ane college of cunning and wise  
"men, baith of spiritual and temporal estate, for  
"doing and administration of justice in all civil ac-  
"tions; and therefore thinks to be chosen certain  
"persons most convenient and qualified therefore  
"to the number of fourteen persons, half spiritual,  
"half temporal, with ane president." The King further desired the parliament to authorise these fifteen persons to sit and decide upon all civil actions<sup>249</sup>. The parliament approved of the intended institution, ratified and confirmed it, and gave the sentence and decreets of the new court all the strength, force, and effect that the decreets of the lords of session had in all times bygone; *i. e.* that they could be reviewed and reversed only by parliament. At the desire of the King, the parliament also named the fifteen first senators of the college of justice, or lords of council and session, as this new court was called. If the King by his prerogative could have instituted this court and appointed the judges, he certainly acted with great condescension in referring the whole to parliament. But as parliament was in use to name the lords of session, it was perhaps thought that they had a right to name the judges of that court that was substituted in its place. The King appointed the Lord Chancellor, and the Abbot of Cambuskenneth president of the new court, to administer the

<sup>249</sup> James V. Parl. A.D. 1532.



oaths to the other lords; and directed the whole of the judges to spend the next eight days in forming rules for regulating their future proceedings, and to begin to hear causes on the Monday following. The rules were first approved and subscribed by the King, and afterwards confirmed by parliament; but they are too numerous to be here inserted, and many of them have been since changed<sup>250</sup>. By such steps, and with such deliberation, was the supreme court of the council and session established. It hath long flourished, and still continues to flourish, much improved in the extent of its jurisdiction, the multiplicity and variety of its business, and the learning of its judges.

This court at its establishment appears to have Charter. been a great favourite of James V. who granted it a charter, dated at Stirling June 10th, A. D. 1532.; in which he expressed his approbation of the institution in the strongest terms; promised to protect the persons, fortunes, and honours of the judges, and to punish severely such as attempted to injure them in any of these respects, or presumed to treat them with contempt. He granted them also an exemption from all taxes, contributions, and other extraordinary charges in all time to come, and from bearing any office or charge, but with their own free will and consent<sup>251</sup>. This exemption was probably granted to the judges of this new court on account of the smallness of their salaries, which are not indeed mentioned in this charter; but from the scantiness of the funds we

<sup>250</sup> Black Acts James V. fol. 53—57.

<sup>251</sup> Ibid. fol. 57.



may conclude they could not be great. By two of the regulations above mentioned, for directing the future proceedings of this new court, we are informed that ten gentlemen were named by the judges to be advocates, and appointed to plead causes before them; and that the judges at the same time regulated the fees of the writers to the signet<sup>252</sup>: but neither the advocates nor the writers to the signet are mentioned in the charter of exemption from taxes and offices; and it doth not clearly appear whether they were then considered as members of the college of justice, or only as necessary appendages to the court, and nurseries for the bench.

As one half of the ordinary lords or judges of this court, at its first institution, were clergymen, and the other half laymen, and the president was a clergyman, the clergy had a majority of one on the bench. To counterbalance this the chancellor had a seat and vote when he pleased, and presided when he was present; and the King had a power (which he exercised) of appointing three or four noblemen to be extraordinary lords, and to have seats and votes with the other judges, but no salaries<sup>253</sup>. Ten other judges and the president were a quorum.<sup>254</sup>

Nobile officium.

The court of council and session was for some time very popular, and gave universal content<sup>255</sup>. The judges acted with great modesty, caution, and even diffidence. When a cause came before them that appeared perplexed and difficult, instead of determining it themselves, they referred it to par-

<sup>252</sup> Black Acts James V. fol. 56.

<sup>253</sup> Ibid. fol. 53.

<sup>254</sup> Ibid. fol. 55.

<sup>255</sup> Buchan, lib. xiv. p. 273.

liament for a decision <sup>256</sup>. By degrees, however, they acquired more courage and greater confidence in their own abilities and powers. When a case occurred to which none of the existing laws applied, or when applied, led to a rigorous oppressive sentence, they no longer referred it to parliament, but ventured to determine it themselves, by what appeared to them agreeable to the rules of natural equity and justice. The authority by which they did this, at first had no name, but it came afterwards to be called their *nobile officium*; which, it was said, was essential to every supreme court, to enable it to do material justice; and that it was peculiarly necessary to the supreme court of Scotland, in which there was no separate court of equity as in England. Though all this seems to be reasonable, and it is to be hoped that this *nobile officium* hath been generally used for the benefit of individuals and of the public, the first appearance of it was very unpopular, and excited violent clamours, that the property of the people of Scotland was at the mercy of fifteen men, who determined every thing by their arbitrary will and pleasure <sup>257</sup>. But this change and these clamours did not take place till after the conclusion of the present period.

To render this establishment still more firm, if possible, King James solicited and obtained a bull of confirmation of his college of justice from Pope Paul III., dated at Rome March 31st, A. D. 1535. By this bull the Pope not only confirmed, in the most solemn manner, the twelve thousand ducats

Papal bull.

<sup>256</sup> Black Acts James V. fol. 74.

<sup>257</sup> Buchan. p. 273.

formerly



formerly granted by the clergy, but he also gave the King a power to appropriate to the support of his college certain benefices in the gift of the crown as they became vacant, to the amount of two hundred pounds sterling a-year. Further, to please the King, and to shew his favour to his institution, he exempted the president and fourteen ordinary lords, their clerks, notaries, advocates, and other officers, (who appear to have been now considered as members of the college of justice,) from the jurisdiction and visitation of all archbishops, bishops, and other prelates, and took them under the immediate protection of the holy see<sup>258</sup>. Thus was this institution fenced and guarded by every security, spiritual and temporal, that could possibly be devised.

Prerogatives of the crown.

The prerogatives of the crown of Scotland were the same in this as in the preceding periods. But these prerogatives were never very distinctly ascertained, very firmly established, or very uniformly exercised. They varied with the circumstances of the kingdom and the characters of the kings; and they were interrupted and diminished by frequent and long minorities, during which the reins of government were much relaxed. It is sufficient therefore to say, that Scotland was a limited monarchy, and that its princes were bound by the constitution and by their coronation oaths to govern according to the laws, and by the advice of their parliaments. In particular, it appears to have been a fixed principle, that they could not make or repeal any law, nor impose any taxes on

<sup>258</sup> Keith's Append. p. 75.

their



their subjects, without the consent of the three estates. The vassals of the crown with their followers cheerfully attended the royal standard whenever they were called for the defence of their country; but they sometimes hesitated, and even refused, and could not be compelled to pass the borders and invade England. This was a constitutional, and often a salutary restraint on the ambition and martial ardour of their kings, which gave them great offence, but to which they were obliged to submit.

The kings of Scotland in this period were undoubtedly poor princes in proportion to the kings of France and England, who were at the head of much larger and more opulent kingdoms; but they were not poor in proportion to their own dominions, to the circumstances of their subjects, and to their necessary expenditure. Nor was there any nation in Europe that discovered a greater desire to support their princes in a manner suitable to their rank than the Scots. In the records of all the parliaments of this period an extreme anxiety appears to preserve, improve, and increase the revenues of the crown; and many acts were made for these purposes, some of which will be hereafter mentioned.

The stated hereditary revenues which the kings of Scotland derived from the immediate vassals of the crown, were of the same kind with those of every other feudal kingdom, and particularly with those of England, which have been already described in the third chapter of the third book of this work, to which description (to prevent repetitions)

petitions) the reader is referred <sup>259</sup>. These revenues, therefore, bore the same proportion to their dominions with those of other princes. Besides these, they derived revenues from various other sources; as from the customs, on all commodities exported and imported; from the royal mines, which were then valuable, and were wrought by people from Germany; from the revenues of vacant bishoprics, abbies, and priories; from forfeitures and escheats of various kinds; from the estates of lunatics, and the goods of convicts; from fines and amerciaments for trespasses and delinquencies of many different kinds; for money paid for grants of liberties, immunities, and privileges, to towns and corporations; from wrecks, waifs, estrays, treasure-trove, &c. &c. Some of these revenues were small, but when they were accumulated they were considerable, and they bore still the same proportion to the extent and circumstances of their dominions, with those of the same kind in other countries.

Crown  
lands.

But the lands that were unalienably annexed to the crown, and were from time to time receiving great additions, afforded the greatest revenues to the kings of Scotland at this time; and over these the parliament watched with as much attention to preserve, improve, and increase them, as any proprietor watched over his own estate. It was a fixed principle to which the parliaments of Scotland steadily adhered, that the lands of the crown could not be legally and irrecoverably alienated, without the consent of the three estates; and

<sup>260</sup> See vol. vi. ch. iii. p. 34—42.

that

that if a king granted any of these lands without such consent, it was an illegal deed, which might and ought to be revoked. These lands were considered as the estate of the nation, of which the reigning king was the usufructuary, and the three estates were the guardians<sup>260</sup>. These were the undoubted principles of the constitution. They were often indeed violated, but never forgotten. Favourites prevailed upon kings to grant them portions of the crown lands, but these grants were never secure; they were soon discovered by the vigilance, and revoked by the authority of parliament. Of these revocations we meet with two or three in every reign<sup>261</sup>. Parliament even took measures to prevent kings from giving, and courtiers from soliciting such grants. A very remarkable law was made on this subject in the reign of James II. A.D. 1454. In the preamble to that law it is observed, “ That the poverty of the crown  
 “ is oft-times the cause of the poverty of the realm,  
 “ and of many other inconveniencies.” To prevent these it is statute and ordained in full parliament, “ That in every part of the realm, for the  
 “ King’s residence, there be certain lordships and  
 “ castles annexed to the crown, perpetually to remain, which may not be given away in fee and  
 “ heritage or franktenement to any person, of what  
 “ estate or degree that ever he be, without the advice, deliverance, and decreet of the whole parliament, and for great and reasonable causes of

<sup>260</sup> Stat. James I. act 10. 148. James II. act 2. 8. 43. James III. act 86, 87. James IV. act 24. 41. 82. James V. act 40. 54. 96.

<sup>261</sup> Black Acts passim.



“ the realm.” The act then declares all grants of annexed lands null and void ; that they may be revoked without any law-procefs, and that those who have enjoyed any of these lands by virtue of such grants, shall refund all the profits they had reaped from them. It is further enacted, “ That  
 “ our fovereign lord that now is, be fworn, and in  
 “ like manner all his fucceffors, kings of Scotland,  
 “ at their coronation, to the keeping of this flate,  
 “ tute, and all the points thereof <sup>262</sup>.” It feems to have been impoffible for parliament to have taken more effectual precautions to prevent the alienation of the crown lands, than thofe contained in this act, which certainly had its effect for a confiderable length of time, efpecially as it was revived and confirmed by feveral fubfequent acts.

Annexations.

The crown lands received great additions from time to time, by forfeitures, reverfions, and fome other ways ; and parliament took care to annex thefe additional lands firmly to the crown foon after they came into the King’s hands, to prevent their alienation. Of this we meet with feveral examples in the monuments of thofe times ; the moft remarkable of which is that great annexation made by a parliament at Edinburgh, A. D. 1540., of the lands that had been forfeited by the Earl of Angus and his partifans, by Sir James Hamilton, and many others. By this one act all the following lordfhips, lands, and caftles were annexed to the crown in the ftrictest manner : “ The lands and lordfhip of  
 “ all the ifles, fouth and north ; the two Kintyres,

James II. act 43.

“ with

“ with their castles and pertinents; the lands and  
 “ lordships of Orkney, Zetland, with the isles  
 “ pertaining thereto, and their pertinents; the  
 “ lands and lordship of Douglas, with the castle,  
 “ tower, and fortalice thereof, donations, and ad-  
 “ vocations of kirks and benefices, and their per-  
 “ tinents; the lands and lordships of Crawford-  
 “ John and Crawford-Lindsay; the lands and  
 “ lordships of Bonkill, Preston, and Tomtallon,  
 “ with towers, fortalices, rents, donations, and  
 “ advocations of kirks; the lands of Dunfire;  
 “ the lands and lordship of Jedburgh-forest; the  
 “ lands and lordship of Kerrymure, with all their  
 “ pertinents; the superiority of all the earldom  
 “ of Angus, and all other lands, rents, and pos-  
 “ sessions which pertained to Archibald, some  
 “ time Earl of Angus, the time of the said Earl’s  
 “ forfeiture, and now in our Sovereign Lord’s  
 “ hands by reason thereof; the lands and lord-  
 “ ship of Glamis that are not holden of the kirk;  
 “ the lands of Baky, Balmutus, Tannades,  
 “ Drumgleas, Longforgund, and Bathilweis, with  
 “ the towers, fortalices, advocations, and dona-  
 “ tions of kirks, and their pertinents; the lands  
 “ of Racklewch, Whitecampt, Over and Nether  
 “ Howclewch; the lands and barony of Iven-  
 “ dale, with the tower and fortalices thereof,  
 “ advocations and donations of kirks, &c.; the  
 “ lands and lordship of Liddisdale, with the  
 “ castle of Hermitage, advocation and dona-  
 “ tion, and their pertinents; the lands and  
 “ lordship of Bothwel, with the tower, fortalice,

“and their pertinents<sup>263</sup>.” This was an immense addition to the land-estate of the crown, already very great.

The parliaments of Scotland not only paid attention to the preservation and increase of the crown lands, but also to the faithful collection of their rents, and the improvement of their annual value. For the first of these purposes, they sometimes chose certain noblemen of the first rank, in different parts of the kingdom, to superintend the collection of the King's rents in their respective districts<sup>264</sup>. For the second, they made a law permitting James V. to feu a part of his lands, annexed and unannexed, upon condition that he received an advanced rent<sup>265</sup>. But this law was to continue in force only during that king's life.

When parliaments discovered so much solicitude to support the dignity of the crown, the kings of Scotland could not be poor in proportion to their necessary expenditure, which is the most material circumstance. A prince with great revenues, whose expences are still greater, is really poor; and a prince with comparatively small revenues, whose expences are still smaller, is really rich. This last was the situation of the kings of Scotland in this period. Their revenues were small when compared to those of the kings of France and England; but their necessary expenditure was smaller, when compared to that of these two princes. The kings of Scotland could form no ambitious pro-

<sup>263</sup> James V. act 54. 75.

<sup>264</sup> James IV. act 26.

<sup>265</sup> James V. act 97.



jects of conquest, with which these other princes were almost constantly inflamed, and on which they exhausted their treasures, as well as the blood of their subjects. The civil government of Scotland was so constituted, that it cost the kings very little. The supreme court cost them nothing: they had no standing army of their own subjects to support, and they hired no foreign mercenaries. Wars, which were so burthensome to the kings of France and England, put the kings of Scotland to very little expence. They had no wars but with England, which were either defensive, or sudden predatory incursions. When their country was invaded, all the vassals of the crown, with their followers, and even all the subjects who were able to bear arms, were obliged to attend the royal standard, to repel the invaders at their own expence. The predatory incursions were undertaken by martial chieftains and bold adventurers, from the desire of revenge, or the hopes of booty, sometimes with, and sometimes without the king's permission, but never at his expence. The kings of Scotland were not even at the expence of the ambassadors sent to England, France, Denmark, and other courts. That expence was defrayed by a small tax imposed by parliament<sup>266</sup>. In a word, the revenues of the crown of Scotland were chiefly intended for supporting the King's court and household in a manner suitable to the royal dignity, and for that purpose they were more than sufficient. Accord-

<sup>266</sup> James II. act 51. James III. act 62. 90. 126. James IV. act 22. 45, 46. 72.

ingly these princes married into the greatest families in Europe; had magnificent palaces, numerous attendants, and lived with splendour and in affluence. They never complained of the scantiness of their revenues: they never applied to parliament for supplies, or for the payment of their debts: they never once attempted to extort a farthing from their subjects, by loans, benevolences, and other oppressive arts, which were so often employed by the greatest princes in Europe their contemporaries. They were under no necessity of employing such arts.

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER IV.

History of Learning, of learned Men, and of the chief Seminaries of Learning that were founded in Great Britain, from A. D. 1485. to A. D. 1547.

IT was only a very brief account of the state of learning and of the several sciences in every period, that was promised in the plan of this work in the preface prefixed to the first volume <sup>267</sup>. This was all that could with any propriety be introduced into general history. To have attempted to give regular extended systems of every science in every period, would have been a most preposterous absurd attempt. Such sys-

Account  
of the  
sciences  
short.

<sup>267</sup> See the General Preface, p. xxi.



tems would have been useless and unnecessary to the learned, and tedious and disgusting to the bulk of readers ; would have quite destroyed the symmetry of this work, and swelled every fourth chapter to an enormous size. What was proposed in the plan is thus expressed : “ It is only designed to lay before the reader a clear and concise account of the general state of each science ; its decline or progress ; its most remarkable defects and most important improvements : This is all that falls within the province of general history on subjects of this nature ; all that can be universally useful and agreeable, or reasonably desired and expected in a work of this kind<sup>268</sup>. ” Though such brief accounts of the general state of learning may be of little use to the learned in literary history, they may be both instructive and entertaining to many other readers, who have neither leisure nor inclination to peruse more voluminous works on these subjects. They may contribute also to diffuse the fame of those ingenious men who have done honour to their country by their learned labours, and enriched it with the stores of useful knowledge.

A dark period.

The morning of that auspicious day which succeeded that long night of ignorance in which almost all Europe had been involved from the fall of the western empire, had already dawned on Italy, and some other parts of the continent, but had not yet reached this little sequestered world of Britain. While learning was reviving in some other countries, it was languishing and declining

<sup>268</sup> See the General Preface, p. xxi.

in this island ; and the period that immediately preceded the present was here one of the darkest and most illiterate <sup>269</sup>. In every former period, the darkest not excepted, some extraordinary men arose ; as the venerable Bede, Alfred the Great, Roger Bacon, Doctor Wickliff, &c. who, by the force of their genius and application, dissipated, in some degree, the gloom with which they were surrounded, and rendered their names immortal. But in the fifteenth century there was not so much as one man in Britain who acquired, or indeed deserved, a very extensive or permanent reputation by his writings.

But our present period presents us with a more agreeable prospect. A better taste, and a greater esteem and love of learning were introduced, and became gradually more general and more ardent. That we may have a distinct view of this happy change, which hath been productive of so much innocent and rational pleasure to individuals, and of so many benefits to society, it will be proper to give a brief account, 1. Of the sciences that were most successfully cultivated : 2. Of the most learned men who flourished : and, 3. Of the principal seminaries of learning that were founded in Britain in the present period.

Plan of  
the chap-  
ter.

<sup>269</sup> See vol. x. c. 4. sect. i.

## SECTION I.

*A brief Account of the Sciences that were most successfully cultivated in Britain, from A. D. 1485. to A. D. 1547.*

Obstructions to learning.

**G**REAT industry, and an enthusiastic attachment to literary pursuits, were as necessary as genius to the revivers of learning. They had many difficulties to encounter, and few things to animate and encourage them in their labours. Books were still very scarce and dear. The art of printing had been introduced into England a few years before. But the first productions of the English press were very poor performances, and contributed very little to the improvement of taste or revival of learning. Honest William Caxton, instead of printing the Latin and Greek classics in their original languages, with which he was unacquainted, printed his own degrading translations of some of them from French translations, no less degrading, which could give their readers no ideas of their beauties. Instructors were still scarcer than books. The path was untrodden, and guides could not be procured. Learning was not yet become the road to preferment. The nobility in general were illiterate, and despised, rather than patronised, learning and learned men, "It is enough (said a nobleman to Richard Pace, secretary to Henry VIII.) for noblemen's sons to wind their horn and carry their hawk fair, and leave study and learning  
" to



“ to the children of mean people<sup>270</sup>.” Henry VII. was neither a learned nor a generous prince. He employed indeed several clergymen in his affairs, not on account of their uncommon learning, but of their skill in business and dexterity in negotiations, and to save his money, by rewarding them with benefices instead of salaries. After the reformation had commenced in Germany, and many began to favour it in Britain, those who deviated from the beaten track in their studies were suspected of heresy, and discouraged and persecuted on that account. But notwithstanding this, a number of ingenious and industrious men appeared in this period, who surmounted all these difficulties; and by their example, their exhortations, and the beauty and elegance of their writings, brought a better kind of learning into reputation, and gave a happy turn to the taste and studies of the age.

No province of literature was cultivated with so much care and success by the revivers of learning in the present period, as philology, or the accurate knowledge of languages, particularly of the Latin and Greek classics. The neglect into which the works of the philosophers, poets, and historians of Greece and Rome had fallen, was one great cause of the decline of learning, and of the bad taste and barbarism of the middle ages. The revivers of learning, therefore, acted wisely in beginning its revival, by removing one of the great causes of its decline. By acquiring a correct and critical knowledge of the language, style, and manner of those ex-

Latin language.

<sup>270</sup> Biographia Britan. p. 1236.

cellent writers, they obtained two great advantages; they had access to all the stores of wisdom and eloquence their writings contained, and to all the pleasure their perusal could afford; and by imitating such beautiful models, they acquired the art of communicating their own thoughts to the world in a perspicuous, elegant, and pleasing manner. In this art some of the revivers of learning, both in Britain and on the continent, succeeded to admiration, and wrote in Latin with a classical purity not unbecoming the Augustan age<sup>271</sup>. The success, exhortations, and example, of those eminent men, and of many others, brought the study of the Latin language into fashion; the barbarous jargon formerly used was despised; and to be able to speak and write pure and classical Latin, was considered as a valuable, and even a polite accomplishment, to which persons of high rank and of both sexes aspired. To assist youth in the acquisition of this accomplishment, the greatest scholars of the age, as Erasmus, Linacer, Sir John Cheke, and many others, did not disdain to spend their time in writing rudiments, grammars, vocabularies, colloquies, and other books. The haughty monarch Henry VIII., and his no less haughty minister Cardinal Wolsey, stooped to employ their pens in writing instructions to youth in the study of this favourite language. The King, it is said, wrote a treatise *de instituendâ pube*, and an Introduction to Grammar; and the Cardinal composed a system

<sup>271</sup> Sir Thomas More, Doctor Linacer, William Lilly, George Buchanan, &c. &c.

of instructions to be observed by the masters in the school he founded at Ipswich, his native town<sup>272</sup>. The Cardinal had been a schoolmaster, and was well qualified for giving these instructions, which are equally sensible and particular. James IV. of Scotland was a great admirer of a pure and classical style in writing Latin, and a zealous promoter of the study of that language. His own letters are written with greater purity and elegance than those of any other prince in Europe<sup>273</sup>. He put his natural son, Alexander Archbishop of Saint Andrew's, a most ingenious youth, under the care of the great Erasmus; and he procured an act of parliament to be made, A. D. 1496., "obliging all barons and freeholders that  
 "are of substance, to put their eldest sons to the  
 "grammar schools at eight or nine years of age,  
 "to remain there till they were competently  
 "founded, and had perfect Latin<sup>274</sup>." In a word, the Roman classics were now studied with so much diligence, and the capacity of imitating their style and manner was so much valued, that the sixteenth century may very properly be called *seculum Latinum*, the Latin age.

The restorers of learning found much greater difficulty in acquiring the knowledge of the Greek language themselves, and in persuading others that the knowledge of it was either necessary or useful. That copious and beautiful language, in which so

Greek language.

<sup>272</sup> Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors, p. 8, 9. Strype's Memorials, vol. i. p. 223. Ibid. Appendix, No. 35.

<sup>273</sup> Epistolæ Regum Scotorum, vol. i.

<sup>274</sup> James IV. act 87.

many



many of the philosophers, poets, historians, and orators of antiquity had written, was almost quite unknown in Britain in the beginning of this period. The celebrated Erasmus of Rotterdam, the most zealous and successful restorer of learning, came into England A. D. 1497., and went to Oxford with a design to teach Greek; but he met with much opposition and little encouragement. Many both of the secular and regular clergy declaimed against him in the schools, and even in the pulpit, with great bitterness. They railed particularly against his Greek New Testament, as a most impious and dangerous book<sup>275</sup>. He continued, however, to teach there a considerable time, encouraged by a few ingenious men, who gladly received his instructions, and afterwards communicated them to others; by which a taste for the study of the Greek language was gradually excited, not only among the youth, but in some members of the university who were far advanced in life. In this, however, little progress was made for several years, owing to the unhappy state of the university, which was frequently visited and dispersed by the sweating-sickness, distracted by riots, and disgraced by the general ignorance and profligacy of its members.<sup>276</sup>

The accession of Henry VIII. was an event favourable to learning, for which he had a taste, and in which he had made some proficiency. He was at the same time rich and generous, and fond of praise, which made many entertain hopes that he

<sup>275</sup> A. Wood, *Hist. Univer. Oxon.* lib. i. p. 237.

<sup>276</sup> *Ibid.* p. 240.

would prove a liberal patron to men of literary merit. On this event the Lord Mountjoy, who was a great admirer and had been a pupil of Erasmus, pressed him to come into England; promising him the patronage of the King, of Warham Archbishop of Canterbury, and of other great men. He complied with the invitation, and arrived in London, A. D. 1509. After spending some time with his friend Sir Thomas More, he went to Cambridge, with a design to promote the interest of learning, and particularly the study of the Greek tongue, which had been as much neglected in that as in the other university. But though he was patronised by the Chancellor, Fisher Bishop of Rochester, and appointed professor of Greek, he had little success, and found the academicians of Cambridge as ignorant and averse to study as those of Oxford. He explained the grammar of Chrysostoras to a few poor scholars, who could give him little or nothing for his labour; and his expences far exceeded his gains<sup>277</sup>. So difficult was it to rouse the students of those times from that lethargy into which they had fallen, and to correct the bad taste they had contracted.

The dissension between the friends and enemies of the Greek language and learning at Oxford did not terminate when Erasmus left that university. On the contrary, they were formed into two parties; one of which was called the Greeks, and the other the Trojans. As the Trojans were the most numerous, (almost all the monks being true Tro-

Greeks  
and Tro-  
jans.

<sup>277</sup> Dr. Jortin's Life of Erasmus, vol. i. p. 37.

jans,)

jans,) they were the most insolent. When a poor Greek appeared on the street, or in any public place, he was attacked by the Trojans with hisses, taunts, and insults of all kinds. But the triumphs of the Trojans were not of long duration. The King and his great favourite Cardinal Wolsey having warmly espoused the cause of the Greeks, their numbers, their credit, and their courage daily encreased, the Greek language became a favourite study, and the Trojans were obliged to quit the field.<sup>278</sup>

But after the study of the Greek language had become fashionable, a controversy about the true pronounciation of it arose between Sir John Cheke, professor of Greek at Cambridge, and Stephen Gardner, Chancellor of that university and Bishop of Winchester. This controversy (a minute account of which cannot be introduced into general history) was conducted with great modesty and learning by the professor, who proved by many arguments, that the pronounciation which had been introduced in the dark ages was absurd and faulty in many respects; and in particular, that by giving the same sound to several different letters, it destroyed the beauty, variety, and musical sweetness of the language, which were restored by the new pronounciation. To all this the haughty chancellor replied by a thundering decree, denouncing very severe censures on all who dared to drop the old, and adopt the new pronounciation.<sup>279</sup>

<sup>278</sup> A. Wood, Hist. Univer. Oxon. lib. i. p. 246.

<sup>279</sup> Strype's Life of Sir John Cheke, p. 17, &c. His Memorials, vol. i. p. 372.



On this occasion reason proved too strong for mere authority. The decree was soon disregarded, and the new pronounciation prevailed, and still prevails. Thus in the space of about thirty years a great change was brought about in the state of learning and the taste of the learned in Britain, by the labours of a few active and ingenious men, in opposition to inveterate habits, strong prejudices, and the indolence, ignorance, dissolute manners, and bad taste that had long reigned in the seminaries of learning, and were not easily overcome. The Roman and Greek classics, which had been long neglected, and almost forgotten, were studied with the greatest ardour and success; and their style and manner admirably well imitated by several British as well as foreign writers in this period<sup>280</sup>. Some attempts were made to revive the study of the Hebrew, but not with the same success.

The patronage and liberality of the great contributed no less than the labours of the learned to the revival of learning; nor was there in those times a more liberal patron of learning and learned men than the famous Cardinal Wolsey. This extraordinary man had a genius and taste for learning, in which he had made great proficiency in his youth, and for which he retained a regard in his highest elevation. "Politer learning," says Erasmus, "as yet struggling with the patrons of the ancient ignorance, he upheld by his favour, defended by his authority, adorned by his splen-

Wolsey a  
patron of  
learning.

<sup>280</sup> See the Works of More, Buchannan, Cheke, Linacer, Collet, &c. &c.

“dour, and cherished by his kindness. He invited  
 “all the most learned professors by his noble sa-  
 “laries. In furnishing libraries with all kinds of  
 “authors, of good learning, he contended with  
 “Ptolemeus Philadelphus himself, who was more  
 “famous for this than for his kingdom. He re-  
 “called the three learned languages, without  
 “which all learning is lame<sup>281</sup>.” That all this was  
 not flattery is certain. When the Cardinal visited  
 Oxford A. D. 1518., he founded no fewer than  
 seven lectures; viz. in theology, civil law, physic,  
 philosophy, mathematics, Greek, and rhetoric;  
 and chose the most learned men he could procure  
 to read those lectures<sup>282</sup>. He at the same time  
 intimated his intention of doing much greater  
 things for the honour of the university, and the  
 advancement of learning, which he executed in  
 part, and, to his unspeakable sorrow, was pre-  
 vented from executing fully, by his unexpected  
 fall.

Schoolmen  
 despised.

The time and thoughts of the restorers of learn-  
 ing in our present period were so much engaged  
 in the study of the *belles lettres*, that they could not  
 pay the same attention to the sciences. These re-  
 mained nearly in the same low and wretched state  
 (a very few excepted) in which they had been in  
 the three preceding periods. The philosophic age  
 was not yet arrived. It would be very improper  
 therefore to encumber the pages of general history  
 with a dry detail of the trivial changes that were  
 now made in logic, metaphysics, natural and moral

<sup>281</sup> Erasmi Epist. lib. vi. ep. 21.  
 vita Wolfey. A. Wood, Hist. Univer. Oxon. lib. i. p. 250.

<sup>282</sup> Biographia Britan.

philosophy, arithmetic, mathematics, astronomy, &c. No genius, art, or industry, could render such a detail either instructive or entertaining<sup>283</sup>. The logic, metaphysics, and philosophy, of the schools, which were in high reputation in the beginning of this period, gradually declining as a better taste prevailed; and as the language of the philosophers of Greece and Rome came to be better understood, and their works more generally perused, the barbarous jargon, unintelligible subtilties, endless distinctions, and ponderous works of the schoolmen, came to be neglected and despised. Their volumes, which had been once highly prized and diligently studied, began to be treated with great contempt, and put to the most ignominious uses. The commissioners who were appointed to visit the university of Oxford, A. D. 1535., wrote thus to the Lord Cromwell: “ We have  
 “ set Dunce in Bocardo, and have utterly banish-  
 “ ed him Oxford for ever, with all his blind  
 “ glosses; and he is now made a common servant  
 “ to every man, fast nailed up upon posts in all  
 “ common houses of easement. The second time  
 “ we came to New College, after we had declared  
 “ your injunctions, we found all the great qua-  
 “ drant court full of the leaves of Dunce, (*Jo-*  
 “ *hannes Duns Scotus*,) the wind blowing them  
 “ into every corner<sup>284</sup>.” The works of the other schoolmen no doubt shared the same fate, those of Thomas Aquinas perhaps excepted, as he was the King’s favourite author.

<sup>283</sup> See vol. vi. c. 4. sect. 1. — vol. viii. and x. c. 4. sect. 1.

<sup>284</sup> Strype’s Memorials, vol. i. p. 210. A. Wood, lib. i. p. 260.



School divinity.

The theology of the schoolmen received as severe a blow, and underwent as great a change at this time, as their philosophy; and the study of the languages, particularly the Greek, contributed as much to the one as to the other. In the beginning of this period, very few theologians understood the original languages either of the Old or New Testament, or made the Scriptures their study. The Bible divines had been gradually decreasing in their credit and in their numbers from the thirteenth century, and in the fifteenth they were almost quite extinct <sup>285</sup>. The professors of divinity read lectures only on the sentences of Peter Lombard, or on the summs, as they were called, of other schoolmen. But when the study of the Greek language began to prevail, in the end of the fifteenth and beginning of the sixteenth century, several of the clergy applied to that study, and became acquainted with the New Testament in the original; of which an edition was published by Erasmus A.D. 1515. <sup>286</sup> But these studies were thought to be dangerous, and were discouraged by the great body of the clergy, as tending to make those who applied to them heretics. It soon appeared that they had that tendency, and that they paved the way for the reformation that followed. The taste, however, that several ingenious men had contracted for this new learning, as it was called, was so strong, that they were not deterred by reproaches, threats, and dangers, from communicating the knowledge they had acquired, and recommending the same

<sup>285</sup> See vol. viii. ch. 4. sect. 1.

<sup>286</sup> Erasim. Epist. 181.

studies

studies to others. Doctor John Collet, the founder of St. Paul's school, and one of the most zealous revivers of learning, read public lectures at Oxford, A.D. 1497., on St. Paul's Epistles, without fee or reward. These lectures excited great curiosity, and were attended by crowded audiences; but the lecturer was soon interrupted, by an accusation of heresy that was brought against him before Archbishop Warham, who had so great an esteem for him, on account of his virtue and learning, that he discouraged the prosecution, and suffered him to escape<sup>287</sup>. After Doctor Collet was appointed Dean of St. Paul's, A.D. 1505., he preached every Sunday in that cathedral, in an uncommon strain of eloquence, boldly condemning the cold unaffected manner in which the clergy in general read their sermons; the worship of images; the celibacy of the clergy; and several superstitious ceremonies of the church. He encouraged his friend William Grocine, another of the revivers of learning, to read lectures on the New Testament in St. Paul's, which were well attended, and much admired<sup>288</sup>. These sermons and lectures, and others of the same kind, together with the writings of Erasmus, and the other revivers of learning, diminished the reputation of scholastic divinity, and excited in the minds of many, both of the clergy and laity, a desire of becoming acquainted with the Scriptures, and of drawing their religious opinions from those sacred fountains, even before Luther began the reformation in Germany. The revivers of learning, therefore,

<sup>287</sup> Knight's Life of Collet, p. 50.<sup>288</sup> Id. *ibid*.



contributed not a little to discredit the artificial theology of the schools, and to introduce the study of the Scriptures, by which they prepared the minds of men (some of them without intending it) for receiving the doctrines of the Reformation. Of this the enemies of the new learning were not ignorant; and they hated Erasmus, who they said had laid the egg, almost as much as they hated Luther, who they said had hatched it.<sup>289</sup>

Phyfic, surgery, and all the branches of the healing art, were in a very imperfect state at the beginning of this period, and even at the accession of Henry VIII. This we learn from an act of parliament made, A.D. 1511.: “ The science  
 “ and cunning of phyfic and surgery (to the perfect knowledge whereof be requisite both great  
 “ learning and ripe experience) is daily within  
 “ this realm exercised by a great multitude of  
 “ ignorant persons, of whom the greater part have  
 “ no manner of insight in the same, nor in any  
 “ other kind of learning; some also ken no letters on the book; so far forth, that common  
 “ artificers, as smiths, weavers, and women,  
 “ boldly and accustomedly, take upon them great  
 “ cures, and things of great difficulty, in which  
 “ they partly use forcery and witchcraft, partly  
 “ apply such medicines unto the disease as be very  
 “ notorious, and nothing meet therefor, to the  
 “ high displeasure of God, great infamy to  
 “ the faculty, and the grievous hurt, damage,  
 “ and destruction of many of the King’s liege  
 “ people, most especially of them that cannot

<sup>289</sup> Jortin’s Life of Erasmus, passim.

“ discern



“discern the uncunning from the cunning<sup>290</sup>.”

To prevent these evils it was enacted, that no person should act as a physician or surgeon in London, or within seven miles of it, till he was examined and approved by the Bishop of London or the Dean of St. Paul's, assisted by four doctors of physic or four expert surgeons, under the penalty of six pounds for every month he had acted; one half to the King, and the other to the informer; and that no person should practise in any other part of England, without a licence from the bishop of the diocese, under the same penalty. The privileges and rights of the two universities were secured. This law seems to have given a check to quackery, and to have diminished the number of practitioners of surgery in London. For two years after, the incorporation of surgeons in London, which consisted only of twelve persons, petitioned parliament to be exempted from the obligation of bearing arms and of serving on juries, that they might be at all times at liberty to attend their practice. Their petition was granted, and that exemption is still enjoyed by the faculty<sup>291</sup>. The parliament seems to have supposed that twelve regular surgeons would always be sufficient for London; as by the last article in the act the exemption is restricted to that number<sup>292</sup>. How short-sighted are the greatest assemblies!

To rescue the practice of physic out of the igno-  
 noble and unworthy hands by which it had been

College of  
Physicians.

<sup>290</sup> Stat. 3 Hen. VIII. c. 11.

<sup>291</sup> 5 Hen. VIII. c. 6.

<sup>292</sup> Ibid.

disgraced, and had done so much mischief, another design was soon after formed and executed. This was the institution of the Royal College of Physicians in London. This design, it is said, was formed by Doctor Thomas Linacer, physician to Henry VIII., and patronised by Cardinal Wolsey, at whose desire the King granted a charter September 23d, A.D. 1518., incorporating Doctors John Chambre, Thomas Linacer, Ferdinando De Victoria, his own three physicians, with Nicholas Hatfield, John Francisco, and Robert Yaxley, physicians, and the other gentlemen of the faculty in the city of London, into one body, community, and perpetual college. To this college Henry granted various rights, powers, and immunities, by his charter; such as, a right to elect a president annually for the government of the college; to have a common seal to purchase lands to a certain value; to sue and to be sued by the name and title of The President and Community of the College of Physicians in London; and to make laws and regulations for the good government of the college. He granted them a power to practise as physicians in London, and seven miles round it; and that none who were not licensed by the college should practise within that bounds, under the penalty of paying five pounds for every month they practised. He gave them power to choose four of their members annually, to superintend and discover all irregular practitioners, and to punish them by fines, amerciaments, imprisonments, and other fit and reasonable ways. They had also authority to visit all apothecaries' shops, and

and examine their medicines, as often as they thought it necessary or proper. Finally, the members of the college and their licentiates were exempted from bearing arms or serving on juries. This charter was confirmed by parliament A. D. 1523.<sup>293</sup> This institution was intended and calculated to raise the reputation of the medical profession, and prevent the people from being imposed upon by bold and ignorant adventurers, who sported with their lives, and robbed them of their money. These two acts of parliament, which were for some time strictly executed, had one remarkable effect:—by greatly diminishing the number of practitioners, they made the regular practice of physic and surgery exceedingly lucrative. “The most effectual security against poverty,” saith Erasmus, “is the art of medicine, which of all arts is the most remote from mendicity.”<sup>294</sup>

The wisest legislators do not foresee all the consequences of their laws. The act 3 Hen. VIII. in favour of the incorporation of surgeons in London, proved very inconvenient and oppressive; and that incorporation prosecuted many well-meaning charitable persons, who endeavoured to assist their poor neighbours in distress, with so much severity, that parliament found it necessary to interpose. An act was accordingly made, 35 Hen. VIII. A. D. 1543., representing in the preamble, “That since the act made in the third of that king, the company and fellowship of the surgeons of London, minding only their own

Surgeons

<sup>293</sup> 15 Hen. VIII. c. 5.<sup>294</sup> Erasmi Opera, tom. v. p. 661.



“ lucures, and nothing the profit or ease of the dif-  
 “ eafed and patient, have fued, troubled, and  
 “ vexed divers honeft perfons, as well men as  
 “ women, whom God hath endured with the  
 “ knowledge of the nature, kind, and operation  
 “ of certain herbs, roots, and waters, and the  
 “ ufing and miniftering them to fuch as been  
 “ pained with customable difeafes; as women’s  
 “ breasts being fore, a pin and web in the eye,  
 “ uncomes of hands, burnings, fcaolding, fore  
 “ mouths, the ftone, ftangury, faucelim, mor-  
 “ phew, and fuch other difeafes; and yet the  
 “ faid perfons have not taken any thing for their  
 “ pains or cunning, but have miniftered the fame  
 “ to poor people, only for neighbourhood and  
 “ God’s fake, and of pity and charity.” To pre-  
 vent thefe vexatious profecutions, it was enacted,  
 “ That it fhall henceforth be lawful to every per-  
 “ fon, being the king’s fubject, having knowledge  
 “ and experience of the nature of herbs, roots,  
 “ and waters, or of the operation of the fame, by  
 “ fpeculation or practice, to practice, ufe, and  
 “ minifter, in and to any outward fore, uncome,  
 “ wound, apoftemations, outward fwelling, and  
 “ difeafe, any herb or herbs, ointments, baths,  
 “ pultefs, and emplaifters, according to their  
 “ cunning, experience, and knowledge, in any  
 “ of the difeafes, fores, and maladies beforefaid,  
 “ and all other like to the fame, or drinks for the  
 “ ftone, ftangury, or agues, without fuit, vex-  
 “ ation, penalty, or lofs of their goods <sup>295</sup>.” In  
 this ftatute the parliament gave the furgeons of

<sup>295</sup> 35 Hen. VIII. c. 8.

London a very bad character: “ Most part of the  
 “ said craft of surgeons have small cunning, yet  
 “ they will take great sums of money and do  
 “ little therefor; and by reason thereof, they do  
 “ often times impair and hurt their patients,  
 “ rather than do them good. It is now well  
 “ known, that the surgeons admitted will do no  
 “ cure to any person, but where they shall know  
 “ to be rewarded with a greater sum and reward  
 “ than the cure extendeth unto: for in case they  
 “ would minister their cunning unto fore people  
 “ unrewarded, there should not so many rot and  
 “ perish to death; for lack or help of surgery,  
 “ as daily do<sup>296</sup>.” This odious character will  
 not apply to their successors in the present age.

Humane and skilful physicians and surgeons New diseases.  
 were never more necessary than in the period we  
 are now examining. Besides the diseases formerly  
 known, two new ones broke out at this time with  
 great violence, and made prodigious havoc. These  
 were the sweating sickness and the *lues venerea*.  
 Of the first of these diseases an account hath been  
 already given<sup>297</sup>. Of the second, a very short one  
 will be sufficient. The most probable relation of the  
 first appearance of the *lues venerea* in Europe seems  
 to be the following: The famous Christopher Columbus,  
 the discoverer of the new world, landed on the first  
 island he saw in those unknown regions in December,  
 A. D. 1492., and called it Hispaniola. There his men  
 contracted that disease by their intercourse with the  
 women of the country, where

<sup>296</sup> 35 Hen. VIII. c. 8.<sup>297</sup> See vol. x. ch. 4. sect. 1. p. 122.

it had long prevailed, and communicated it to the people of Barcelona on their arrival in that city in March, A. D. 1493., where it soon raged with so much violence, that it excited universal horror and consternation. They considered it as a plague sent immediately from Heaven as a punishment for their sins, and endeavoured to appease the offended Deity by masses, processions, prayers, and alms. Several companies of soldiers, who were generally infected with this new disease, were sent from Barcelona, A. D. 1494., to reinforce the Spanish army in Naples, for the defence of that kingdom against a French army which invaded it that year. What execution these soldiers did in the war is not recorded, but they did great execution by propagating their new distemper in the Spanish and French armies, and in the country around. The French, on their return into their own country, A. D. 1495., carried this pernicious present with them, and in a few years it was diffused into every corner of Europe<sup>298</sup>. In France it was called the Neapolitan, and in Italy it was called the French disease; neither of these nations being ambitious of having its name. The physicians stood aghast at its first appearance, and none but the most ignorant and impudent empirics pretended to give the unhappy patients any relief. Under their management many died miserably, and many of those who survived were wretched in themselves, and objects of disgust to others. The two mighty rivals, Charles V. and Francis I., were both infected

<sup>298</sup> Astruc on the Venereal Disease, b. i. c. 5. and 10.

with



with this disease, and to the last of these princes it proved fatal<sup>299</sup>. It was one of the articles of accusation brought by the house of peers, A. D. 1529., against the great Cardinal Wolsey, “ That  
 “ knowing himself to have the foul and conta-  
 “ gious disease of the great pox broken out upon  
 “ him in divers places of his body, he came  
 “ daily to Your Grace, rowning in your ear, and  
 “ blowing upon Your most noble Grace with his  
 “ perilous and infective breath, to the marvel-  
 “ lous danger of Your Highness, if God of his in-  
 “ finite goodness had not better provided for  
 “ Your Highness<sup>300</sup>.” So dangerous and so infec-  
 tious was this disease believed to be at that time. By degrees the virulence of this odious distemper, and the consternation occasioned by its first appearance, began to abate, and physicians became better acquainted with its causes, its symptoms, and its cure. But these are not proper subjects for general history.

## SECT. II.

*History of the most learned Men who flourished in Britain, from A. D. 1485., to A. D. 1547.*

**A**MONG the learned men who have flourished in the same period, in any nation, many of them may have enjoyed a certain degree of celebrity in their own times, but few of them have had their names transmitted with honour to posterity in the annals of their country, on account of the

<sup>299</sup> Astruc on the Venereal Disease, b. i. c. 1. p. 2.

<sup>300</sup> Parliament. Hist. vol. iii. p. 44.

superior excellence and utility of their works. Mediocrity is common, but is soon forgotten; excellence is rare, but is long remembered. It will be sufficient, therefore, and all that can be expected in this place, to give a brief account of those few ingenious and useful men who were the chief instruments of the revival of polite learning and good taste in Britain in our present period, from which we derive so many innocent and rational pleasures, as well as other advantages.

Erasmus.

Though Erasmus of Rotterdam was not a native of Britain, he resided several years in England at different times; and by his teaching, his conversation, and his writings, he contributed as much, if not more, than any other man, to inspire a taste for the study of the Roman and Greek classics, which was the first stage in the restoration of learning. He was born at Rotterdam, A.D. 1467., and educated at an illustrious school in Darenter, where he began to display that extraordinary genius, and that ardent love of learning, which afterwards rendered him so famous and so useful. Having lost both his parents when he was only in his thirteenth year, his three unfaithful guardians conspired to make him a monk, that they might possess themselves of his patrimony. His aversion to that way of life was strong, and he long resisted all the means that were used to prevail upon him to embrace it. At length, however, he was overcome; and in the nineteenth year of his age he made his profession, in a convent of regular canons, with extreme reluctance. He was not long immured in his monastery.



nastery. The genius of young Erasmus, and his aversion to the way of life he had reluctantly embraced, were not unknown to many; and at length Henry a Bergis, Archbishop of Cambray, took him out of his confinement into his own family when he was about twenty-three years of age. He continued to wear the habit of his order for some time, and was ordained a priest two years after he left his monastery, to which he was determined never to return; and, by the influence of the Pope's secretary, to whom he wrote a most eloquent and pathetic letter, he obtained a *breve* from Julius II. releasing him from his monastic vows and habit. Being now at liberty, he applied with ardour to his studies, and visited France, Italy, and England, to communicate and to increase his knowledge. In all these countries he was well received, and even courted, by persons of the highest rank and greatest merit, who solicited his friendship, and were proud of being numbered among his patrons. Attempts were every where made to retain him, by the offer of comfortable stations, and the promise of more splendid establishments. But he preferred liberty to every thing, and would accept of no preferment that laid him under the least restraint. For several years he led a wandering unsettled life, depending for his subsistence on the pensions of his patrons, the occasional gifts of his friends, and the money he received from his pupils. As he was a bad economist, and his income was precarious, he was sometimes reduced to straits, and forced to make complaints. "If I could get money," said he, in



in a letter to one of his friends, “ I would first  
“ purchase Greek books, and secondly cloaths.”  
Few scholars would observe the same order. On  
the accession of Henry VIII., a young, rich, and  
generous prince, he was invited by his friend  
William Lord Mountjoy to come once more into  
England, and encouraged to entertain the most  
fanguine hopes. He complied with the invita-  
tion, and met with the most flattering reception,  
which afforded the fairest prospects. “ The King  
“ himself,” says he, “ a little before his father’s  
“ death, when I was in Italy, wrote me with his  
“ own hand a very friendly letter, and he now  
“ speaks of me in the most honourable and af-  
“ fectionate manner. Every time that I salute  
“ him he embraces me most obligingly, and looks  
“ kindly upon me; and it plainly appears that he  
“ not only speaks but thinks well of me. The  
“ Queen hath endeavoured to have me for her  
“ preceptor. Every one knows, that if I would  
“ but live a few months at court, the King would  
“ give me as many benefices as I could desire.  
“ But I esteem all things less than the leisure  
“ which I enjoy, and the labours and studies in  
“ which I am occupied. The Archbishop of Can-  
“ terbury, primate of England and chancellor  
“ of the kingdom, a learned and worthy man,  
“ loves me as though he were my father or my  
“ brother; and to shew you the sincerity of his  
“ friendship, he hath given me a living worth  
“ about a hundred nobles, which, at my request,  
“ he hath since changed into a pension of a hun-  
“ dred crowns on my resignation. Within these  
“ few years he hath given me more than four hun-

“dred nobles without my asking. One day he  
 “gave me an hundred and fifty. From the libe-  
 “rality of other bishops I have received more than  
 “an hundred. Lord Mountjoy, who was former-  
 “ly my disciple, gives me a yearly pension of an  
 “hundred crowns. The King and the Bishop of  
 “Lincoln, [Wolfey,] who by the King’s favour  
 “is omnipotent, make me magnificent promises.”  
 But all these magnificent promises came to no-  
 thing, and none of them were performed. The  
 cause of this is not certainly known: but it dis-  
 gusted Erasmus so much, that after a long resi-  
 dence of about five years, he left England in dis-  
 content, A.D. 1516., and never could be prevailed  
 upon to return. During that residence he contri-  
 buted very much to diffuse and cherish a taste for  
 the study of the Latin and Greek classics, and of  
 other useful learning. As the subsequent events  
 of this great man’s life do not properly come with-  
 in our plan, the reader must be referred to the  
 works quoted below for a full account of them,  
 and of his many learned, instructive, and enter-  
 taining publications, where he will also find the  
 authorities for what is above related <sup>301</sup>. Not to  
 leave this article quite imperfect, it may be proper  
 to mention a few particulars. Soon after Erasmus  
 settled on the continent, Luther began his opposi-  
 tion to the church of Rome; and when the contest  
 became serious and important, both parties en-  
 deavoured to engage him to espouse their cause.  
 No man was more sensible of the corruptions of the  
 church, or more sincerely wished for their reform-

<sup>301</sup> Knights’, Bayle’s, Le Clerc’s, and Jortin’s Lives of Erasmus.  
 Du Pin, cent. xvi. b. 3.



ation, which he flattered himself might be brought about by the gentle method of remonstrances, arguments, and persuasions. Being naturally timid, he was terrified at the violence he observed on both sides. He had not courage to join the reformers, who he believed would be crushed by the superior power of their adversaries. His sincerity would not suffer him to appear in defence of errors and absurdities which he detested and despised. This reserve was offensive to both parties, who attacked him in many publications; almost with equal severity. This led him, in the last years of his life, to spend too much of his time in repelling these attacks. At length this most eminent of the restorers of learning to whose works millions have been indebted for entertainment and instruction, worn out with unremitting study, and a complication of diseases, died at Basil, a Protestant city, in the arms of his Protestant friends, July 12., A.D. 1536., in the sixty-ninth year of his age. In his person he was rather below the middle stature, elegantly but delicately formed, his complexion fair, his hair yellow, his eyes grey, his countenance cheerful, his voice low, his elocution agreeable, and his conversation exceedingly pleasant and facetious. He was a warm and steady friend and a placable enemy, humane and charitable to the indigent, and to young scholars of whom he entertained a good opinion he was liberal and munificent. His reading was extensive, and his memory retentive almost to a miracle. To him the world owes the revival of the *belles lettres*, of  
critical



critical learning, and of a good taste. In a word, he was at once the greatest wit and the most learned man of the age in which he flourished.<sup>302</sup>

Sir Thomas More, Lord Chancellor of England, the great friend and admirer of Erasmus, Sir Thomas More. was, next to him, one of the most ingenious and learned men of his age, and one of the chief restorers of learning. He was born in London A.D. 1480; and being the only son of Sir John More, one of the judges of the King's Bench, great pains were taken in his education, which he received partly at Cambridge, and partly in the family of Cardinal Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury. He gave early and striking proofs of an uncommon genius; and before he was nineteen years of age he had acquired a critical knowledge of the Latin and Greek languages, and had studied rhetoric and several other branches of learning. When he was about twenty, he became a kind of devotee, fasted frequently, wore a hair shirt, slept upon boards, and had a great inclination to enter into the Franciscan order. From this, however, he was diverted by his friends; and in obedience to the commands of his father, whom he never disobeyed, he applied to the study of the law. When he was called to the bar, he soon became conspicuous by the eloquence of his pleadings, and was retained in almost every cause of importance. At the age of twenty-one he made a distinguished figure as a member of the house of commons, in opposition to the court, when opposition was more dangerous than it hath been in later times.

<sup>302</sup> Beatus Rhiranus, vita Erasmi.

In particular, he opposed a bill that was brought into the house, A. D. 1503., for a subsidy and three fifteenths, for the marriage of the Princess Margaret to the King of Scots, with such force of reasoning that it was rejected. At the accession of Henry VIII. Mr. More's reputation and business were both very great. But in the midst of the greatest hurry of business, in which the whole day was occupied, he stole time from his sleep to pursue his favourite studies, to correspond with many learned men at home and abroad, and to compose his *Utopia*, which was published A. D. 1516. It was universally admired, translated into several languages, and raised his reputation not a little. Soon after this, Cardinal Wolsey cast his eyes upon him as a proper person to be employed in the service of the crown, and made him proposals for that purpose, which he at first declined; but afterwards complying, he was knighted, admitted a member of the privy council, appointed master of requests, and treasurer of the exchequer, A. D. 1520. He was employed in several embassies, in which he acquitted himself with ability and success. When Henry VIII. became intimately acquainted with him, he was so charmed with his learning and the pleasantry of his conversation, that he sent frequently for him to entertain and divert him. This was very disagreeable to Sir Thomas, as it consumed too much of his time; and he made use of a stratagem to get rid of this royal interruption which few would have employed. He affected to be very dull and unentertaining several times  
suc-

ſucceſſively, and was no more ſent for; ſacrificing the reputation of a wit and the converſation of a king to ſave his time. Though he was now a courtier and a placeman, he was ſtill a patriot, and boldly oppoſed the meaſures of the favourite miniſter when he thought them wrong. Of this he gave a remarkable proof when he was ſpeaker of the houſe of commons A. D. 1523., which hath been already related<sup>303</sup>. He had the office of chancellor of the duchy of Lancaſter A. D. 1526., and he probably retained it till he was advanced to a higher. At length, on the fall of Cardinal Wolſey, the King fixed upon Sir Thomas More as the moſt proper perſon to ſucceed him as lord chancellor of England; and he was the firſt layman that held that high office. The ſeals were delivered to him October 25th, A. D. 1530., and he accepted of them with real reluctance, for which he had good reaſon. The affair of the divorce, which he diſapproved, was then in agitation; he knew the impetuous ſpirit of the King, that he would not hesitate one moment to ſacrifice thoſe who had been moſt dear to him, when they obſtructed the gratification of a reigning paſſion; and he juſtly apprehended that holding ſo high an office in theſe circumſtances would involve him in difficulties and dangers. He held this office about two years and ſeven months, and diſcharged the duties of it with great ability, integrity, and diligence. The reformers indeed complained, that when he was in power he encouraged and aſſiſted the clergy in all their cru-

<sup>303</sup> See chap. I. ſect. 2.



elties to those who were called heretics; and they give some examples of this that are truly shocking<sup>204</sup>. These complaints were probably exaggerated, but they were not altogether without foundation. Sir Thomas More, with all his great and good qualities, had also great defects. It appears from his own words, that he was devoted to the Pope and clergy in all things, and that his hatred to those who disputed any of their claims, or any of the tenets of the church, was excessive and inveterate; in a word, that he was a superstitious bigot; and there is nothing so apt to pervert the best natures, and prompt them to the worst actions, as superstition and bigotry. He resigned the seals May 16th, A.D. 1533., to avoid the storm which he saw approaching. By the resignation of his office he was reduced at once from opulence to an income of about 100l. a-year. This obliged him to part with his three daughters, their husbands and families, who had all hitherto resided with him, and to dismiss his unnecessary servants. Determined never to engage in public business, he lived with great privacy at his house in Chelsea, spending most of his time in his studies and devotions. But he was not long permitted to enjoy this privacy. The act of supremacy passed A.D. 1534., and the oath enjoined by that act being tendered to him, he refused to take it, and he was sent prisoner to the Tower. While he lay in the Tower, many endeavours were used by his friends to prevail upon him to take the oath; and when arguments failed to

<sup>204</sup> Fox, p. 976. Strype's Memorials, vol. i. p. 201, &c.

persuade,

persuade, both threats and promises were employed: but he remained inflexible. An account of his trial and execution hath been already given, and needs not be repeated; and for a more circumstantial relation of his actions, his writings, his manners, his virtues, and his failings, than the nature and limits of this work will admit, the reader is referred to the works quoted below<sup>305</sup>.

If the exact order of time had been observed, William Grocyn would have been first introduced, as he was in that respect one of the first restorers of learning in England. He was born in Bristol A.D. 1442., educated in grammar at Winchester school, made perpetual fellow of New College A.D. 1467., and presented by that college, A.D. 1479., to the rectory of Newton Longville in Buckinghamshire. His love of study made him still reside at Oxford, where he was appointed divinity reader in Magdalen College A.D. 1483. Having a very strong desire to acquire a perfect knowledge of the Greek language, which was then almost quite unknown in England, he left his country A.D. 1488., in the forty-sixth year of his age, and travelled into Italy. There, in company with several of his countrymen who had come for the same purpose, he studied Latin under Angelo Politian, and Greek under Demetrius Chalcondylas, one of those learned men who had fled from Constantinople when it was taken by the Turks. Under these two excellent instructors he made himself a master of those lan-

William  
Grocyn.

<sup>305</sup> Roper's Life and Death of Thomas More. Stapleton, vita T. Mori. Hoddendiden's Life and Death of Sir T. More. Biographia Britannica, article Sir T. More.

guages in about two years, and returned into England to communicate the knowledge he had acquired. He taught Greek publicly at Oxford A. D. 1591., and was the first who introduced the new pronunciation of that language. He had the famous Erasmus for one of his hearers, with whom he contracted an intimate friendship, and kept him a considerable time in his house. When he left Oxford he came to London, and read lectures on divinity in St. Paul's. He resigned the rectory of Dipden A. D. 1503., and of Newton Longvile the year after; for what reason we do not know. He was elected, A. D. 1506., master of the collegiate church of Maidstone in Kent, where he died A. D. 1522., in the eightieth year of his age. Grocyn's reigning passion was the love of learning, particularly of the Greek, and to inspire his countrymen with the same taste. Some years before his death he formed the design of giving a correct and elegant Latin translation of all Aristotle's works; in which he was promised the assistance of his learned friends Linacer, Latimer, Lily, Collet, and More. But the avocations of his friends, and his own infirmities, prevented the accomplishment of that design.<sup>306</sup>

Doctor.  
Linacer.

Doctor Thomas Linacre, or Linacer, one of the great revivers of learning, and the most polite and elegant scholar of his age, was born at Canterbury A. D. 1460., and educated in the cathedral school of that city, under the learned Mr. William Tilly, who was not a mere school-

<sup>306</sup> A. Wood, Athen. Oxon. Tanner, Bibliotheca Britan. p. 345.

master,



master, but a man of business, and an able negotiator. Being appointed by Henry VII. his ambassador at the court of Rome, he carried his favourite pupil Linacre with him, and introduced him to the most famous professors then in Italy, where he spent several years in the study of *belles lettres* and of medicine. He acquired a perfect knowledge of the Greek under Chalcondylas, and he even excelled his master Politian in the classical purity of his Latin style. His proficiency in medicine was so conspicuous, that he was appointed a professor of it in the university of Padua<sup>307</sup>. On his return home, he was incorporated doctor of physic at Oxford, and soon after he was appointed physician and preceptor to Prince Arthur and his sister Mary. He came into great practice, and was successively physician to Henry VII. and Henry VIII. To shew his love to his profession, he founded two lectures of physic at Oxford and one at Cambridge. He contributed more effectually to rescue the healing arts from the wretched state in which he found them, by his strenuous and successful efforts for the establishment of the royal college of physicians in London, of which he was the first president, and to which he gave his own house for their place of meeting. In the midst of all this business he did not neglect his favourite studies; and his friend Erasmus often rallied him for spending so much of his time in the study of philology. On this subject he wrote the *Rudiments of Grammar*, for the use of his pupil the

<sup>307</sup> Tanner, *Bibliotheca Britan.* p. 432.

Princess Mary, afterwards Queen of France; and a much larger work, *De emandata Structura Latini Sermonis, libri sex*, which was much admired, and passed through many editions. For the benefit of those of his own profession he translated several of Galen's tracts into pure and classical Latin, and in so masterly a manner, that they had the appearance of an original work. When he was advanced in life he applied to the study of theology, was ordained a priest, and obtained several livings and preferments in the church. He died of the stone, October 20th, A. D. 1524. at the age of sixty-four, and was buried in St. Paul's, where a monument was erected to his memory thirty years after, by his great admirer, Doctor John Caius. If we may rely on the character given to Doctor Linacre, by his learned contemporaries who were most intimately acquainted with him, his genius for learning was not his greatest excellence, and his virtues were at least equal to his abilities; in a word, that he was a benefactor to mankind, an honour to literature, and an ornament to human nature<sup>308</sup>. Should such men ever be forgotten?

Doctor  
Collet.

Doctor John Collet was one of those ingenious men who contributed by their united labours to the revival of learning in Britain in this period. He was the first-born of the eleven sons and eleven daughters of Sir Henry Collet (who was twice mayor of London) by his wife Christian, and was

<sup>308</sup> See A. Wood, *Athen. Oxon.* vol. i. col. 15. Pits, p. 693. Dr. Friend's *Hist. Phys.* vol. ii. p. 400, &c. Tanner, p. 482. *Biograph. Britan.*

born in London, A. D. 1466. After he had received the first part of his education in his native city, he spent seven years at Oxford in the study of the logic and philosophy of those times. Not satisfied with the acquisitions he had made at home, he travelled into France and Italy, and spent about four years in those two countries, where he perfected himself in the Latin and Greek languages, and cultivated the acquaintance and friendship of the learned. He entered very early into holy orders, and before he went abroad he had been presented to two livings, and before he returned home he was preferred to a prebendary in York, and to another in St. Martin's-le-Grand, London. When he returned into England he was not only an excellent scholar, but an accomplished gentleman; and being naturally high-spirited, amorous, gay, and sprightly, he seemed fitter for the court than the church. But having a lively sense of the obligations of virtue and religion, and an ardent love of learning, he subdued those propensities which might have betrayed him into a course of life unbecoming his profession, and became as conspicuous for the purity as the politeness of his manners. In Italy he had applied to the study of theology, had perused the New Testament in the original with care, and had read the works of several of the Greek and Latin fathers. After he had stayed a few months in London with his friends and family, he went to Oxford, and read a course of lectures on St. Paul's Epistles, which were received with great applause by crowded audiences.

By



By the influence of his numerous friends, without any sollicitation of his own, he was promoted to several prebendaries in different churches, and to the deanry of St. Paul's, A. D. 1505. Of this last office he discharged the duties with uncommon zeal, by introducing a more strict and regular discipline; by his preaching in the cathedral every Sunday; and by procuring some of his learned friends to read lectures in divinity there on other days. In his sermons on public occasions he censured with great freedom the ignorance and vices of the clergy and the corruptions of the church, which drew upon him a prosecution for heresy, to which he would probably have fallen a sacrifice, if he had not been preserved by the primate, who put a stop to the prosecution. He had been three times seized with that terrible plague the sweating sickness, which threw him into a consumption, of which he died, September 16th, A. D. 1519., in the fifty-third year of his age. As Doctor Collet possessed a plentiful fortune and generous heart, many were benefited by his bounty. His noble foundation of St. Paul's school will be hereafter mentioned. He made many presents to his friend Erasmus, and to other scholars who stood in need of his assistance. He composed much, but published little. Several treatises that were found in an obscure corner of his library were published after his death, and some are still unpublished. In his person he was tall and handsome, in his deportment graceful and engaging, in his manners he was regular without austerity, and

and his preaching was plain and popular. He saw and condemned many of the corruptions of the church, particularly the celibacy of the clergy, auricular confession, the worship of images, and other superstitions. Like his friend Erasmus, he entertained several of the opinions of the reformed before the Reformation, and by his preaching and conversation, he prepared the minds of many for their reception.<sup>309</sup>

William Lily was another of those ingenious and industrious men who were the instruments of reviving learning in Britain, by introducing the study of the Greek and Latin classics. He was born at Odiham the same year (1466.) with his great friend and patron Doctor Collet. When he had finished his school education he went to Oxford, and became a student in Magdalen College. But his stay at the university was not long. Prompted by the reigning superstition of the times he set out on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, which he accomplished. On his journey home he resided five years in the island of Rhodes; and with the assistance of some learned refugees from Constantinople, he acquired a perfect knowledge of the Greek tongue. From thence he went to Rome, and perfected himself in the Latin language under two of the most celebrated professors in that city. On his return to England he opened a school in London for teaching rhetoric, poetry, and the Greek and Latin languages, which soon became famous. When Dean

William  
Lily.

<sup>309</sup> See Doctor Knight's Life of Dean Collet. Tanner, p. 189. Erasmus Epistola Jodoco Jonæ.

Collet had built and endowed his school at St. Paul's, he appointed his friend Mr. Lily its first master A. D. 1511., who presided in it about twelve years with great reputation and success. Among other things he composed a grammar for the use of that school, which is well known by the name of Lily's Grammar in all the schools in England. In this, however, he was assisted by Erasmus, Doctor Collet, and Thomas Robinson, three of the best linguists in Europe; and it was published with a preface composed by the great Cardinal Wolsey, recommending it to universal use. Of such importance did the education of youth in classical learning appear to the greatest men of that age! He composed many other tracts both in prose and verse. This most useful man died of the plague A. D. 1523.<sup>310</sup>

Richard  
Paice.

Richard Paice cultivated the *belles lettres* with great ardour and success, and contributed to introduce a taste for that kind of learning into England. He was born of poor parents in Worcestershire, and was taken when he was very young into the family of Thomas Langton Bishop of Worcester. That prelate observing the ingenuity of young Paice, became his friend and patron, and sent him to Italy, then the seat of polite learning, with a proper exhibition; and in his last will he bequeathed to his scholar Richard Paice 10l. a year (equivalent to 100l. of our money at present) for seven years, to enable him to pursue his studies abroad. Supported by this exhibition, he studied several

<sup>310</sup> Leland, Bale, Pits, Tanner.



years at Padua, Bononia, and Ferrara, where he acquired a critical knowledge of the Greek and Latin languages, and a tincture of other learning. On his return home he resided some time at Oxford for his further improvement, and was then taken into the family of Cardinal Bainbridge Archbishop of York, whence he was called to the court, and appointed Latin secretary to Henry VIII. Being in priest's orders, he obtained several prebends in different churches, and in October A. D. 1519. he succeeded Doctor Collet in the deanry of St. Paul's. While he was secretary to the King he was employed in several embassies, in which he acquitted himself with great ability and success. In his last embassy to the republic of Venice, A. D. 1525., he was seized with a disorder for which the physicians were of opinion his native air would be the only cure; and at his departure the Doge sent a letter to the Cardinal, highly commending the ambassador for his ability, fidelity, and diligence, which concludes thus: "Finally, I assure your most reverend domination, that the reverend lord ambassador hath been most faithful and most diligent in all the affairs of His royal Majesty, and that he hath been most attentive and most studious to please your most reverend domination <sup>311</sup>." But alas! how precarious is court favour! Having in some way or other offended the Cardinal, he was sent prisoner to the Tower; with which he was so much affected that he became insane, and died in that condition A. D. 1532. He appears to have been

<sup>311</sup> Rym. tom. xiv. p. 96.

a worthy man, as well as an excellent scholar, as he lived in the most intimate friendship with Erasmus, More, Tonstal, Linacre, Collet, and other eminent men, both at home and abroad. He learned languages with peculiar facility, and not only spoke several of the modern languages, but understood Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Chaldaic, and Arabic. Though he was much engaged in public employment, he wrote many treatises on theological, political, and other subjects. One of the most curious of these is his tract *De fructu qui ex Doctrina percipitur* — “Of the “benefits that are derived from Learning.”<sup>312</sup>

It is pleasant to remark, that all these restorers of learning in this period were virtuous men and sincere friends; that they co-operated most cordially in promoting the objects they had in view; assisted each other in their labours, and in repelling the attacks that were made upon any of them; and that they advanced the fame of one another by mutual and well-founded commendations. This reflected honour on literature, and contributed not a little to the success of their efforts for its restoration. Emulation is indeed a spur to industry and exertion, and may exist among the sincerest friends; but when it is accompanied and excited by envy and malevolence, it brings reproach upon learning, gives a wrong direction to industry, and renders it rather hurtful than beneficial to society. The wise and virtuous, in their sharpest conflicts, will guard against rancour and asperity.

<sup>312</sup> Bale, Pits, Tanner.

Several other men of learning and genius flourished in England at this period; as Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Tonsal Bishop of Durham, Sir John Cheke, John Leland, &c. &c.

A taste for the study of polite learning, or the *belles lettres*, revived in Scotland about the same time that it revived in England; and this taste was cherished by government, and even enforced by law. By an act of parliament already quoted, every freeholder of substance was obliged to keep his eldest son at some grammar school till he had acquired a perfect knowledge of the Latin language, and then to put him three years to some university to study philosophy and the laws. In consequence of this prevailing taste, a competency at least of learning became gradually more general among the gentlemen, and even among the common people of Scotland, than in any other country of Europe; and several ingenious men in this period became eminent for their classical erudition. But of these our limits will permit us only to mention a very few.

Gavin Douglas, Bishop of Dunkeld, was not only one of the greatest poets, but also one of the best scholars and most amiable men of his age. He was the third son of Archibald, commonly called Bell the Cat, sixth Earl of Angus, and uncle to Archibald the seventh Earl, who married Margaret Queen-dowager of Scotland, the eldest sister of Henry VIII.<sup>313</sup> He was born about 1472., and having early discovered a taste

<sup>313</sup> Hume's History of the Douglasses, p. 219.



for learning, he was destined for the church, in which, from the power and influence of his family, he had a prospect of the highest promotions. He received the first part of his education at home, and when he had gone through a course of philosophy in the university of St. Andrew's, he went to Paris for his further improvement. There he spent several years in study, and acquired an uncommon stock of knowledge of various kinds, though he delighted most in poetry and the *belles lettres*. On his return to Scotland he was promoted to the provostry of St. Giles in Edinburgh, and to several other livings, and among others to the rich abbey of Arbroath. He enjoyed little comfort in this promotion, owing to the troubles in which his country was involved in the minority of James V. He was presented by the Queen-regent to the Archbishopric of St. Andrew's; but he had two formidable competitors, John Hepburn the prior, elected by the chapter, and Andrew Foreman Bishop of Moray, nominated by the Pope; and he soon relinquished his claim, and left the other two to contend for the prize. Apprehensive of danger in his own country, from the violence of faction, he obtained a safe-conduct for himself and thirty persons in his company, to come into England, from Henry VIII. January 23d, A. D. 1515.<sup>314</sup> But he did not make use of that safe-conduct; for the bishopric of Dunkeld becoming vacant, he obtained it by a bull from Leo X., and was consecrated by James Beaton, Archbishop

<sup>314</sup> Rymer, tom. xiii. p. 472.

of Glasgow, the same year. But as he owed his promotion to a papal bull, he was imprisoned by the Duke of Albany a whole year for trafficking with Rome. This was a severe and partial act. The primate Archbishop Foreman had been promoted only a few months before in the same manner without incurring any censure. This severity to so near a relation and so good a man, so much alarmed the Queen and her husband the Earl of Angus, that they retired into England. The Earl after some time was prevailed upon to return, and his uncle was set at liberty. When the Duke of Albany returned to France A. D. 1517., he carried the Bishop of Dunkeld with him, under a pretence of doing him honour, but in reality as a hostage for the good behaviour of his nephew and his friends in his absence. The Bishop was permitted to return home the year after with the ratification of the ancient alliance between France and Scotland. In the fierce contest that ensued between the Hamiltons and Douglasses, our good prelate acted the part of a peace-maker with great zeal, but without success: and after the defeat of the Hamiltons in the streets of Edinburgh, he saved the life of the Archbishop of Glasgow, who had acted the part of an incendiary. When the Duke of Albany returned to Scotland A. D. 1521., the persecution of the Douglasses was renewed, and our prelate retired privately into England to avoid the storm, and to prepare an asylum for his friends. As soon as his retreat was known, all his goods were confiscated, and

the revenues of his see sequestered <sup>315</sup>. He met with a most kind reception from Henry VIII., and was careſſed by all the moſt eminent perſons in the court of England. In the mean time the archbiſhopric of St. Andrew's became vacant, and Henry exerted all his influence at the court of Rome to procure the promotion of the Biſhop of Dunkeld to that ſee. His competitor, the Archbiſhop of Glaſgow, (whoſe life he had lately ſaved,) wrote to Chriſtian King of Denmark, earneſtly intreating him to counteract the intereſt of the King of England at the court of Rome with all his might, and giving his rival a moſt odious character, as a rebel to his king and an enemy to his country <sup>316</sup>. But a ſuperior power put an end to this conteſt. The Biſhop of Dunkeld died of the plague at London in April A. D. 1522. <sup>317</sup> As the works of this learned and excellent but unfortunate prelate, which do ſo much honour to his name and country, were poetical, they come moſt properly into the hiſtory of poetry, in the next chapter of this book.

Patrick  
Panter.

Patrick Panter, Latin ſecretary to King James IV., was one of thoſe who, by applying with peculiar ardour to the acquiſition of claſſical learning, and the imitation of the writers of the Auguſtanage, contributed to introduce a better taſte, and to give a better direction to the ſtudies of their countrymen, than that which had long prevailed. He was born in the town of Montroſe about A. D. 1470.; and having gone through a courſe of edu-

<sup>315</sup> *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, tom. i. p. 328. <sup>316</sup> *Ibid.* p. 333.

<sup>317</sup> *Buchan. lib. xiv. Lesly, lib. ix. Spottiswoode, Tanner, Bale.*



cation at home, he went to Paris, (as was then the custom,) where he spent several years in the prosecution of his studies. On his return to Scotland he entered into holy orders, became rector of Fetterrisslo in the Mearns, master of *Domus Dei* in Brechin, and preceptor to Alexander Stewart the King's natural son. In that office he acquitted himself so well, that when his pupil was put under the care of the great Erasmus about A. D. 1505., his royal master rewarded him with the abbacy of Cambuskenneth, and took him into his own service as his secretary; a station for which he was peculiarly fitted, and in which he did honour to his King, his country, and himself, by the elegance and classical purity of the language of his dispatches<sup>318</sup>. In that office he continued during the King's life and the regency of the Queen. As he was attached to the party of the Queen and her second husband the Earl of Angus, he was represented as a dangerous man to the Duke of Albany, who, on some pretence or other, threw him into prison. But when that prince was better informed of his worth and abilities, he released him from prison, restored him to his office, and carried him with him into France. There he fell into a lingering disease, of which he died at Paris A. D. 1519.<sup>319</sup>

Hector Boethius, or Boyce, was a native of Dundee, and born about A. D. 1466. After he had finished a course of education in the university of St. Andrew's, he went to Paris, where he

<sup>318</sup> See *Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*, Edinburgi 1722.

<sup>319</sup> *Præfat. Epistolæ Regum Scotorum*.

studied several years in the college of Montacute, in which he was advanced to a professor's chair. On his return to Scotland he was appointed principal of the newly-founded university of Aberdeen, and had some other preferments in the church. When he resided in France he contracted a friendship with Erasmus, by whom he was much esteemed and commended, for his taste, his learning, and other good qualities. He composed several treatises upon various subjects; but his principal work was—*Historia rerum Scoticarum a prima gentis origine ad A. D. 1436.*—"A History of the Scots from the Origin of the Nation to the Year 1436." It is with the style of this work only that we are here concerned, and that hath been highly admired, and affords a sufficient proof of his good taste and classical erudition, which entitles him to be ranked among the restorers of learning.<sup>320</sup>

An account of several other writers who flourished in Scotland in this period, and contributed in some degree to the revival of learning, might be here inserted; but this would exceed our limits, and too many readers of general history would appear tedious. It is sufficient to remark, that the youth of Scotland at this time, in proportion to their numbers, discovered as good a taste, and as great a thirst for knowledge, as those of England, though they laboured under some disadvantages; particularly many of them not finding proper establishments at home, were obliged to seek for them in foreign countries. The history of John

<sup>320</sup> Nicolson's Scots Hist. Tanner, Bale, Dempster.

Lesley Bishop of Ross, and of his great opponent in politics Mr. George Buchannan, belongs to the succeeding period.

### SECTION III.

*History of the principal Seminaries of Learning that were founded in Great Britain from A. D. 1485. to A. D. 1547.*

**T**HOUGH many superb and richly endowed schools and colleges for the education of youth and encouragement of learning had been already established in Britain, particularly in England, their numbers and riches still continued to increase. In our present period of only sixty-two years, three colleges were founded in Oxford and five in Cambridge, and the two illustrious schools of Ipswich and St. Paul's. In Scotland a new university was founded at Aberdeen, and a new college in St. Andrew's. Of all which foundations and their founders a very brief account shall now be given.

Brazen-nose College in Oxford was founded on the site of Brazen-nose-hall (from which it derived its name) by William Smith Bishop of Lincoln, and Sir Richard Sutton of Presbury in Cheshire. These two founders having purchased certain contiguous halls, houses, and gardens, in Oxford, obtained a charter from Henry VIII. A. D. 1511., authorising them to build their intended college, and to purchase and endow it with lands to the value of 300l.



a-year. The buildings were then begun, but Bishop Smith, one of the founders, died before they were finished. The foundation-charter for the college, to consist of a principal, twelve fellows, and sixty scholars, was executed by Sir Richard Sutton, the surviving founder, February 1st, A. D. 1521. The revenues of this college, as well as those of all the other colleges in Oxford, were very much increased by a succession of benefactors.<sup>321</sup>

Corpus  
Christi  
College.

Richard Fox, successively Bishop of Exeter, Bath, Durham, and Winchester, was the founder of Corpus Christi College in Oxford. This prelate acted an important part both in church and state in the reigns of Henry VII. and of Henry VIII. When he was prosecuting his studies at Paris, he became acquainted with Cardinal Morton, (then in exile,) who prevailed upon him to join Henry Earl of Richmond in his expedition into England, A. D. 1485. He had no reason to repent of that step. The expedition was successful, the Earl mounted the throne, Doctor Fox was immediately admitted into the council, and appointed keeper of the privy seal. Few were more employed or better rewarded by Henry VII. in whose reign he was successively promoted to the sees of Exeter, Bath and Wells, Durham, and Winchester. In his old age, he began to consider how he should dispose of the riches he had accumulated, and his first intention was to build a small college in Oxford, to be a seminary for the education of the novices of the priory of St. Swith-

<sup>321</sup> A. Wood, Hist. Univerf. Oxon. lib. ii. p. 212, &c.

in, his cathedral in Winchester. But when the building was far advanced, he was persuaded by Hugh Oldham Bishop of Exeter, to change his plan, and to found a much larger college, for the benefit of studious youth in general, to which he promised to become a benefactor. In compliance with this advice, he founded, by a charter dated March 1st, A. D. 1517., a college for a principal and thirty scholars, to be called *Corpus Christi* College, in Oxford. He founded also three lectureships in the college; one for the *belles lettres*, of which John Ludovicus Vives was the first reader; one for the Greek language, and one for theology. Bishop Oldham performed his promise, by contributing 1000 marks to the buildings, and by the grant of an estate. His example was followed by many other benefactors.<sup>322</sup>

Cardinal Wolsey was one of those men whose minds expand with their fortunes. Though his birth was humble, when he attained to power and opulence he displayed a most magnificent and princely spirit. Of this the noble plan he formed, and the splendid extensive preparations he made, for founding a college in Oxford, which, for the magnificence of its structure, the richness of its furniture, the number of its members, and the greatness of its revenues, would have exceeded every seminary of learning in the world, afford a sufficient proof. To accomplish this, he obtained two bulls from Pope Clement VII. empowering him (with the King's consent) to dissolve the priory of St. Frideswade in Oxford, and as many

Cardinal  
College.

<sup>322</sup> A. Wood, Hist. Univers. Oxon. lib. ii. p. 230.



other small religious houses as he thought proper, and to apply their revenues, lands, and goods to the endowment of his intended college<sup>322</sup>. To the execution of these bulls the King gave his consent, and granted him a charter, dated July 3d. A. D. 1525. authorising him to found a college in Oxford, to be called Cardinal College, and to endow it with lands and revenues to the amount of 2000l. a-year<sup>323</sup>: a very great revenue in those times. The year after, the King granted the Cardinal for the benefit of his college no fewer than five charters, containing a great number of privileges and immunities, with a power of impropriating about seventy rectories, in addition to its revenues<sup>324</sup>. The Cardinal having thus provided ample revenues for the members of his college, the foundation of it was laid July 15th, A. D. 1525.; and, as great numbers of artificers of all kinds were employed, the buildings advanced with great rapidity. As soon as apartments were ready for their reception, he introduced a dean and eighteen canons, which he designed afterwards to increase to one hundred and eighty, or two hundred. In the mean-time he expended prodigious sums of money, not only on the buildings, but in providing statues, pictures, plate, jewels, books, vestments, furniture, and every thing that could be either useful or ornamental to his favourite establishment. He prepared also a book of statutes for its government; from which it appears that it was to have consisted

<sup>322</sup> Rym. tom. xiv. p. 15. 32.

<sup>323</sup> Ibid. p. 39.

<sup>324</sup> Ibid. p. 55—75. Strype, vol. i. Append. No. 28, 29.



of a dean, a sub-dean, sixty canons of the first class, forty canons of the second class, (who were all to devote themselves to study,) thirteen chaplains, twelve clerks, sixteen choristers for performing the service in the college church, four censors, three treasurers, four collectors, and twenty servants. In a word, the Cardinal neglected nothing to render his college (which he expected would transmit his name with honour to posterity) superior in all respects to every other college. But he neglected one thing, which proved fatal to the whole. Being under no apprehension of his disgrace, which fell upon him like a clap of thunder, he neglected to execute the foundation charter, and convey the revenues, lands, and goods to the college, which he had provided for it with so much care. All these, therefore, being still his own property, when he was found in a premunire, they were forfeited to the King<sup>325</sup>. The spoil was great, and it was seized with eagerness. The lands were sold, or granted to craving courtiers, and all the precious moveables dissipated. Thus fell Cardinal College before it was half finished, to the no small regret of the friends of learning; as it prevented the execution of a design which the Cardinal had formed, of procuring copies of all the MSS. in the Vatican for the library of his college.

After all the works of Cardinal College had been interrupted about four years, and the unfinished buildings tended to ruin, the King was prevailed upon to found a college in the same place, to be

College of  
Henry  
VIII.

<sup>325</sup> Wood, lib. ii. p. 246.

called the College of King Henry VIII. But though this was a royal foundation, it was on a much smaller scale than that of the Cardinal; as it consisted only of a dean and twelve secular canons. Nor was this college of much longer duration than the former. Doctor John Oliver, the second dean, resigned his college and all its revenues to the King May 20th, A.D. 1545.<sup>326</sup>

Christ's  
Church.

Henry having thus dissolved his own college, he soon after made it the seat and cathedral of the Bishop of Oxford, by the name of the Cathedral of Christ's Church in Oxford, founded by Henry VIII. This new society was composed of a bishop, a dean, and eight canons. To the dean and canons he granted all the buildings, lands, and revenues of his late college, on condition that they paid the following stipends to the following persons: to eight minor canons, each 10l.; to a gospeller, 8l.; to a postellator, 6l. 13s. 4d.; to eight clerks, each 6l. 13s. 4d.; to the master of the singing boys, 13l. 6s. 8d.; to the organist, 10l.; to eight singing boys, each 7l. 13s. 4d.; to three public professors in the university, one of theology, one of Hebrew, and one of Greek, each 40l.; to sixty scholars or students, each 8l.; to the first schoolmaster, 20l.; to the second schoolmaster, 10l.; forty school-boys.<sup>327</sup>

The number of colleges founded in Cambridge in this period exceeds that of those founded in Oxford, if we reckon Cardinal College, the Col-

<sup>326</sup> Wood, lib. ii. p. 251. Rym. tom. xiv. p. 443.

<sup>327</sup> Wood, lib. ii. p. 246.

lege of Henry VIII., and Christ's Church, only one foundation.

The nuns of St. Radigund in Cambridge, had become so profligate that they were expelled, and their house, with its revenues and lands, (which were of considerable value,) were granted by Henry VII. A.D. 1496., to John Alcock Bishop of Ely, who converted the nunnery into a college, for one master, six fellows, and six scholars, and dedicated it to Jesus, the Virgin Mary, and St. Radigund. The revenues of this college were afterwards increased by many benefactors.<sup>328</sup>

Jesus  
College.

The Lady Margaret Countess of Richmond, and mother to Henry VII., founded Christ's College in Cambridge A.D. 1505., for one master, twelve fellows, and forty-seven scholars, and endowed it with lands of considerable value in several counties.<sup>329</sup>

Christ's  
College.

The same illustrious lady founded St. John's College in this university A.D. 1508., but did not live to see it finished; the works however were carried on and completed by her executors. Several of the estates that had been granted to this college, to the amount of 400l. a-year, were evicted from it in the reign of Edward VI., whether justly or unjustly cannot now be discovered, though Mr. Ascham affirms it was owing to the rapacity of greedy courtiers.<sup>330</sup> This loss, however, was repaired by a long train of forty-eight benefactors, which en-

St. John's  
College.

<sup>328</sup> Fuller's Hist. Univer. Camb. p. 85.

<sup>329</sup> Ibid. p. 90.

<sup>330</sup> Ibid. p. 94.



abled this foundation to support a master, fifty-four fellows, and eighty-eight scholars, with officers and servants.

Maudlin  
College.

Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, one of the greatest subjects in England, designed to have enlarged the buildings and revenues of an old house called Monk's College, and to have given it the name of Buckingham college. But before he had proceeded far in the execution of this design, he was tried, condemned, and executed for high treason May 17th, A. D. 1521. After the buildings had been several years suspended, Thomas Lord Audley, Chancellor of England, founded and endowed a college on the same site, which he named Magdalen, commonly called Maudlin College.<sup>331</sup>

Trinity  
College.

Henry VIII. having got possession of three adjacent halls, razed them to the ground, and erected on the area, and richly endowed, a large, regular, and magnificent college A. D. 1536., dedicated to the holy and undivided Trinity, and thence called Trinity College. Great additions have been made to the revenues of this college by subsequent benefactors, which have rendered it one of the greatest, richest, and most noble foundations of the kind in Europe. Henry at the same time founded four professorships in Cambridge; one of theology, one of law, one of Hebrew, and one of Greek; with each a salary of 40l. a year.<sup>332</sup>

Though the universities of Scotland are not to be compared with those of England, for the

<sup>331</sup> Fuller's Hist. Univer. Camb. p. 121.

<sup>332</sup> Ibid. p. 122. 124.

number of their colleges, their magnificence, and the greatness of their revenues; yet they seem, in some respect, to have advantages, of which I shall only mention one at present. Being four in number, and situated in different cities of the kingdom, they are better known and more accessible. Every one knows that there is an university at no great distance from him, and that he may give his son an university education without sending him far from home. In consequence of this, a tincture of learning at least is very general in Scotland, where there are no clergymen, and very few gentlemen, who have not had an university education.

With a view to this particular advantage, James IV. applied to Pope Alexander VI. to give his sanction to the establishment of an university in his city of Aberdeen, for the accommodation of the people of the northern and highland parts of his dominions, who, being at a great distance from the seats of learning, were more rude and ignorant than his other subjects. In compliance with this application, the Pope (without whom nothing could be done in those times) issued a bull at Rome February 10th, A. D. 1494., erecting an university in the city of Old Aberdeen, for the study of theology, civil and canon law, medicine, the liberal arts and sciences, and all lawful faculties, and granting it all the immunities, rights, and privileges enjoyed by any other university or general study. By this bull of erection, the Pope appointed William Elphinston, Bishop of Aberdeen,



deen, (who was the real founder,) to be chancellor of the new university, and his successors in the see of Aberdeen to succeed him in that office. The bull was confirmed by a charter A.D. 1498.; in which the King appropriated the parish church of Slains, with its tithes and patronage, which received, by a subsequent bull A.D. 1500., an extensive and independent jurisdiction both in ecclesiastical and temporal questions. The first foundation was established by the Bishop in 1505., and contained thirty-six persons; a principal, canonist, civilian, a professor of medicine, a sub-principal, and grammarian, five masters of arts, studying theology, and instructing the scholars in poetry and rhetoric; thirteen scholars, eight prebendaries to officiate as chaplains, and four singing-boys. But the Bishop was afterwards enabled to enlarge the foundation, by a more liberal endowment, for forty-two persons; four doctors, eight masters, and three bachelors of arts, thirteen scholars, eight chaplains, and six singing-boys. The masters remained in the university six years, studying theology and teaching the arts; after which they obtained the degree of doctor, and removed from the university to make way for others. The experience of thirty-six years discovered that a succession of new teachers was extremely inconvenient, and that the masters dismissed after six years study were not always sufficiently qualified to be doctors of divinity. Another papal bull was therefore obtained A.D. 1538., permitting those that studied divinity to reside



reside in the university, and exercise their functions during the chancellor's pleasure, and till others were qualified and desirous to succeed them.

A second college was founded in the university of St. Andrew's in this period, by James Stewart, natural son of James IV., the Archbishop, and John Hepburn the prior, and the chapter of St. Andrew's, called the College of Poor Clerks, or St. Leonard's College, from its vicinity to St. Leonard's church. It appears from the foundation-charter, that there had been an hospital in the same place, for the reception and entertainment of pilgrims of different nations, who crowded to St. Andrew's, to pay their devotions to the arm of St. Andrew, which wrought a great many miracles. At length, however, the saint's arm being tired with that laborious kind of work, or thinking he had done enough, the miracles and the conflux of pilgrims ceased, and the hospital was deserted. The prior and convent, who had been the founders and were the patrons of the hospital, then filled it with old women. But these old women produced little or no fruit of virtue or devotion, and were turned out. The prior and convent having repaired the church and hospital of St. Leonard, resolved to convert them into a college, to consist of a master, or principal; four chaplains, two of which were to be regents; and twenty scholars, who were first to be taught the languages, and then the liberal arts and sciences; and six of them who  
were

were thought most fit, should then apply with great ardour and vehement reading to the study of theology under the principal. Such of these scholars as were found fittest for it were to be taught music, both plain song and descant. The foundation-charter to this purpose was executed by the archbishop, the prior, and chapter, at St. Andrew's, August 20th, A. D. 1512. By another charter the prior and chapter endowed this college with all the houses, lands, and revenues which had belonged to St. Leonard's hospital. Both these charters were confirmed by royal charter, dated at Edinburgh February 20th, A. D. 1513.<sup>333</sup>

Nurseries for the education of youth, and preparing them for the universities, were not now wanting in any considerable town in Britain; and some very illustrious ones were found in this period; as St. Paul's school by Doctor Collet, Ipswich school by Cardinal Wolsey, Westminster school by Henry VIII., and many others, both in England and Scotland.

<sup>333</sup> Ex Archiv. Univerf. St. And.

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER V.

History of the Arts in Great Britain, from the  
Accession of Henry VII. A. D. 1485. to the  
Accession of Edward VI. A. D. 1547.

SECTION I.

*History of the necessary and useful Arts.*

**F**ROM the accession of the Tudors, and the  
union or extinction of those factions that  
distracted England, a period of comparative tran-  
quillity commences; a long period, protracted  
almost to the middle of the seventeenth century,  
during which the English nation was neither ex-  
hausted by its wars abroad, nor much disquieted



by domestic sedition. Such repose was propitious to arts and commerce; and the country, recovering from the calamities of internal discord, continued afterwards in a state of flow, but progressive improvement. A few years suffice to repair the disasters inflicted by war; but during the period allotted to the present volume, the effects of the civil wars were sometimes prolonged, after the causes from which they originated had ceased to operate.

Agriculture exchanged for pasturage.

To the devastations produced by the civil wars may be justly attributed the decay of population, and in some measure the decrease and disappearance both of predial and domestic servitude. The bondsmen, so numerous formerly, were either consumed in battle, emancipated for their services, or enabled, by the frequent fluctuations of property, to regain their freedom. Proprietors were obliged to convert into pasturage those demesnes which their slaves and cottagers had formerly cultivated<sup>334</sup>; and while the estates of either party were alternately wasted, it was soon discovered that flocks and herds were better adapted, than the produce of agriculture, to such troublesome times. They might be removed with ease on the irruption of an enemy, or disposed of secretly, if the proprietor were involved in the misfortunes of his party. A measure recommended by its expediency was generally adopted, and continued prevalent, when no necessity required such precaution. When government, under Henry VII. and his son, had attained

<sup>334</sup> See vol. x. ch. 5. sect. 1.

to stability, when its vigour repressed the depredations of the barons, and precluded the danger of a future revolution, the conversion of arable lands into pasture, increased through England to a dangerous extreme. Inclosures were multiplied, demesne lands were extended, till the farms of the husbandmen were appropriated to pasture; their houses were demolished or permitted to decay, while a few herdsmen, fewer than are usually allotted to pasturage, supplanted the yeomen, and occupied, by means of inclosures, the largest estates<sup>335</sup>. Landlords, it is probable, were still desirous of retaining the management of those lands, the culture of which they had formerly conducted by their villains or cottagers; and their tenants accustomed hitherto to the most moderate rents, were unwilling to submit to an unusual advance. But the circumstances most detrimental to agriculture may be discovered in the restrictions attending the exportation of grain, and the constant, perhaps the increasing consumption of English wool. At a former period, the exportation of corn had, in certain circumstances, been permitted, and its importation regulated by different statutes<sup>336</sup>; but by these statutes a discretionary control was committed to the King; and there is reason to believe that the operations of prerogative were seldom favourable, or exerted, unless for the purpose of partial monopolies and pernicious restraints. During the present

<sup>335</sup> Bacon, p. 44. Hollingshed's Description of England, p. 205. Strype, vol. i. p. 392. Stowe, p. 512.

<sup>336</sup> See vol. x. ch. 5. sect. 1. ch. 6.



period, the manufacture of cloth was encouraged and augmented, by the refinement of Europe in taste and dress; and although the manufactures of England were now considerable, those of the Netherlands were still supported by large exportations that increased the demand, and enhanced the value of English wool. A system of management, lucrative but pernicious, was thus promoted; lucrative to landholders, but pernicious to the country.

The system was severely felt in its consequences; in the beggary and diminished population of the peasants. Hamlets were ruined by oppressive encroachments; townships and villages of an hundred families were reduced to thirty, sometimes to ten. Some were desolate, demolished by the avarice of unfeeling proprietors: others were occupied by a shepherd and his dog<sup>337</sup>. These representations are transmitted by cotemporaries, and perhaps are exaggerated; yet a country appropriated to pasturage is thinly inhabited, and must be depopulated, by inclosures multiplied for the purpose of rearing sheep, and retrenching herdsmen. England, at a subsequent period, was regarded as better adapted for grazing than tillage; and in the reign of Elizabeth, the lands in culture were computed at a fourth of the kingdom<sup>338</sup>; yet the legislature were never inattentive, but interposed repeatedly (with what success may be justly suspected) to enforce cultivation, and repress the inordinate increase of pastures.

<sup>337</sup> Strype, vol. i. p. 392. Latimer's Sermons, p. 12.

<sup>338</sup> Stowe, p. 2. Hollinghed. p. 108.



Early in Henry the Seventh's reign, a statute was enacted for the future support of those houses of husbandry, to which twenty acres had been formerly annexed ; sanctioned by the forfeiture of half the rents, till the lands were occupied, and the houses rebuilt <sup>339</sup>. Severe forfeitures are not easily exacted ; and it appears that a practice dictated by private gain, was neither suppressed by the vigilance of law, nor counteracted by the legal extortion of the monarch. A statute enacted under his successor, expatiates in the preamble, with apparent truth, on the extent of the mischief, and feelingly enumerates the complicated miseries which the increase of sheep, and extension of pastures, had inflicted on the poor <sup>340</sup>. The flocks of individuals, which sometimes exceeded, and often amounted to twenty thousand sheep, were restricted to two thousand ; an inadequate remedy, frustrated apparently by the partial exception of hereditary opulence. Had the restraints imposed on the exportation of corn been transferred to wool, the internal consumption would have soon regulated the respective prices of those articles ; the proportion between arable and pasture lands would soon have been adjusted, and the declining cultivation of the country prevented. An improved cultivation was reserved, however, for a future period, when persecutions extirpated manufactures from the Netherlands ; when the exportation of English wool had subsided, and its price diminished, the farmer or landholder, disappointed of his former exuber-

<sup>339</sup> Stat. 4 Hen. VII. c. 19. Bacon, p. 44.

<sup>340</sup> 25 Hen. VIII. c. 12.

ant profits, discovered the necessity of resuming the plough, and again restoring his pastures to culture.

State of  
Agriculture.

While husbandry suffered such general discountenance, much improvement in its operations is not to be expected. A treatise of husbandry, ascribed to Fitzherbert, judge of the Common Pleas to Henry VIII., explains those operations chiefly practised and most approved. The instruments were nearly the same with ours; and as they have continued, during successive generations, with little alteration, are probably not susceptible of much improvement. The operations of husbandry were conducted apparently with more skill than in former periods. Directions are given for draining, clearing, and inclosing a farm; and for enriching and reducing the soil to tillage. Lime and marl are strongly recommended, but appear to have seldom been employed as manure. Fallowing was practised as preparatory to wheat, but not that rotation of crops and fallows which invigorates the soil or preserves its nutrition<sup>341</sup>. When a field was exhausted by successive harvests the farmer suffered it to rest till recruited, and proceeded to cultivate a fresh field from a part of his pastures. An improved cultivation is produced by the skill and traditional knowledge which farmers accumulate; and the produce of their labour may enable us to estimate with sufficient precision their knowledge and skill. Sixteen and twenty bushels are assigned by Hollingshed as

<sup>341</sup> Fitzherbert's Surveyinge & Husbandrie, 1539, reprinted London 1767.

the usual return of an acre of wheat<sup>342</sup>; a poor return, that argues a sordid degree of cultivation; yet let us remember that at present, in the fertile and beautiful vale of Gloucester, eighteen bushels are the common produce obtained from an acre<sup>343</sup>. The prices were various; in years of scarcity seldom exceeding the present rates; but in those of abundance, from a restricted exportation, too low perhaps to afford an adequate recompence to the farmer. The greatest dearth appears to have happened in 1486., when the quarter of wheat sold at 1l. 4s. (equal to 1l. 17s. of our present money); but in subsequent years the prices subsided sometimes to 4s. (equal to 6s. of our modern coin). Famine and pestilence afflicted the country in 1521., and raised the quarter to 20s. (about 1l. 11s.); but in 1527., though many perished in London from hunger, a large and seasonable importation from Dantzick restricted the price to 15s.<sup>344</sup> It is observable that the dearths so frequent in former times, are generally attributed by our ancient chronicles to the rigour of the seasons; and with some truth, for whenever the culture is languid, every unexpected alteration of weather must influence the harvest, and produce an immediate deficiency of grain.

Leases, though not uncommon, were hitherto precarious; neither protecting the tenant from the entry of purchasers, nor securing his interest

<sup>342</sup> Hollingshed, p. 110.

<sup>343</sup> Marshal's Rural Economy of Gloucestershire, vol. i. p. 129.

<sup>344</sup> Stowe, p. 471. 481. 526. 536.



against the operation of fictitious recoveries. To reinstate him when expelled by a new proprietor, an action of ejectment was sustained, about the 14 Hen. VII. in courts of law; but to restore him against a recovery required and obtained the authority of a statute<sup>345</sup>. Leases for three existing lives are recommended by Fitzherbert, to enable tenants whose sole stock is their personal labour, to surround their farms, and divide them by hedges into proper inclosures; by which operation, he says, "If an acre of lande be worth six pens, or it be inclosed, it will be worth eight pens when it is inclosed, by reason of the compostyng and dongyng of the catell<sup>346</sup>." But the advantage which he chiefly proposes to the farmer is more economical, the preservation of his corns without the expence of maintaining herdsmen. England, it is probable, to a fordid practice introduced into pasturage and adopted in husbandry, is indebted for those inclosures and minute subdivisions which distinguish its appearance from other countries, which increase its fertility, and bestow on its plains the interchangeable diversity of rich culture and luxurious woodlands.

Scotland.

Scotland during the present period had her historians; but such historians as were too much enamoured of great achievements to record the

<sup>345</sup> Blackstone, vol. iii. p. 199. 21 Hen. VIII. c. 5. The action of ejectment was perhaps of an earlier date; but its benefit was not extended to tenants till this period.

<sup>346</sup> Surveyinge, p. 95.

minute,

minute, yet instructive, incidents of their own times. The situation of their country, of its arts and commerce, is seldom mentioned, or described so slightly that it is impossible to discover, not perhaps to conjecture with precision, the state of cultivation to which the country had attained. Its lands had formerly been held in *ward*, a military tenure, in Scotland peculiarly oppressive; on the feudal forfeiture, or during the wardship of the vassal, every subordinate grant was suspended; his tenants were removed, his sub-vassals ejected by the lord of the fee. Infeudations for rent had in 1457. been recommended, perhaps ineffectually, by parliament; but a statute enacted in 1503.<sup>347</sup>, authorized the King and his vassals to make such infeudations for an adequate rent, and exempted the grants from the operation of ward. A partial cultivation was thus promoted; but the peasant's possession was either precarious, or his lease, which seldom extended to five years, of a duration too short to encourage improvement. His possession was precarious, but it was maintained by a general combination against intruders; new tenants were removed by murder, and the peasants, according to a cotemporary, neither inclosed nor planted, nor endeavoured to ameliorate the sterility of the soil<sup>348</sup>. A persuasion prevails that Scotland formerly was a cultivated country; but the state of agriculture must have been poor and languid that required for its encouragement a new tenure, and a perpetuity instead of a temporary interest. The summit of a

<sup>347</sup> Black Acts, p. 42. 57.<sup>348</sup> Major's Hist. p. 7.

mountain may be marked by the plough; but before the vallies were cleared of wood, tillage was necessarily confined to hills. Religious houses might derive a large revenue of wheat from lands productive of none at present; but before the establishment of regular markets, while the articles of commerce were procured with difficulty, feudal proprietors stipulated with their vassals for whatever their domestic consumption required. Wheat at a future period was supplied from England, for the produce of the country consisted chiefly of oats and barley.<sup>349</sup>

Garden-  
ing.

Gardening, during the distractions of the civil wars, had been much neglected; but now it was prosecuted with more assiduity, and with such success, that to the present period is ascribed the introduction of various fruits and vegetables formerly known and produced in England. The fruit-garden was enriched indeed by large accessions from foreign countries, and apricots, melons, and currants from Zante were introduced, for the first time, in the sixteenth century, about the middle of Henry the Eighth's reign<sup>350</sup>. That sallads, cabbages, and other vegetables were unknown till then, is a general, but I believe a mistaken, opinion. Sallads are mentioned early in Edward the Fourth's reign; and if we may credit Hollingshed, cabbages, turnips, and other roots, the produce of the garden, had been known and cultivated,

<sup>349</sup> Pyne Moryson's Itinerary, part.iii. p. 155.

<sup>350</sup> Anderson, vol. i. p. 338. 355. 362.

but



but afterwards neglected<sup>351</sup>. The introduction of the cherry is also ascribed to the latter part of the present period, but we have discovered it already in the thirteenth century; nor was it afterwards extirpated or forgotten in England.<sup>352</sup>

Gardening, however, was practised more for Parks. utility than pleasure, and consisted chiefly in the culture of esculent herbs and fruits. The pleasure-garden was reserved, I believe, for Elizabeth's reign, when a square parterre was inclosed with walls, scooped into fountains, and heaved into terraces. Yet the large and numerous parks of the nobility may be regarded either as contracted forests, or extended gardens<sup>353</sup>. Their extent comprehended several miles, and their number, in Kent and Essex alone, amounted to an hundred<sup>354</sup>. Such large inclosures were peculiar to England, and better entitled to the appellation of pleasure-grounds, than those gardens of a future period, that exhi-

<sup>351</sup> Fenn's Original Letters, vol. i. p. 288. Hollingshed, p. 208.

<sup>352</sup> Vide vol. viii. ch. 5. It appears to have been common, from the following rude verses, printed anno 1496., but composed, perhaps, at an earlier period:

“Who, that mannyth hym wyth his kyne,  
 “And clofyth his crofte wyth cherry trees;  
 “Shall have many hegges brokynne,  
 “And also full lytyll good servyes.”

HERBERT's Typographical Antiquities, vol. i. p. 129.

<sup>353</sup> Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, vol. iv. p. 126.

<sup>354</sup> Hollingshed, p. 204. The Earl of Northumberland possessed in Northumberland, Cumberland, and Yorkshire, twenty-one parks, containing five thousand seven hundred and seventy-one red and fallow deer, from which his table was supplied with twenty bucks in summer and twenty-nine does in winter. Setting Lent aside, this was more than a deer a week. Besides these, he had several parks in Suffex, and other southern counties. *Northumberland Household Book.*

bited in the vegetable, the mimic appearance of the animal creation.

In Scot-  
land.

In Scotland, different laws were enacted for planting groves and enclosing with hedges; a proof that the woods were nearly exhausted, and that no provision had been made to renew them. By the same statutes the formation of orchards, gardens, and parks for deer, is imposed on the landholders, as a necessary improvement; but a spirit of improvement is excited in a country by causes very different from the penalties, or the barren injunctions of statutes.<sup>355</sup>

Hops and  
flax.

The culture of hops in the present period was either introduced or revived in England; and flax was attempted, but without success, though enforced by law<sup>356</sup>. Legislature at that time endeavoured to execute, by means of penalties, those national improvements which have since been fostered and cherished by bounties.

Breed of  
horses.

To the passion of the age, and the predilection of the monarch for splendid tournaments, may be attributed the attention bestowed on a breed of horses, of a strength and stature adapted to the weight of the complicated panoply with which the knight and his courser were both invested. Statutes of a singular nature were enacted, allotting for deer parks a certain proportion of breeding mares, and enjoining, not the prelates and nobles only, but those whose wives wore velvet bonnets, to have stallions of a certain size for their saddle. The legal standard was, fifteen

<sup>355</sup> Black Acts, p. 104, 105. 108.

<sup>356</sup> Hollingshed, p. 110, 111. 24 Hen. VIII. c. 4.

hands in horses, thirteen in mares, and “unlikely tits” were, without distinction, consigned to execution<sup>357</sup>. James the Fourth, with more propriety, imported horses from foreign countries, to improve the degenerate breed of his own<sup>358</sup>. Artificial grasses for their winter provender were still unknown; nor were asses propagated in England till a subsequent period.<sup>359</sup>

There is a certain perfection in art to which Architec-  
ture. human genius may aspire with success, but beyond which, it is the apprehension of many, that improvement degenerates into false taste and fantastic refinement. The rude simplicity of Saxon architecture was supplanted by the magnificence of the *ornamental* Gothic; but magnificence itself is at last exhausted, and it terminated during the present period in a style which some, with an allusion to literature, denominate the *florid*. Its characteristics are a profusion of ornaments, minute yet delicate; a finishing light and slender, from which apparent strength and solidity recede; walls surmounted by latticed battlements; windows less pointed, but broad and open; roofs divided by slight ribs into numerous compartments, fretted curiously like rich embroidery, interspersed with sculpture, and spangled with pencil and clustering decorations, like those grottoes where the oozing water is petrified before it distils from the vault. It is a style

<sup>357</sup> 27 Hen. VIII. vol. vi.    <sup>36</sup> Hen. VIII. vol. xiii.    Vide Barrington's Observations on the Statutes, p. 443.

<sup>358</sup> Pittscottie, p. 153.

<sup>359</sup> Hollingshed, p. 220. Polydore, Virgil, p. 13.



cenfurable as too ornamental, departing from the grandeur peculiar to the Gothic, without acquiring proportional elegance; yet its intricate and redundant decorations are well calculated to rivet the eye, and amaze, perhaps to bewilder, the mind. In Somerfetshire, a county devoted to the caufe of Lancafter, feveral churches were rebuilt in this ftile by the gratitude or policy of Henry the Seventh; but the fuperb chapel which he erected in Weftminfter exhausted, it is probable, every ornament that tafte could dictate, or piety accumulate. The expence amounted to 14,000*l.* in quantity upwards of 20,000*l.*, but in efficacy equivalent, perhaps, to 80,000*l.* of our modern coin; and the fabric exhibits a fplendid fpecimen of Gothic architecture, in its lateft, perhaps moft degenerate period. Chrift Church College was built by Wolfey in the fame ftile, and with fimilar tafte; but the genius of Gothic architecture languifhed after the death of that favourite, and expired with his fovereign. Grecian architecture was then introduced, but its orders, till a purer tafte was created, were intermixed promifcuoufly with thofe of the Gothic, producing a difcordant and barbarous afsemblage.<sup>360</sup>

Civil.

The facred, imparted to civil architecture a character fo fuited to the profufe magnificence of Henry the Eighth. His predeceffors had refided in caftles, or in houfes conftituted with few ornaments and little conveniency<sup>361</sup>; but

<sup>360</sup> Vide Wren's Parentalia. Bentham's Hift. of Ely. Warton's Observations on Spencer. Grofe's Antiquities of England. Pref.

<sup>361</sup> The Old Palace of Weftminfter, burnt in Henry the Eighth's reign, was a fortified place. Howel's Londonopolis, p. 346.

after the invention of cannon, and during a long season of profound repose, the utility of castles had ceased; the nobles solicited better accommodation, the King and his minister superior elegance. Whitehall, Nonfuch, and Hampton-court were erected, the former by Henry, the last by Wolsey, in the florid stile of the present period. Whitehall and Nonfuch have perished, but Wolsey's magnificence is still attested by Hampton-court; a residence, says Grotius, befitting rather a god than a king<sup>362</sup>. Ancient buildings, the property of the crown, were either repaired or renewed by Henry; but his taste and rapacity were both gratified by the dissolution of the monasteries, and the conversion of religious structures into royal abodes. Dartford was appropriated to his use, and St. James's transformed from a nunnery to a palace<sup>363</sup>. His nobles began to remove the martial fronts of their castles, and endeavoured to render them more commodious<sup>364</sup>; but in architecture the nation participated neither the spirit nor the taste of its sovereign. The mansions of gentlemen were still sordid; the huts of the peasantry poor and wretched. The former were generally thatched buildings, composed of timber, or, where wood was scarce, of large posts

<sup>362</sup> Si quis opes nescit, sed quis tamen ille,  
Hamptoncourta tuos, consulat ille lares,  
Contulerit toto cum sparsa palatia mundo,  
Dicit ibi reges, hic habitare Deos.

GROTH *Poemata*.

<sup>363</sup> Hollingshed, p. 196. Stowe's *Survey*. Rymer, vol. xiv. p. 563.

<sup>364</sup> Hollingshed, p. 194.



inserted in the earth, filled up in the interstices with rubbish, plastered within, and covered on the outside with coarse clay<sup>365</sup>. The latter were slight frames, prepared in the forests at a small expence, and, when erected, probably covered with mud<sup>366</sup>. In cities, the houses were constructed mostly of the same materials, for bricks were still too costly for general use; and the stories seem to have projected forward as they rose in height, intercepting sunshine and air from the streets beneath<sup>367</sup>. The apartments, Erasmus observes, were stifling, lighted by lattices, so contrived as to prohibit the occasional and salutary admission of external air. The floors were of clay strewed with rushes; but in the frequent renewal of these (they remained for years a foul receptacle of every pollution) we discover nothing of the scrupulous cleanliness that attends the English<sup>368</sup>. A more pleasing picture is exhibited in an ancient ballad, of a rustic habitation on the borders of England. The house was divided into two apartments, the outer for servants: the inner a chamber for the peasant and his wife<sup>369</sup>; and on this simple plan, which is still retained in a part of Scotland, farmers houses were generally constructed. Chimnies were appropriated to larger mansions; but the fire was kindled against a *reredosse* in the mid-

<sup>365</sup> Hollingshed, p. 187.

<sup>366</sup> 37 Hen. VII. c. 6. Fenn's Original Letters, vol. iii. p. 141.

<sup>367</sup> Hollingshed, p. 188. Anderson, vol. i. p. 337. Strutt's Antiq. vol. ii. p. 46.

<sup>368</sup> Erasmus Epist. 432.

<sup>369</sup> Pinkerton's Ancient Scottish Poems, vol. i. p. 65. vol. ii. 398.



dle of the hall, and the smoke escaped through a perforation in the roof.<sup>370</sup>

In military architecture, whatever improvements were produced on the continent, few alterations were adopted in Britain. Ancient castles were much diminished, nor was it the policy of the crown to rebuild them. As fortresses, they were dangerous yet not secure; dangerous to public tranquillity, yet not secure against regular sieges. Neither their strength nor construction was calculated, after the invention of artillery, to annoy besiegers, or resist the continued impression of cannon. Low batteries instead of turrets, and instead of square or circular, angular ramparts were, after the application of artillery to sieges, improvements requisite in military architecture; yet, unless some platforms of cannon for the protection of the Thames, and a few block-houses, too insignificant to acquire a name, no new fortifications were erected in England by either of the Henries<sup>371</sup>. Their vigilance repressed or prevented internal discord, and the castles upheld on the borders were sufficient to resist the incursions of the Scots.

In manual operations skill and dexterity increase insensibly; nor is it possible, nor is it the scope of this history, to mark, in the progress of the arts, the silent improvement acquired by the artist. We may remark, however, that the increasing refinement of the period was conducive to the perfection, as well as to the increase of the

Military.

Metallic arts.

<sup>370</sup> Hollingshed, 188.

<sup>371</sup> Polydore Virgil, Hist. p. 15.

Stowe, p. 576. Hollingshed, p. 194.

metallic arts. The luxury of the table descended to citizens, requiring so generally the use of plate, that there are few, says Polydore, whose tables are not daily provided with spoons, cups, and a salt-cellar of silver. Those of a higher sphere affected a greater profusion of plate<sup>372</sup>; but the quantity accumulated by Cardinal Wolsey, though the precious metals are now so copious, still continues to excite our surprise<sup>373</sup>. At Hampton Court, where he feasted the French ambassadors and their splendid retinue, two cupboards, extending across the banquet chambers, were piled to the top with plate and illuminated; yet without encroaching on these ostentatious repositories, a profuse service remained for the tables<sup>374</sup>. From the complaints of the people, reiterated even

Anno  
1528.

<sup>372</sup> Polydore Virgil, p. 13. His testimony is explicit. Yet the scarcity, or rather total want of plate in the Northumberland family, is a singular exception. *Treen*, or wooden plates, were used in the family, and pewter vessels were hired on solemn festivals. The luxury of London, and the southern countries had certainly not extended to the north, where old families, whose journeys to court were only occasional, and never voluntary, affected to retain the manners of the former age. (See Lodge's *Illustrations of British History*, vol. i.) Besides, the Northumberland family were seated too near the borders, and its castles were too frequently plundered by the Scots, for any quantity of plate to be accumulated or purchased. *Northumberland Household Book*.

<sup>373</sup> See Cavendish, ch. 17.

<sup>374</sup> Stowe, p. 537. Cavendish. Two hundred and eighty beds were provided for the guests; a goodly company. "Every chamber," says Stowe, "had a basin and an ewer of silver, a great livery pot of silver, and some gilt; yea, and some chambers had two livery pots with wine and beer; a silver candlestick, having in it two sizes, yet the cupboards in the two banquetting chambers were not once touched."

in parliament <sup>375</sup>, we may infer that the artificers were often foreigners; yet in one art, the manufacture of pewter, such merit was imputed to English workmen, that they were prohibited by statute from quitting the realm, or imparting their *mystery* to foreign apprentices <sup>376</sup>. Carving, gilding, embroidery, the making of clocks, and probably other ingenious metallic arts, had been practised in monasteries; and their suppression furnished a considerable accession of useful artists <sup>377</sup>. Pins, such as are used at present, were fabricated in the latter end of the present period; yet it is observable that the legislature, whose interference in manufactures is seldom salutary, attempted for a time to suppress this trivial but useful art. <sup>378</sup>

While foreign artificers were discountenanced in England, an opposite policy was attempted in Scotland; and if we may credit historians <sup>379</sup>, workmen of every description were collected from different countries by James the Fifth. His endeavours to introduce manufactures, or to improve the rude arts that were practised in Scotland, are represented as partly successful; but they were partly frustrated by his premature death. Mines of gold, discovered during his father's reign, were wrought by Germans under his directions; and from these mines, the first

In Scotland.

Mines.

<sup>375</sup> 14 Hen. VIII. c. 2. 21 Hen. VIII. c. 16. 22 Hen. VIII. c. 13.

<sup>376</sup> 32 Hen. VIII. c. 16. <sup>377</sup> 33 Hen. VIII. c. 4.

<sup>377</sup> Strype, vol. i. p. 372. Fenn's Orig. Let. vol. ii. p. 31.

<sup>378</sup> 34, 35 Hen. VIII. c. 6. 37 Hen. VIII. c. 13. Anderson, vol. i.

P. 372.

<sup>379</sup> Pittscottie, p. 153. Hawthornden, p. 114.



in Scotland, it is said that he extracted considerable treasure<sup>380</sup>. It is possible that their produce, while labour was cheap, and before the influx of wealth from America, might have been valuable; but it is more probable that the undertaking soon ceased to defray the expence. In the same region, instead of the precious metals, mines of the richest lead have been since discovered; but the gold that was formerly sought by monarchs is reduced to a few minute fragments, gathered by the shepherd from the sands deposited by the winter torrents.

Clothing  
Arts.

The clothing arts if retarded formerly by the civil dissensions, were now promoted by various circumstances,—the tranquillity of the period, the policy ascribable to Henry VII., the magnificent court which his son supported, and the gaiety, taste, and refinement of the age. There were few insurrections, and these insufficient to subvert the government. Henry VII. was attentive, next to his own, to the national interest; and when he laboured, both by treaties and private assistance, to encourage the spirit of commercial adventure, we may presume that manufactures, the true source of commercial intercourse, were not neglected<sup>381</sup>. It is said, on what account I have not discovered, that the woollen manufacture was improved and extended by

<sup>380</sup> Hawthornden, p. 114. Boethius, Descript. Reg. Scot. p. 6. The spars and crystals of the lead-hills are easily recognized in the jaspers, rubies, and adamants, with which the warm imagination of Boethius has impregnated these hills.

<sup>381</sup> See in Leland's Collectanea, vol. iv. p. 202., an instance of the King's attention to the trade of Bristol, then declining.

workmen whom his bounty allured from Flanders<sup>382</sup>, and it is certain that the period of English prosperity commences after the decline of Bruges, the removal of its commerce, and the dispersion of its artists. The splendid dissipation of his son's reign was, if possible, more propitious to manufactures, than the father's prudence. His policy was seldom judicious; but his example served to diffuse and to countenance a taste for magnificence. The nobility and gentry, renouncing their former rustic hospitality, frequented his court, where their fortunes were dissipated in a mutual emulation of costly equipage and rich attire. Nor was this peculiar to courtiers, or confined to the English; refinement had already pervaded Europe, and, instructing every rank to aspire to a better situation and to superior enjoyments, re-acted on commerce from which it originated, and redoubled the produce of those manufactures by which it was gratified.

It must be confessed, however, that in England the dress of the wealthy, and in some measure the homely clothing of the poorer orders, were supplied from abroad. Silks, velvets, and *cloth of gold*, an article at that time in high estimation, were imported from Italy; coarse fustians from Flanders, of a texture so durable that the doublet lasted for two years<sup>383</sup>. The manufactures were judiciously confined to woollens, the extent of which is attested in different statutes, by the varieties fabricated and the quantities exported.

<sup>382</sup> Anderson, vol. i. p. 306.

<sup>383</sup> Ibid. p. 306. 376. 11 Hen. VII. c. 28.

Of a slighter texture or inferior quality thirteen different cloths are enumerated; but the fabrication of broad-cloth was adjusted and regulated with an anxious precaution<sup>384</sup>. The repeated provisions that regard exportation, may convince us that the quantity exported was then considerable; but a better proof is discovered in the constant and otherwife unaccountable increase of prices. The exportation of cloth was restrained by statute, till *shorn, rowled*, or completely manufactured; but an exception was granted in 1486., for rays, vesseles, and white woollens, whose prices exceeded not forty shillings. At the distance of twenty-seven years, cloths of the same description and quality acquired an exemption when below five marks, and after an interval of twenty years the exception was again extended to four pounds<sup>385</sup>. It is true, the voice of the legislature is not always the organ of truth, but credit is due to its information wherever the times extort a reluctant concession. The manufactures of a nation are commonly estimated by its positive situation at different periods; a juster measure may be obtained from the relative situation of other states, its competitors and rivals. At a time when the manufactures of the Netherlands were prosperous, and those of Spain still considerable<sup>386</sup>, England, indebted to neither for her internal consumption, appears to have furnished from

<sup>384</sup> See Stat. Hen. VII. and VIII. passim.

<sup>385</sup> Stat. 3 Hen. VII. c. 11. 3 Hen. VIII. c. 7. 5 Hen. VIII. c. 3.

27 Hen. VIII. c. 13.

<sup>386</sup> Anderson, vol. i. p. 349.



the surplus of her manufactures a large exportation. Her sales were chiefly confined to the Netherlands, then the emporium of exchange through Europe; but her foreign commerce was daily extended; her traders, early in the sixteenth century, diffused her manufactures through the Grecian isles <sup>387</sup>, and discovered, in the middle of the same century, a new market in the Russian empire.

A.D.  
1511-12.

Such were the woollen manufactures of England, more extensive than those of Spain, and rivalled only by those of Flanders. Their prosperity resulted from natural causes, not from systems concerted by the legislature, whose regulations are rarely dictated by a judicious policy. Regulations operate as restrictions; but the wisdom of Henry VII. is chiefly conspicuous in the few restrictions imposed on trade. Under his successors the interposition of parliament was frequent, often injurious, and sometimes productive of pernicious monopolies. The preparation of Yorkshire coverlets was confined to York, an ancient city, depopulated, says the statute, by the neighbouring villages <sup>388</sup>; but in Worcestershire the woollen manufactures were all restricted, for a similar reason, to five towns <sup>389</sup>. At a former period the exportation of wool had been prohibited, apparently without effect; but a power devolved on prerogative, of dispensing with the statute, operated, it is probable, in occa-

<sup>387</sup> Hakluyt's Voyages, part ii. p. 96.

<sup>388</sup> 34, 35 Hen. VIII. c. 10.

<sup>389</sup> 25 Hen. VIII. c. 18. The towns were Worcester, Evesham, Droitwich, Kidderminster, and Broomsgrove.

fional monopolies <sup>390</sup>. A patent obtained by the city of York for shipping wool, to the exclusion probably of the whole county, required a formal abrogation in parliament <sup>391</sup>. The exportation of wool was immense; in one year sixty cargoes were dispatched to the Netherlands from Southampton alone <sup>392</sup>. To agriculture the consequences were ruinous; to manufactures perhaps they were salutary. The rude produce exceeded the quantity employed at home; the surplus therefore was wisely exported; and every exportation enabled the kingdom, by increasing its capital, to enlarge the circle, and increase the produce of its own manufactures. But for an early and lucrative exportation of wool, England might still have been poor and wretched, without cultivation, and destitute equally of arts and of commerce.

The smaller manufactures were still inconsiderable; consisting principally of ribbands, laces, and similar articles prepared by the silk company; and felt hats, a coarse manufacture established in London after the accession of Henry VIII. <sup>393</sup> Cottons occur in the statute-book; an appellation bestowed, I suspect, on a species of woollen; for linen, even the coarsest dowlas, was derived from Flanders <sup>394</sup>. Hemp was introduced, and its culture recommended; not however for the weaver's benefit, but to furnish

<sup>390</sup> See vol. viii. ch. 5.

<sup>391</sup> 21 Hen. VIII. c. 17.

<sup>392</sup> Anderson, vol. i. p. 381.

<sup>393</sup> 19 Hen. VII. c. 21. Anderf. p. 332. Stowe, p. 870. Hats, however, are of greater antiquity; they are mentioned in the letters published by Penn, and were probably imported by the Flemish so early as Hen. VI. See Strutt's Antiq. vol. iii. p. 83.

<sup>394</sup> 21 Hen. VIII. c. 14. 27 Hen. VIII. c. 13.

materials for cordage and cables<sup>395</sup>. Tapestry-weaving was attempted, with what success is uncertain<sup>396</sup>. Among the smaller manufactures those of Scotland might probably be included; yet Hector Boethius, partial perhaps to his birth-place, celebrates the woollen manufactures of Dundee, and assures us that cloths of the whitest and most delicate texture were fabricated at Dumfries, and exported to England, Flanders, France, and Germany<sup>397</sup>. But whatever was the progress of Scotland in arts and commerce, her historians, regarding the subject as ungracious, have maintained a guarded and ambiguous silence.

The English are classed by Erasmus, with some truth, among those barbarians that are prone to war<sup>398</sup>. Is it the genius or the peculiar misfortune of the nation, when secure at home, to search abroad for military glory, to reject the tranquillity which their insular situation has always proffered, and in the wars of others, to which they ought to have no accession, to spend profusely their strength and treasures? Henry VII. had no inclination, his imprudent successor had no call, to unsheath the sword. His example is the first of an English monarch interposing to regulate the balance of Europe; but his victories were barren, his conquests transient, and succeeding princes who have imitated his example, have seldom failed to inherit his fortune. His

Art of  
war.

<sup>395</sup> 24 Hen. VIII. c. 4.

<sup>396</sup> Dugdale's Warwickshire, vol. ii. p. 584.

<sup>397</sup> Descriptio Scot. pp. 3. and 5.

<sup>398</sup> Ad Philippum Paneg. Vid. Jortin's Life of Erasmus, vol. ii.



frequent levies preserved the national arms and discipline, but his foreign expeditions served merely to enure the English to the recent improvements in the art of war.

Raising  
troops.

Military services had passed into desuetude, or were seldom exacted from the feudal tenants, unless for the purposes of pecuniary extortion. Forces were levied for the defence of the kingdom by commissions of array, for expeditions abroad by indentures for soldiers<sup>399</sup>. When an invasion was apprehended from France or Scotland, commissions were issued through the different counties, for *mustering* the inhabitants in arms, selecting those that were fitted for service, and *arraying* them according to their rank and weapons<sup>400</sup>. Foreign wars were conducted by troops of mercenaries, raised by mutual indenture between the King and his officers. An indenture between the Earl of Kent and Henry VII. provides, that the former shall furnish six men at arms, including himself, each attended by a page and costrel; sixteen demilances, sixty archers on foot, and twenty-one mounted on horseback; at the daily pay of 6d. (equivalent to 2s. 6d. of our present money) for each of the archers; 9d. (equal to 4s.) for the demilances; and 1s. 6d. (in its efficacy equal to 7s. 6d.) for the men at arms, their attendants and horses<sup>401</sup>. Such indentures are numerous, and were certainly lucrative; for the principal nobility, on the same terms, contracted to furnish

<sup>399</sup> See vol. ii. ch. 5. sect. i.

<sup>400</sup> Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 300. 374. 399.

<sup>401</sup> Rym. vol. xii. p. 477.

the army with soldiers. Their service was temporary, limited commonly to the space of a year; for unless the yeomen of the guard, instituted by Henry VII., and the gentlemen-pensioners by his son, (a band of archers and a troop of horse,) a military establishment was unknown in England.<sup>402</sup>

Their weapons and armour were, with little variation, such as the attire of arms had formerly appointed<sup>403</sup>. Men at arms, whose prowess was most conspicuous, held the highest estimation; but the strength of the army still consisted in archers, now more formidable by the addition of halberts, which they pitched on the ground till their arrows were exhausted, and with which they resisted the impression of cavalry<sup>404</sup>. Sometimes they fought intermixed with the common soldiers, who were armed indiscriminately with bills and spears<sup>405</sup>. The troops were distinguished by scarfs and badges; but the diversity both of their dress and arms, must have given their arrangements a motley appearance.<sup>406</sup>

Two hundred years had elapsed since the discovery of gunpowder, and its first application to the art of war; but fire-arms of a portable construction were a recent invention, that gave no promise of supplanting the bow. Hand-guns were first introduced; a species of small culverin without a stock fastened to a tripod, and managed like a swivel<sup>407</sup>; but the musket, mounted

<sup>402</sup> Hall, Hen. VII. p. 3. Grose's Milit. Antiq.

<sup>403</sup> See vol. vi. ch. 5. sect. 1.

<sup>404</sup> Herbert's Hist. p. 20.

<sup>405</sup> Strutt, vol. iii. p. 9.

<sup>406</sup> Grose's Milit. Antiq.

<sup>407</sup> Daniel's Hist. de Milice.

on a stock and discharged from the shoulder, was employed in 1521., at the siege of Parma, and probably soon adopted in England<sup>408</sup>. Its form was clumsy, and its weight inconvenient; it was placed on a rest, and discharged by a match-lock; but the different operations requisite for the management of the rest and match (for adjusting the one, and blowing, fixing, and removing the other,) perplexed the soldier, and rendered his discharges slow and irregular. Muskets, to facilitate their management, were then reduced to a diminutive size, till a statute prohibited those the length of whose stock and barrel was less than a yard<sup>409</sup>. But the bow was still preferred for its greater dispatch, and in the hands of an English archer it possessed, within a determinate range, a steadier aim and a greater execution<sup>410</sup>. The musketeers were defective in skill; their muskets probably were ill-constructed, yet their fire was formidable to the men at arms, whose harness never resisted the stroke of a bullet.

#### Artillery.

The improvements produced on artillery are, at this distance, neither perceptible, nor of much importance. Brass and iron ordnance had been procured from the continent, till a foundery for cannon was established in 1535., by Owen an Englishman<sup>411</sup>. Such a foundery had been attempted in Scotland at an earlier period, with some success, by Borthwick, an artist in the fer-

<sup>408</sup> Belay. Herbert.

<sup>409</sup> 33 Hen. VIII. c.6. Vide Grose's Milit. Antiq.

<sup>410</sup> Life of Lord Herbert, p. 51.

<sup>411</sup> Stowe, p. 571.



vice of James IV.<sup>412</sup> Mortars and bombs were invented in 1544., by foreigners whom Henry VIII. employed.<sup>413</sup>

In Scotland armies were levied by musters; and to render the inhabitants expert at arms, *weapon-shaws*, or reviews, were appointed four times, afterwards twice a-year, in the different counties. The arms to be provided by every rank were adjusted as in England; suits of armour by the nobles, gentlemen, burgessees, and others, whose rents or whose goods amounted to 100l.; jacks of plate and steel bonnets by persons of inferior rank and opulence, with swords and spears, or instead of the latter, with halberts or battle-axes, bows, culverins, or two-handed swords<sup>414</sup>. The spear (whose length was seventeen feet) was the national weapon; a formidable weapon when projected by a steady and compact battalion. But the Scottish troops were deficient in discipline; when galled at a distance by the English archers, their impatience often precipitated their steps and disordered their ranks, intercepted the use of their unwieldy spears, and impelled them promiscuously on the sword of the enemy.

The necessary or useful arts may be concluded with printing, the utility of which is acknowledged, not merely as subservient to science, but as conducive to the perfection of whatever ministers to

<sup>412</sup> Lesly, p. 353. The guns were cast in Edinburgh castle, and some of them remained with this inscription in Lesly's time. *Machina sum Scoto Borthuik fabricata Roberto.*

<sup>413</sup> Stowe, p. 584.

<sup>414</sup> Black Acts, p. 93. 130, 131.

comfort or elegance. Its introduction by Caxton has been noted <sup>415</sup>; its improvement under his successor was such, that the types of Wynken de Worde have served, it is asserted, for Saxon characters to the present times <sup>416</sup>. The books which he printed are numerous; but Pinson, Raftell, and others his competitors, contributed equally to the improvement of printing. The publications of these early printers were chiefly of a popular nature, legends, romances, religious discourses; books necessarily popular at every period, because they are calculated to agitate the passions, or amuse the untutored taste of the multitude. Some Latin grammars were also printed; but it is observable, that after the revival of letters, at a time when the ancients were studied, their languages adopted, and their elegance imitated, Terence, Virgil's Eclogues, and Tully's Offices were the only classical productions of the English press <sup>417</sup>. But the printers were either translators or authors; their literature seldom extended to Latin; they had few classical readers to gratify, and their own vernacular compositions coincided happily with the national taste. The Germans were diverted from improving their language, by their numerous presses, conducted by scholars and teeming with classics; but the books that issued from the English press were adapted to those who were neither learned nor untinctured with letters, and promoted, more perhaps than the

<sup>415</sup> See vol. x. ch. 5.

<sup>416</sup> Herbert's *Typographical Antiq.* vol. i. p. 112.

<sup>417</sup> *Id.* *passim.*

study of the ancients, the early refinement of the English language.

These printers have yet a merit in compiling the materials, and recording the annals of English story. Grafton, who printed the Bible, completed the Chronicles of Hall and Harding; and of those published by Hollingshed and Harrison much must be ascribed to the previous collections of Wolfe, a printer, whose life was consumed in historical researches <sup>418</sup>. Their presses, however, were confined to black letter, (the Roman character was seldom employed,) and were still inferior to those on the continent. The Reformers printed abroad, a circumstance imputable to Henry's imperious supremacy; but the Bible which he authorized was attempted first at Paris, where workmen, it is said, were dexterous, and paper abundant <sup>419</sup>. A paper-mill had been erected at Hartford, Anno 1507.; but its paper probably was much inferior to that of the French <sup>420</sup>. Printing was also introduced into Scotland; but missals and statutes were the only productions of the Scottish press.

<sup>418</sup> Vid. p. 502. 596. Hollingshed's Pref.

<sup>419</sup> Fox's Martyrs, vol. ii. p. 515.

<sup>420</sup> Typograph. Ant. vol. i. p. 200.



## SECTION II.

*History of the fine and pleasing Arts of Sculpture, Painting, Poetry, and Music, in Britain, from A.D. 1485. to A.D. 1547.*

Fine arts.

**T**HERE are certain imitative arts that solicit retirement, others that sicken in the shade, and only expand to the sunshine of courts, or the genial influence of popular favour. Poetry has prospered in obscurity, or under discountenance; but sculpture and painting are more dependent on the public regard, and require, particularly in an age emerging from rudeness, more immediate protection and patronage. None was to be obtained or expected from Henry VII., who had neither taste to relish, nor spirit to remunerate distinguished merit. His chapel may be ascribed to a pious solicitude for his future welfare, or regarded as an instance, a solitary instance, of vanity predominating over his avarice: but his tomb originated solely from vanity, and its merit is exclusively due to his successor, by whom it was erected, and the expence defrayed.

Sculpture.

The tomb was executed, according to Stowe, by Peter T., a native of Florence<sup>421</sup>; and in this obscure appellation, antiquaries have discovered Pietro Torregiano, a sculptor, once the competitor of Michael Angelo. That artist's pre-eminence he had resented by a hasty blow, for which

<sup>421</sup> Stowe, p. 486.

he was expelled, or departed from Florence; and after some vicissitudes of life, was retained as a sculptor by Henry VIII., and employed in erecting his father's monument<sup>422</sup>. His reward was liberal; 1000*l.* for the materials and workmanship, (equivalent now to 5000*l.*); but it is easier perhaps to trace his history than pronounce on his merits<sup>423</sup>. The tomb was probably designed by another, as its taste is Gothic, and adapted, particularly in the outward shrine, to the style of the chapel. The minute and florid decorations of architecture, which often serve to distract the attention, are applied with peculiar advantage to monumental shrines, where the whole is comprehended at a single inspection, and of which the parts are susceptible of an exquisite polish<sup>424</sup>. The small statues that embellished the sepulchre are partly decayed; those of Henry and his consort remain; but whatever be their merit, it would be difficult to recognise in the sculpture a competitor worthy of Michael Angelo.

Sculpture seems to be a rarer talent, its per- Painting.  
fection more unattainable than painting; and in the patronage of the latter, Henry certainly

<sup>422</sup> Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, vol. i. p. 96.

<sup>423</sup> Stowe. Walpole. He quitted England to settle in Spain, where, in his passion, he demolished an image he had carved for the Virgin, for which he was imprisoned by the inquisition, and, from madness or a lofty spirit, starved himself to death. Sir Antonio More for a similar offence met with a more lenient punishment. Philip King of Spain bestowed a familiar but rough slap on the painter's shoulders, which the latter returned with his cane; and for this the punishment was a temporary banishment. In Spain it is safer to assault the person of a living monarch, than to deface the statue of a dead virgin. Walpole, vol. i. p. 123.

<sup>424</sup> See Dart's Antiq. of Westminster Abbey.

was more successful. Mabuse, a profligate Flemish painter, but of some merit, appears to have been employed in his father's court, whether he was probably driven by his own distresses, rather than allured by the monarch's bounty. The art, however, was little regarded till the son's reign, who endeavoured, it is said, to procure from Italy, Raphael and Titian; and under whose protection several Flemish and Italian painters frequented England. But their merit is obscured by that of the celebrated Holbein, who, for the softness and richness of his colouring, was preferred to the first Italian painters, at a time when painting had attained in Italy to its meridian splendor. He was first established in Basil, afterwards (1526.) recommended by Erasmus to Sir Thomas More, and passed the subsequent part of his life, with more security than his unfortunate patron, in the service of Henry VIII. and his son. His pencil, among its other employments, portrayed the beauties of Henry's wives, or of those whom Henry intended to wed; and to procure a just report of the latter, he was twice dispatched to the continent as the secret emissary of Henry's love. But he was not always a faithful emissary; his pencil, if impartial to the Duchess of Milan, imparted unmerited charms to Anne of Cleves, and ensnared his master into a distasteful marriage; for which, while the painter escaped unpunished, Cromwell the minister, lost his head. Princes in their marriages are now to be pitied; they must see and choose from a flattering portrait, and wed by



by proxy without inclination; but the disasters that Henry tasted in marriage provoke derision: Henry, who exalted his female subjects to his throne and bed, and when sated with their charms, like an Eastern tyrant, dismissed them to the scaffold. Holbein lived in England without a competitor, and died (1554.) without a successor to eclipse his memory. His works, of which many are lost or dispersed abroad, are justly celebrated as dear to connoisseurs for the perfection of their colouring, dear to antiquaries for their age and scarcity.<sup>425</sup>

To painting may be added a subordinate art, Engraving, that copies and serves to diffuse its designs. Engraving was coeval in England with printing; a rude engraving, employed as a substitute for illuminating, to decorate the titles and initials of books. Some copper-plates were produced at the end of this period<sup>426</sup>; but these are only memorable as the first specimens in England of an art that aspires to imitate, though unable to emulate, the perfection of painting. Poetry and painting will still retain this material difference, that the works of the latter cannot be multiplied like those of the former, not at least in their original lustre; but the disadvantage is in some measure recompensed by this, that the productions of poetry are more local, confined to a district, a nation, a language; while those of

<sup>425</sup> Such is the eulogy pronounced by Mr. Walpole; himself a rare instance of taste united to a love of antiquities. *Anec. Paint.* vol. i. p. 94.

<sup>426</sup> Walpole's Catalogue of Engravers, p. 5.

painting, expreffive only of natural appearances, are intelligible in every region, to every nation.

Poetry.

The age of Henry VII. and his predeceffor Richard, is characterifed by the hiftorian of Englifh poetry as fertile in verfifiers, but productive only of one that merits the name of poet <sup>427</sup>; yet in this exception there is reafon to fufpect that the hiftorian's judgment was bribed, or his tafte perverted, by a love of antiquity. Stephen Hawes, a groom of the chamber to Henry VII., compofed, among other poems of obfcure merit, the Temple of Glafs, and the Paftime of Pleafure; but the one is a tranfcript from Chaucer, the other a prolix and tedious allegory; the conception of which required little invention, and of which the imagery is apparently of little value <sup>428</sup>. His verfification, however, improves upon Lydgate's, and is far fuperior to Barclay's or Skelton's, contemporaries curious for the manners of the period, but as poets beneath attention. The truth is, that with every advantage derived from learning, with a language that approached, though it had not attained to its prefent ftate, Englifh poetry, till refined by Surry, degenerated into metrical chronicles or taftelefs allegories.

In Scot-  
land.

It was different in Scotland, where poetry, fuch as Chaucer might acknowledge and Spencer imitate, was cultivated in a language fuperior to Chaucer's. Dunbar and Douglas were diftin-

<sup>427</sup> Warton's Hift. Poet. vol. ii. p. 165. 210.

<sup>428</sup> Ibid. Warton has diffefted the poem, but has given no favourable fpecimens of its particular merits.

guifhed

guished poets, whose genius would have reflected lustre on a happier period, and whose works, though partly obscured by age, are perused with pleasure, even in a dialect consigned to rustics. Dunbar, an ecclesiastic, at least an expectant of church preferment, seems to have languished at the court of James IV. whose marriage with Margaret of England he has celebrated in the *Thistle and the Rose*; an happy allegory, by which the vulgar topics of an epithalamium are judiciously avoided, and exhortation and eulogy delicately insinuated. The versification of the poem is harmonious, the stanza artificial and pleasing, the language copious and selected, the narrative diversified, rising often to dramatic energy. The poem from its subject is descriptive, but Dunbar improves the most luxuriant description by an intermixture of imagery, sentiment, and moral observation. The following is a specimen:

The purpour sone, with tendir bemys reid,  
 In orient bricht as angell did appeir,  
 Throw goldin skyis putting up his heid,  
 Quhois gilt treffis schone so wondir cleir,  
 That all the world tuke comfort, fer and heir,  
 To luke upone his fresche and blisfull face,  
 Doing all fable fro the hevenis chace.

And as the blisfull sonne of cherarchy  
 The fowlis sung throw comfort of the licht;  
 The burdis did with open voicis cry,  
 O luvaris so, away thow dully nicht,  
 And welcum day that comfortis every wicht;  
 Hail *May*, hail *Flora*, hail *Aurora* schene,  
 Hail princes Nature, hail Venus, Luvis quene.



The Golden Terge is another allegorical poem of Dunbar's, constructed in a stanza similar to Spenser's, but more artificial, and far more difficult <sup>429</sup>. In description perhaps it excels, in sentiment it scarcely equals the Thistle and Rose. Its narrative is not interchanged with dialogue; its allegory refers to the passions, the dominion of beauty, the subjection of reason, and is less fortunate than the Thistle and Rose, whose occult and secondary signification is an historical truth that subsists apart, and however embellished, cannot be obscured by the ostensible emblem. When the passions or the mental powers are personified and involved in action, we pursue the tale, forgetful of the thin abstraction, to which it is relative; but to remedy this, the Golden Terge has a merit in its brevity which few allegorical poems possess. The allegorical genius of our ancient poetry discovers often a sublime invention; but it has intercepted what is now more valuable, the representation of genuine character, and of the manners peculiar to ancient life. These manners Dunbar has sometimes delineated with humour, in poems lately retrieved from oblivion <sup>430</sup>; and from them he appears in the new light of a skilful satirist and an attentive observer of human nature.

Gavin Douglas, his contemporary, was more conspicuous by the rare union of birth and learning, and is still distinguished as the first poetical

<sup>429</sup> Like Spenser's it consists of nine verses, restricting however to two rhimes instead of three, which Spenser's admits of.

<sup>430</sup> Vide his Poems in Pinkerton's Collection.

translator of the classics in Britain. Early in youth he translated Ovid *de Remedio Amoris* (a work that has perished); at a maturer age, Virgil's Eneid into Scottish heroics; a translation popular till superseded, at the close of the last century, by others more elegant, not more faithful, nor perhaps more spirited <sup>431</sup>. His original poems are King Hart and the Palace of Honour, allegories too much protracted, though marked throughout with a vivid invention; but his most valuable performances are prologues to the books of his Eneid, stored occasionally with exquisite description. As a poet, he is inferior to Dunbar, neither so tender nor so various in his powers. His taste and judgment are less correct, and his verses less polished. The one describes by selecting, the other by accumulating images, but with such success, that his prologues descriptive of the winter solstice, of a morning and evening in summer, transport the mind to the seasons they delineate, teach it to sympathise with the poet's, and to watch with him the minutest changes that nature exhibits. These are the earliest poems professedly descriptive; but in description Scottish poets are rich beyond belief. Their language swells with the subject, depicting nature with the brightest and happiest selection of colours. The language of modern poetry is more intelligible, not so luxuriant, nor the terms so harmonious. Descrip-

<sup>431</sup> It was finished in sixteen months; and till Dryden's appeared, seems to have been received as a standard translation; till then it was certainly the best translation.

tion is still the characteristic, and has ever been the principal excellence of Scottish poets; on whom, though grossly ignorant of human nature, the poetical mantle of Dunbar and Douglas has successively descended.<sup>432</sup>

In Eng-  
land.

Poetry revived in England under Henry VIII., and was cultivated by his courtiers as a vehicle of gallantry; but by none more than the brave but unfortunate Surry, who had taste to relish the Italian poets, and judgment to reject their affected, though splendid conceits. His sonnets were once celebrated, but are now neglected; unjustly neglected, for their merit is considerable, and their influence imparted a new character to English poetry. Surry was inspired by a genuine passion, and his sonnets breathe the unaffected dictates of nature and love. Tenderness predominates in the sentiment, ease and elegance distinguish the language. From these sonnets, the earliest specimens of a polished diction and refined sensibility, succeeding poets discovered the capacity and secret powers of the English tongue. They are not numerous, though sufficient to effect a reformation in poetry, nor discriminated always from the sonnets of others; but of those whose authenticity is certain, the complaint uttered in confinement at Windsor, touches irresistibly the heart with woe. Blank verse, now peculiar to English poetry, had been

<sup>432</sup> Other poets of inferior reputation flourished during this period in Scotland; but it is the purport of this history to record the progressive improvements, not the stationary merit of poetry.

recently



recently attempted in Italian and Spanish, and was first transplanted by Surry into some translations from Virgil, which discover rather the concinnity of rhyme than the swelling progression of blank verse. As a specimen of his poetry, our limits only admit of a sonnet, selected for the variety, choice, and compression of its images.

The soote season that bud, and bloome fourth brings,  
 With grene hath cladde the hyl, and eke the vale,  
 The nightingall with fethers new she finges;  
 The turtle to her mate hath told her tale:  
 Somer is come for every spray now springes,  
 The hart hath hunge hys olde head on the pale,  
 The bucke in brake his winter coate he flinges;  
 The fishes flete with new reparyed scale:  
 The adder all her slough away she flynges,  
 The swift swallow pursueth the flies smalle,  
 The busy bee her honey now she mynges;  
 Winter is worne that was the flowers bale.  
 And thus I see among these pleasant thynges,  
 Eche care decays, and yet my sorrow sprynges.

In the refinement of poetry, the elder Wyat is supposed to have co-operated with Surry, as both studied in the Italian school<sup>433</sup>; but he follows at a submissive distance, with an unpliant genius and untunable numbers. His verses are amatory and satirical, or rather didactic; but in the first, as his passion was fictitious, its utterance is harsh. With the taste he adopted the affectation of the Italians, and in his sonnets labours perpetually at some hopeless conceit. Yet his numbers burst sometimes into melody, and his satires exhibit, with

<sup>433</sup> Warton's Hist. of Poet. vol. iii. p. 28.

much obscurity, an occasional strength and propriety of thought and diction.

**Dramatic  
Poetry.**

Dramatic poetry was attempted after the revival of letters, or rather mysteries of the church were converted in the universities into regular dramas. Plays on historical or religious subjects, were composed in Latin for the students to perform; and the authors probably succeeded better in their observance of the rules, than in their imitation of the divine spirit of the Grecian stage. These spectacles could never be popular; but occasional *interludes* were written in English<sup>434</sup>, and performed by students in the inns of court, or by itinerant minstrels in the halls of the nobility. The poetry is worthless, memorable only as the first productions of the English drama<sup>435</sup>. *Philotus*, a comedy in the Scottish language, is ascribed to the close of this period, and some interludes were written by Lindsay of the Mount, a Scottish poet, whose laurels are faded.<sup>436</sup>

**Church  
Music.**

The imitative arts, as their primary object is the gratification either of sense or passion, are not necessarily allied to religion, to which occasionally they have been rendered subservient; and accordingly some are rejected by the orthodox, others retained as instrumental to devotion. Painting and sculpture are proscribed as idolatrous, poetry and

<sup>434</sup> Vide one in the Harleian Miscell. vol. i. p. 98.

<sup>435</sup> Warton, vol. ii. p. 366.

<sup>436</sup> Pinkerton's Ancient Scot. Poems, Pref. 110. Lindsay's Remains are in the Banatyne Manuscript. I have not found that they are of much value.

music cherished as sacred ; nor did the Reformation produce in England an immediate alteration on the music of the church. Counterpoint, the invention of a former period, was improved, in the present, particularly by the introduction of discords, to provoke attention, or relieve from satiety. The plain chants of the church were selected by composers, as a basis for florid counterpoint and figurative harmony, recent improvements, constructed on the continent with all the artificial perplexity of fugue and canon. Such artifices as the last were disregarded, or seldom adopted by English composers, whose masses and other choral productions are characterized as grave in their style, and according to the rules at that time established, correct in their harmony, free from imitations, and marked with an originality apparently national. Compared with the recent perfection of music, they are deficient however in measure and melody, design and contrivance; but perhaps it is the misfortune of music, that its refinement terminates in a fastidious delicacy, unwilling to be pleased, and in its desire of novelty rejecting whatever has already delighted <sup>437</sup>. The productions of these early masters have preserved their names ; and now that flattery is silent, Taverner, Shepherd, and Parsons, have obtained, in the annals of music, the precedence of their sovereign. Henry VIII. from the skill of a performer, aspired to the merit of an original composer ; his instruments were the recorder, the flute, the

<sup>437</sup> Burney's Hist. of Music. vol. ii. pp. 461. 466. 507. 535.



virginals; and his genius sometimes condescended to furnish his courts with ballads, and his chapel with masses<sup>438</sup>. His name is forgotten among poets, but his music seems to have survived his reign; yet of two productions, a motet and an anthem, ascribed to his finger, the one from its mediocrity is admitted to be genuine, the other is supposed to exceed the capacity of a royal musician.<sup>439</sup>

Secular  
music.

It is difficult to speak with precision of secular music, of which the written specimens are few, and the traditionary antiquity vague and uncertain. Popular melodies were originally simple, acquired with ease, and transmitted without the assistance of notation, till adopted by composers, disfigured by a multiplicity of new variations, and so perplexed by a redundancy of notes, that their difficulty constituted their only merit. Such was the employment of secular composers, who, instead of attempting invention in air or melody, produced, it is said, from simple songs, an elaborate assemblage, to the execution of which the skill and dexterity of modern performers are confessedly unequal<sup>440</sup>. The melodies peculiar to Scotland escaped such torture, and some of them, from their style or the subject of their verses, are ascribed by conjecture to the present period<sup>441</sup>. New songs are adapted daily to former tunes, and whatever be the antiquity of Scottish

<sup>438</sup> Herbert's Hist. p. 2. 13. Hollinshed, vol. ii. p. 806.

<sup>439</sup> Burney, vol. iii. p. 1. Hawkins's Hist. Mus. vol. ii.

<sup>440</sup> Burney, vol. ii. p. 553.

<sup>441</sup> Arnot's History of Edinburgh, App. 8.

music,

music, (ancient it is, and perhaps the produce of different periods,) the poetry is recent; but conjectures are not admissible as a substitute for historical certainty.

The improvement of secular music was perhaps retarded by the imperfect construction of musical instruments. The organ, I believe, was appropriated to the church; the clavicord, virginals, and harp, to the chamber. Wind instruments are described as of various constructions; but it is observable of instruments played with keys, or blown by reeds, that the intonation is defective, not susceptible of nice modulation <sup>442</sup>. The viol was in much request; but its finger board was fretted, its intonation limited; and it is asserted that, before the adoption of the violin, perfection in harmony was unknown to mankind. <sup>433</sup>

Musical  
instru-  
ments.

<sup>442</sup> Figures of these instruments are to be found in Hawkins's Hist. vol. ii.

<sup>443</sup> Burney, vol. ii. p. 553.





THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER VI.

The History of Commerce, Corn, and Shipping  
in Great Britain, from the Accession of Henry  
VII. A. D. 1485. to the Accession of Edward  
VI. A. D. 1547.

THE accession of Henry VII. to the throne of England was an event favourable to the commerce of that kingdom in several ways. It put an end to a long and ruinous civil war, which had thrown every thing into confusion, and inflamed the minds of one half of the people with the most violent hatred against the other; a situation in which commerce could not flourish<sup>1</sup>. It

Accession  
of Henry  
favourable  
to trade.

<sup>1</sup> See vol. x. ch. 6.

placed on the throne a prince in the prime of life, of a sound and good understanding, improved by the observations he had made in foreign countries, and fully convinced of the great importance of commerce, both to the crown and to the people, by increasing the revenues of the one and the riches of the other. Accordingly we find, that Henry was no sooner seated on the throne, than he began to turn his thoughts to trade, to remove the obstructions by which it had been interrupted, and to procure the English merchants and mariners a free course to and favourable reception in all parts of the world. With this view he cultivated peace with all his neighbours, and concluded commercial treaties with almost all the princes and states of Europe. Nothing can give our readers a more distinct idea of the trade of England in this reign, than by laying before them the substance of those commercial treaties in as few words as possible.

Commer-  
cial treaty  
with  
France.

The trade between England and France had been interrupted in the late reign, and Henry made so much haste to terminate all disputes with that kingdom by a truce, in which freedom of trade and commercial intercourse were stipulated, that it was proclaimed in the beginning of October, A. D. 1485. even before his coronation<sup>2</sup>. This truce, which was only for one year, was prolonged for three years more, January 17th, A. D. 1486., with additional securities for the freedom of trade.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 277.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. p. 281.

About the same time Henry dispatched his almoner into Italy, with a very extensive commission, to negotiate commercial treaties with the King of Naples, and with all the other princes and states of that country. In that commission, he discovers that he had very just and liberal sentiments of trade, as beneficial to all nations, by procuring them what they wanted in exchange for what they could spare. “The earth (says he) “being the common mother of all mankind, what “can be more pleasant and more humane than to “communicate a portion of all her productions to “all her children by commerce?” We have no particular account of the success of this commission, but it could not be unsuccessful. The maritime states of Italy could have no reason to decline a commercial intercourse with England.

This prudent prince lost no time to accommodate all differences with his nearest neighbours the Scots, and to lay open the trade between the two British kingdoms, for their mutual benefit. He concluded a truce for three years from July 1st, A. D. 1486., with James III.; the chief object of which was, besides the cessation of all hostilities by sea and land, to procure the free admission and friendly treatment of the merchants and mariners of the one country in the other<sup>5</sup>. He had it also much at heart to establish a more cordial peace between the two nations, by several intermarriages between the two royal families. But in that he

<sup>4</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 283.<sup>5</sup> Ibid. p. 285.



was unhappily disappointed, by the untimely death of King James.

Florence.

Henry granted, June 8th, A.D. 1486., a free-conduct to Michael De Seprello, Mark Stroze, and all other merchants of Florence, for ten years, to come into his dominions with their ships, to dispose of their goods as they pleased, to purchase and export wool, woollen cloths, tin, lead, and other merchandize, without danger or molestation, upon paying the usual customs<sup>6</sup>. Such a safe-conduct was not unnecessary, as the Italian and other foreign merchants had been often insulted and plundered in the ports of England.

Britanny.

Henry, in the same first year of his reign, concluded a commercial treaty with Francis Duke of Britanny, (who had been his protector in his distress,) to continue in force during their joint lives, and no longer. In this treaty many stipulations are made that discover a thorough knowledge of trade, and an anxious concern to render it mutually beneficial to the subjects of the contracting parties.<sup>7</sup>

With Burgundy.

A similar treaty was made about the same time with Maximilian King of the Romans, as guardian to his infant son Philip Duke of Burgundy and Brabant and Earl of Flanders. The object and stipulations in this were the same with those in all other commercial treaties, and a very great trade was carried on between England and the Low Countries.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>6</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 300.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid. p. 303.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid. p. 320.

The Italian and other foreign merchants paid double custom in England on goods they imported and exported, which was no small discouragement to trade. Though Henry certainly loved money too well, and was not very apt to exact less than his right, he wisely considered, that by lowering the customs payable by foreign merchants, he would encourage a greater number of them to frequent his ports, and thereby rather increase than diminish his revenues. He made the experiment, and granted, February 18th, A.D. 1488., to the merchants of Venice, Florence, Genoa, Lucca, and of all other Italian cities, for three years, a considerable abatement of the customs on some articles of export<sup>9</sup>. We are not particularly informed of the success of this experiment; but we know that the commercial intercourse between England and Italy was at this time very great, and that the Italian merchants took off great quantities of English cloth, lead, tin, &c. for which they returned velvets, silks, gold lace, with the spices and other precious commodities of the east.<sup>10</sup>

Reduction  
of cus-  
toms.

Henry concluded two commercial treaties with John King of Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, A.D. 1490., by which he procured several privileges to his subjects who traded to these countries, and particularly to the English fishers on the coasts of Iceland and Norway<sup>11</sup>. In a word, this active, intelligent prince had the interest of commerce so

With  
Denmark,  
&c.

<sup>9</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 335.

<sup>10</sup> Anderfon's History of Commerce, vol. i. p. 304.

<sup>11</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 374. 381.

much at heart, that in the four first years of his reign he renewed old, or formed new commercial treaties with almost all the princes and states of Europe, and thereby procured his trading subjects a favourable reception and friendly treatment in all places, which revived the trade of England from that languor and decline into which it had fallen by the confusions of the late times.

Commer-  
cial laws.

This was not the only method by which Henry VII. contributed to revive and increase the trade of England. He procured several laws to be made to promote the same patriotic purpose. The greatest part of the foreign trade of England had hitherto been carried on by foreigners in foreign bottoms. Henry was sensible that this prevented the increase of English ships and English sailors; and to remedy this in part, he procured a law to be made in his first parliament, that no Gascony or Guienne wines (to which the English had been long accustomed, and of which he knew they were very fond) should be imported into any part of his dominions, except in English, Irish, or Welsh ships, navigated by English, Irish, or Welsh men, which obliged them to build ships and go to sea, or to want their favourite liquor<sup>12</sup>. This law was enforced and enlarged by an act made in the third parliament of Henry VII. A.D. 1487., to which the following preamble was prefixed: "That where great minish-  
"ing and decay hath been now of late time  
"of the navy of this realm of England, and

<sup>12</sup> Stat. 1 Hen. VII. c. 2.

" idleness



“ idleness of the mariners within the same, by the  
 “ which this noble realm, within short process of  
 “ time without reformation be had therein, shall  
 “ not be of ability, nor of strength and power to  
 “ defend itself.” To prevent this, it was enacted, that no wines of Gascony and Guienne, or woads of Thoulouse, should be imported into England, except in ships belonging to the King, or some of his subjects; and that all such wines and woads imported in foreign bottoms should be forfeited<sup>13</sup>. From this act we may observe, that Henry VII. so early as A. D. 1487., had ships of his own, which he either employed in trade, or freighted to his merchants; a practice which he pursued during his whole reign, by which he gained much money, while he increased the shipping, sailors, and trade of his dominions.

A few years before the accession of Henry VII. Discoveries.  
 a spirit of maritime enterprize and adventure, for the discovery of new and unknown countries, had sprung up in some parts of Europe, which soon produced very great and surprising effects. The Portuguese in particular, animated and directed by their intelligent sovereign John II., attempted to discover a passage by sea to the East-Indies, to obtain a share in the trade of those countries, which had enriched the Venetians and other Italian states. In this attempt they sailed along and explored all the west coasts of Africa as far as the Cape of Good Hope, which they reached

<sup>13</sup> 4 Hen. VII. c. 10.

A.D. 1487.; but there they stopped short, and proceeded no further in their discoveries for several years.

Christo-  
pher Co-  
lumbus.

In the mean time an extraordinary man had reasoned himself into a persuasion that there was a great continent and many islands beyond the Atlantic Ocean, and had formed the bold design of attempting the discovery of that New World. This was the justly celebrated Christopher Columbus, one of the most adventurous, intelligent, and sagacious sailors that ever lived, to whom mankind are indebted for bringing one-half of the world acquainted with the other. Though Columbus was fully convinced himself, he knew it would not be easy to convince others of the existence of such a country, and that he could not attempt the discovery of it without the aid of some powerful prince or state. Being a Genoese by birth, he made his first application to the republic of Genoa, A.D. 1482; but that state declined embarking in the enterprize. He next applied to John II. King of Portugal, whom he knew to be intent on making discoveries. King John received him favourably, and seemed inclined to engage in the undertaking; but referred him to a committee of his council, with whom he was to settle all preliminaries. With this committee he had many meetings; they made many objections, and asked many questions, to which he returned answers with unsuspecting frankness. When they had obtained, as they imagined, all the information he was capable of giving, they privately fitted out a ship to make the discovery.

Columbus,

Columbus, justly irritated at this ungenerous attempt to deprive him of the honour and profit of his project, which had cost him so much thought, expence, and toil, left the court of Portugal in disgust, A.D. 1484.<sup>14</sup>

Not yet discouraged, he next repaired to the court of Spain, and sent his brother Bartholomew into England, to solicit the means of attempting the proposed discovery, A.D. 1485. Sends his brother to England. Bartholomew was unfortunately taken by pirates on his passage, who stripped him of every thing, and chained him to the oar. At length he made his escape, and arrived in England, A.D. 1489., almost naked, and emaciated by his sufferings. In this situation, without credentials, without money, and without friends, he could not procure access to the King or his ministers; but endeavoured to support himself by making maps and sea charts. When he had recovered his health, and could make a decent appearance, he presented a map of the world to the King, which procured him an audience of that prince, and an opportunity of explaining the commission he had received from his brother. Henry heard him with attention, examined all circumstances, and thinking his success probable, he agreed to his proposals, and sent him back with an invitation to his brother to come to England; but before Bartholomew arrived in Spain, his brother Christopher had failed on his second voyage to the islands he had discovered in the first<sup>15</sup>. Thus it was by the misfortunes of Bartholomew Columbus, and not by the

<sup>14</sup> Churchill's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 557—658.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid.



avarice of Henry VII., that the English lost the honour of being the first discoverers of the New World: but it may be justly doubted whether this was any real loss to them, or their posterity. Spain doth not seem to have gained either honour, power, population, or prosperity of any kind, but rather to have been a loser in all these respects by the discovery.

Discovery  
of New-  
foundland,  
&c.

But though Henry and his subjects were thus deprived of the honour of being the first discoverers of the New World, they were determined to have a share in the discovery. John Cabot, a Venetian, had resided several years in Bristol as a merchant and mariner, in which last capacity he had acquired great knowledge by many voyages. Having heard of the fame and success of Columbus, he presented proposals to Henry VII., for attempting similar discoveries. His proposals were readily accepted, and the King granted letters patent, March 5th, A.D. 1496., to him and his three sons, Lewis, Sebastian, and Sanctius, to sail with five ships under English colours for the discovery of unknown countries, which had never been visited by any Christians, and granting to them and their heirs all the countries they discovered, to be held of the crown of England, reserving to himself and his heirs a fifth part of the nett profits<sup>16</sup>. Besides this, he fitted out a gallant ship for this expedition at his own expence, and some merchants of London and Bristol provided four smaller vessels. With this little fleet John Cabot sailed from Bristol in spring,

<sup>16</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 595.

A.D. 1497., and directing his course to the north-west, on June 24th he discovered the island of Newfoundland, and soon after the island of St. John. He then sailed down to Cape Florida, and returned to Bristol with a good cargo and three natives of the countries he had discovered on board. He was graciously received, and knighted by Henry on his return<sup>17</sup>. From this well-attested account it appears, that the English were the first discoverers of the continent of America; and therefore, according to the political casuistry of those times, had a better title than any other European nation to the possession of that quarter of the globe<sup>18</sup>. That title, however, at the best, is very questionable.

Though Henry VII. was thus disposed to encourage and assist his subjects in making foreign discoveries, he was not the less attentive to the concerns of commerce nearer home. A misunderstanding having arisen between him and Philip Duke of Burgundy and Earl of Flanders, A.D. 1493., all the Flemings were banished from England, and all the English from Flanders, and a total stop was put to the trade between these two countries. This was equally disagreeable and distressful to the people of both countries, who had long carried on a great trade with one another, to their mutual advantage. This pernicious interruption of trade was not of long duration. A very correct and comprehensive commercial treaty, between Henry and Philip

Commercial treaty.

<sup>17</sup> Hackluyt, vol. iii. p. 4, &c. Purchas's Pilgrims, vol. iii. p. 461, &c.

<sup>18</sup> See Campbell's Lives of the Admirals, vol. i. p. 336. 3d edit.

Archduke of Austria, and sovereign of the Netherlands, was signed at London, February 24th, A.D. 1496., in which every precaution was used to render the intercourse between the subjects of the two princes secure, permanent, and profitable to all concerned<sup>19</sup>. It was called *intercurfus magnus*, (the great commercial treaty,) and gave no little joy to the merchants and manufacturers of both countries. When the English returned to Antwerp (to which they had removed their factory from Bruges a few years before), they were conducted into that city in triumph, and were received with every possible demonstration of joy.

Act of parliament.

On this occasion a violent contest broke out between the merchants residing in the capital, who had been long incorporated under different names, and now called themselves The Company of Merchant Adventurers of London, and the merchants, who resided in other cities and towns, who called themselves The Merchant Adventurers of England. The London Company had been long accustomed to impose a kind of tax or composition on the English merchants residing in other places, for liberty to buy and sell in the great fairs of Flanders, Brabant, and other countries on the continent. This tax was at first only half an old noble (3s. 4d.), and was demanded by the London merchants, who then called themselves The Fraternity of St. Thomas Becket, on a religious pretence, to enable them to do honour to their favourite saint, and thereby gain his protection. But by degrees this imposition

<sup>19</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 578.



was raised so much, that it now amounted to twenty pounds, to the great discouragement of trade. The merchant adventurers therefore, who resided in the out-ports, applied to parliament for a redress of this grievance, and an act was made A.D. 1496., reducing that fine to ten merks sterling.<sup>20</sup>

Henry VII. still continued to encourage the trade of his subjects by new commercial treaties with foreign states, and even with particular towns. He concluded such a treaty with the magistrates of Riga in Livonia A.D. 1498., in which it was stipulated, that the English should pay no tolls or customs in the port of Riga, and that the merchants of Riga should pay the same tolls and customs in the ports of England with other merchant strangers<sup>21</sup>. They also engaged to remit a debt of 10,637 gold nobles due to them by England. The stipulations in this treaty were very unequal, and so were the contracting parties.

It would be tedious to mention all the commercial treaties of Henry VII. It will therefore be sufficient to remark, that, in his negotiations and treaties with foreign princes and states, he never forgot the concerns of commerce, or neglected to procure some advantage to his mercantile subjects. He was particularly complaisant to the citizens and merchants of London, to whom he communicated the earliest intelligence of all important events and transactions; and by the punctual payment of his debts his credit in the city was unbounded. He even lent confide-

Commer-  
cial treaty.

Henry VII.  
attentive  
to trade.

<sup>20</sup> Stat. 12 Hen. VII. c. 4.

<sup>21</sup> Rym, tom. xii. p. 701.

nable sums of money to merchants, to enable them to extend their trade, and sometimes he became a partner in their adventures, and received his proportion of the profits.<sup>22</sup>

Weights  
and mea-  
sures.

Henry VII. was no less attentive to the internal than to the external or foreign trade of his dominions, and procured several wise laws to be made, for regulating their commercial intercourse with one another. Of these it will be sufficient to mention only one, whose salutary effects were extensive and of long duration. The great diversity of weights and measures in different parts of England was very perplexing and inconvenient, and several laws had been made to reduce them to uniformity; but inveterate custom had hitherto proved too strong for all these laws. An act was made therefore in the fourth parliament of Henry VII. A.D. 1494., which promised to be more effectual, because greater care was taken to secure its immediate execution. It was enacted, "That unto the knights and citizens of every shire and city, assembled in this present parliament, barons of the cinque ports, and certain burghesses of burgh towns, before they depart from this present parliament, be delivered one of every weight and measure, which now our Sovereign Lord hath caused to be made of brass, for the commonwealth of all his subjects and lieges within this his realm of England, according to the King our Sovereign Lord's standard of his exchequer of weights and measures." These knights, citizens, and burghesses,

<sup>22</sup> Campbell, vol. i. p. 330.

are directed to deliver these brass weights and measures to the mayors and bailiffs of the cities and towns which they represented, according to a schedule annexed to the act, containing their names, in number forty-three. The inhabitants of all these cities and towns, and the districts around them, are commanded to provide themselves before the feast of St. John Baptist with weights and measures, exactly agreeable to those brass standards, and sealed with the letter H. crowned, and from thenceforward to use no other weights or measures. The mayors and bailiffs in the several cities and towns are required to call in all the weights and measures of the people within the jurisdictions twice a-year, to examine them by the standards, to break and burn such as were found defective, and to fine their proprietors, for the first offence, 6s. 8d.; for the second, 13s. 4d.; and for the third, 20 shillings and the punishment of the pillory<sup>23</sup>. Though the King and parliament had been at great pains and no little expence in making this law and providing for its execution, it was soon after found that a mistake had been committed, and that the weights and measures which had been sent to the several cities and towns were not exactly agreeable to the standards in the exchequer. This mistake was rectified by an act made by the next parliament 1496. By that act the mayors and bailiffs of the cities and towns to which weights and measures had been sent, were commanded to return them to the exchequer, there to be broken in pieces

<sup>23</sup> 11 Hen. VII. c. 4.



and new ones more correct to be sent in their room. While these laws were strictly executed they were not ineffectual. But as the strict execution of them was attended with no little trouble, and various inconveniencies to the magistrates of towns and cities, it was gradually relaxed, and the former irregularities in weights and measures gradually returned.

## Colonies.

Though Sir John Cabot had discovered the isles of Newfoundland and St. John and the coast of North America, and had taken possession of them in the name of the King of England so early as A.D. 1497., no attempt was made to establish colonies in any of these countries. But Henry VII. soon after began to entertain thoughts of forming colonies in the New World, or at least to encourage his subjects to form them. This appears from a commission which he granted A.D. 1501. to Hugh Elliot and Thomas Ashurst merchants in Bristol, John Gunsalus and Francis Fernandus natives of Portugal, “ To sail with as  
 “ many ships and mariners as they thought  
 “ proper, with English colours, into the parts  
 “ and countries of the eastern, western, southern,  
 “ and northern seas, to discover, recover, and  
 “ investigate any islands, coasts, and countries  
 “ of heathen and infidel parts of the world, and  
 “ to set up the King’s banners and ensigns in what-  
 “ ever town, castle, island, or continent they  
 “ should discover, and to hold the same for our  
 “ use as our lieutenants. 2. Whenever any dis-  
 “ covery shall be made, it is our will that men  
 “ and women from England be freely permitted to

“ settle therein, and to improve the same, under  
 “ the protection of these grantees<sup>24</sup>.” From  
 hence it appears, that it was the intention of  
 these adventurers to establish a colony in the  
 country they hoped to discover, and that the  
 King approved of their design. What discove-  
 ries they made we are not informed, but it is  
 certain they did not plant a colony; and it will  
 afterwards appear that no permanent colony was  
 established by the English in any part of the New  
 World for a whole century after the date of this  
 grant.

Henry VII. was too fond of money not to be a friend to trade, which added to his own revenues, as well as to the riches of his subjects; and there is sufficient evidence that the commerce and wealth of England increased considerably under his government. A cotemporary historian thus concludes his character of Henry VII., “ Surely  
 “ this good prince did not devour and consume  
 “ the substance and riches of his realm; for,  
 “ by his high policy, he marvellously enriched  
 “ his realm and himself, and yet left his sub-  
 “ jects in high wealth and prosperity. The  
 “ proof whereof is manifestly apparent, by the  
 “ great abundance of gold and silver yearly  
 “ brought into this realm, both in plate, money,  
 “ and bullion, by merchants passing and re-  
 “ passing out and into this realm with merchan-  
 “ dize, to whom he himself of his own goods lent  
 “ money largely, without any gain or profit, to  
 “ the intent that merchandize, being of all crafts

Henry's  
treasures.

<sup>24</sup> Rym. tom. xiii. p. 37.

“ the chief arte, to all men both most profitable  
 “ and necessary, might be the more plentiful  
 “ used, haunted, and employed in his realms  
 “ and dominions<sup>25</sup>.” Henry was possessed of those  
 qualities which contribute most effectually to ren-  
 der their possessors rich. He was well acquainted  
 with all the arts and pretences of squeezing  
 money from his subjects, and exacted whatever  
 he pretended to be his right with unrelenting ri-  
 gour; at the same time he was an anxious wake-  
 ful œconomist, and kept most exact accounts of  
 all his expences, even the most trifling<sup>26</sup>. But  
 with all his arts of getting and saving money, he  
 could not have accumulated so great a mass of  
 treasure as he left in his coffers at his death, if his  
 subjects, particularly his mercantile subjects, had  
 not been opulent for those times. The accounts  
 we have of the amount of these treasures are  
 very different. Lord Chief Justice Coke affirms,  
 that they amounted to the enormous sum of five  
 millions three hundred thousand pounds<sup>27</sup>. Sir  
 Robert Cotton states them at four millions and  
 a half, besides wrought plate, jewels, and rich  
 furniture<sup>28</sup>. These accounts, though seemingly  
 well attested, are hardly credible. One would  
 rather be inclined to think that there was not so  
 much money in the kingdom in those times, be-  
 fore any of the precious metals from the  
 New World had reached England. The ac-  
 count given by Lord Bacon (which hath been

<sup>25</sup> Hall, Hen. VII. f. 61.

<sup>26</sup> See Append. No. iii. No. iv.

<sup>27</sup> 4 Institut. ch. 35.

<sup>28</sup> Answer to the Reasons for Foreign Wars, p. 53.



already mentioned) is more moderate, and probably nearer the truth.

James IV., King of Scots, the contemporary and son-in-law of Henry VII., was an intelligent and active prince, and studied to promote the prosperity of his subjects by promoting trade. With this view many laws were made in his reign, all of them well intended; but as trade was then very imperfectly understood, few of them were either wise or useful, and too many of them impracticable or pernicious. Among the useful laws may be reckoned those for the uniformity of weights and measures, if they could have been carried into execution<sup>29</sup>; but though these laws were often renewed, they were never effectual. The importance of the fisheries was well understood. This appears from the preambles to those acts, obliging all cities, towns, prelates, and barons, to fit out busses for the fisheries, of twenty tons and upwards, with a certain length of lines and nets, and a certain number of hands<sup>30</sup>; nor were these acts ineffectual, as the Scots fisheries were at this time flourishing and lucrative.

Trade of  
Scotland.

Commer-  
cial laws.

Wherever there is trade, and imposts on goods exported and imported, there will be smuggling, or attempts to avoid the payment of these imposts, unless the risk of loss can be made greater and more certain than the prospect of gain, by making such attempts. To prevent smuggling, and to secure the payment of the king's customs, was the object of several statutes in this period.

<sup>29</sup> Black Acts, James IV. Act 131.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid. Act 81.

These statutes were very simple, and probably not very effectual. By an act of the first parliament of James IV., A.D. 1488., "It was statute  
 " and ordainit, that in time to come, all manner  
 " of ships, strangers, and others, come to the  
 " king's free burrows, sic as Dumbarton, Irvine,  
 " Wigtoun, Kircudbright, Renfrew, and other  
 " free burrows of the realm, to pay their dues  
 " and customs, and take their cocket as eff-  
 " fiers<sup>31</sup>." The ports particularly mentioned in this act are now, and were then, very inconsiderable in comparison of many others which are not mentioned. But their inhabitants were zealous partizans of that predominant party, which had lately slain their sovereign, and this first parliament of James IV. was composed wholly of the heads of that party. To such a degree will faction sometimes influence public deliberations.

So imperfectly was commerce understood at this time in both the British kingdoms, that they imagined they could bring the balance of trade in their own favour, and add daily to their stock of gold and silver, merely by making laws to compel all merchants, foreigners as well as natives, to import a certain quantity of coin or bullion, in every ship, in proportion to the value of the other goods; to lay out all that coin and bullion, together with all the money they received for their goods, in purchasing the commodities of the country; and not to export any gold or silver in coin or bullion, under the severest penal-

<sup>31</sup> Black Acts, James IV. Act II.

ties. Such laws were made both in England and Scotland in this period<sup>32</sup>; but they served only to betray the ignorance of those who made them, and could not be executed. When the value of the imports into any country exceeds the value of the exports, the balance must be paid in the precious metals, in spite of a thousand laws to the contrary. By another law, equally absurd and hurtful to trade, no ships were suffered to sail from any port in Scotland from the first of November to the first of February. Sailing in the three winter months was esteemed too dangerous to be permitted.<sup>33</sup>

The staple of the trade of Scotland was several Staple. times changed. It had been anciently fixed at Campvere in Zealand, whose earl married a daughter of James I. From thence it was settled at Bruges in Flanders, which in the fifteenth century became the center of trade to almost all the nations of Europe. It was removed from thence by act of parliament to Middleburgh in Zealand, where it did not continue, but was restored to its ancient station at Campvere. The senate and magistrates of Middleburgh never desisted from importuning James IV., and after his death the Duke of Albany, to have the staple returned to their town; and having gained the secretary, Mr. Panter, by a promise of three hundred gold crowns, they entertained great hopes of success<sup>34</sup>: but in this they were disappointed. Secretary Panter acquainted them, that when the affair was debated in council he

<sup>32</sup> James IV. Act 30.<sup>33</sup> Ibid.<sup>34</sup> Epist. R.R.S. tom. i. p. 276.



was ill of a fever; and that the people of Campvere had made such interest to prevent so precious a morsel, which had made so much enriched their town, being torn from them, that he imagined they would prevail<sup>35</sup>. He was not mistaken. When the city of Antwerp was in its greatest glory, the emporium of almost all the nations of Europe, the senate and magistrates applied to James V., A.D. 1539., to fix the staple in their city, promising peculiar privileges and immunities to his subjects. The people of Campvere, alarmed at this application of such formidable rivals, exerted all their influence to retain what they had long enjoyed, and of which they knew the value. To determine this question King James summoned a convention of merchants from all the trading towns of the kingdom; and finding the members of this convention almost equally divided in their opinions, he granted every one liberty to do what he thought most for his advantage<sup>36</sup>. On this permission some of the merchants carried their staple commodities to Antwerp; but as they did not meet with the favour and encouragement they expected, they gradually returned to Campvere. All this competition between so many towns seems to indicate that the trade of Scotland in this period was not inconsiderable.

Conser-  
vator.

Wherever the staple was fixed, an officer, called the Conservator of the Scots Privileges, was stationed, with authority to protect the privileges that had been granted to the Scots mer-

<sup>35</sup> Epist. R.R.S. tom. i. p. 284.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid. tom. ii. p. 55.

chants,

chants, and to determine all disputes that arose among those merchants, with the assistance of four of them as his assessors. By act of parliament A. D. 1503., the merchants are prohibited from prosecuting one another before any other judges than the conservator and his assessors<sup>37</sup>. By another act of the same parliament, the conservator is commanded to come to Scotland once every year, or to send a procurator sufficiently instructed to give an account of his transactions, and to answer to any complaints that have been made against him.<sup>38</sup>

The accession of Henry VIII. to the throne of England was no disadvantage to trade, though he did not understand it so well nor attend to it so much as his father had done. He was young, ostentatious, and fond of pleasure; possessed of a prodigious mass of treasure, and unboundedly expensive in his household, dress, tournaments, disguisings, and diversions of all kinds. He was too well imitated in this splendid expensive way of living by those of the nobility and men of fortune, who frequented the court, and aspired to the notice and favour of the youthful monarch. This occasioned an uncommon demand for many costly commodities, as clothes of gold and silver, velvets, silks, embroideries, jewels, plate, wines, spices, &c. and that demand was supplied by trade. This trade was for some time chiefly carried on by the merchants of Venice, Genoa, and Florence, to whom the strongest assurances were given of

Accession  
of Henry  
VIII. fa-  
vourable to  
trade.

<sup>37</sup> Black Acts, James IV. c. 116.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid. c. 117.



safety and friendly treatment in the ports of England<sup>39</sup>. By degrees, however, these foreigners became so unpopular, that it was hardly in the power of government to protect them; and this trade came gradually into the hands of the English merchants. We may form some idea of the great importation of cloth of gold, cloth of silver, vandekin, velvet, damask, sattin, sarcenet, farston, camblet, and other cloths of silk, and of silk and gold and silver, in the beginning of this reign, from an act of parliament A.D. 1513., in which it is said, “that three or four thousand “pieces of these cloths were commonly imported “in one ship<sup>40</sup>.” This trade was more profitable to the merchants than to their country.

Circle of  
trade en-  
larged.

That spirit of mercantile adventure which had sprung up in the preceding reign still continued and increased, and the circle of trade was gradually enlarged. The trade of the English in the Mediterranean was become so considerable, that it was found necessary to establish a consul in the island of Chios in the Archipelago, A.D. 1513.<sup>41</sup> Though no English colonies were as yet settled in any part of the New World, it appears that the merchants carried on a trade with these countries, and even with the islands in the West Indies, which had been seized and settled by the Spaniards; and that they had agents residing in some of these islands, particularly in the great island of Cuba, for the management of their trade<sup>42</sup>. Many voyages

<sup>39</sup> Rym. tom. xiii. p. 271.

<sup>40</sup> 4 Hen. VIII. c. 6.

<sup>41</sup> Rym. tom. xiii. p. 353.

<sup>42</sup> Hackluyt, vol. ii. p. 500.

were



were undertaken in this reign for the discovery of unknown countries, in order to enlarge the circle of trade; but the accounts we have of these voyages are very short and imperfect. It appears that Henry VIII. fitted out a fleet, for making discoveries in the South Sea, A.D. 1516., and gave the command of it to Sir Thomas Pert, Vice-admiral of England, and the famous Sebastian Cabot; but all we know farther of this expedition is, that it was unsuccessful, owing to the cowardice of Sir Thomas Pert<sup>43</sup>. Mr. Thorne, of Bristol, was one of the greatest merchants and boldest adventurers in England in this reign. He had not only factors residing in Cuba, but he sent agents in the Spanish fleets, furnished with great sums of money, to bring him exact descriptions and charts of the seas, rivers, and lands, visited by these fleets<sup>44</sup>. Mr. Thorne, by his letters, earnestly intreated Henry VIII. not to be discouraged by the ill success of his first attempts to make discoveries, but to persevere and to direct his researches towards the north, for which his dominions were most conveniently situated. He gave the King also some very prudent advices for conducting his future voyages of discovery<sup>45</sup>; but what regard was paid to the entreaties and advices we are not informed. Mr. William Hawkins, of Plymouth, father of the celebrated Sir John Hawkins, made three very successful voyages in a ship of his own to the coast of Brazil, and in his passage he traded with

<sup>43</sup> Hackluyt, vol. ii. p. 498.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid. p. 726.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid. vol. ii. p. 498, 499.

the Negroes of Guinea. Mr. Hawkins, by his good behaviour, became so great a favourite of the Brazilians, that one of their kings came voluntarily with him into England, and being presented to Henry VIII. at Whitehall, excited great admiration by the strangeness of his dress and appearance<sup>46</sup>. Mr. Hore, of London, who was an accomplished gentleman as well as an adventurous merchant, was not so fortunate as Mr. Hawkins. Having prevailed upon thirty young gentlemen to accompany him in a voyage of discovery, they sailed from Gravesend in April A. D. 1536. with two ships, the Trinity and Minion, and about one hundred and twenty men. After a tedious voyage of about two months, they discovered the island of Cape Breton, and some time after, the island since called Newfoundland. They sailed along the coasts of that island, endeavouring, but in vain, to gain some communication with the natives, till their provisions began to fail, and they were by degrees reduced to such extreme distress, that they came to a resolution to determine, by casting lots, which of them should be first sacrificed to the preservation of their companions. In that awful moment a French ship approached, which the perishing English immediately assailed and seized, and, to their inexpressible joy, found her almost loaded with provisions. They removed a sufficient quantity of the provisions into their ships, and set sail for England. They arrived at St. Ives in Cornwall in October the same year; but so emaciated,

<sup>46</sup> Hackluyt, vol. ii. p. 700.

that their nearest relations could hardly recognize them<sup>47</sup>. Other evidence, if it were necessary, might be produced, to prove that the English in this reign enlarged the circle of their trade, by visiting several countries with which they had formerly been unacquainted.

Henry VIII. endeavoured to encourage commerce by various other methods. He made commercial treaties with almost all the princes and states of Europe; in which, and in his other treaties, he took care to secure certain privileges to his mercantile subjects<sup>48</sup>. In his reign, and most probably by his influence, several acts of parliament were made for removing all obstructions to navigation out of the great rivers, and for deepening smaller ones, to make them navigable<sup>49</sup>. He repaired the harbours of Scarborough, Southampton, and several other towns; and on the port of Dover alone he expended between sixty and seventy thousand pounds. He built a great many strong forts at the mouths of rivers, and the most exposed parts of coasts, for the security of shipping and of the country. Great pains were taken in this reign to clear the surrounding seas of pirates; and the King on some occasions discovered the greatest anxiety for the safety of his merchants' ships<sup>50</sup>. For the improvement of navigation, the famous maritime guild or fraternity called the Trinity-house of Deptford, was instituted A. D. 1512.; and similar fraternities were soon after established at

Hen. VIII.  
encourag-  
ed trade.

<sup>47</sup> Hackluyt, vol. iii. p. 129.

<sup>48</sup> Rym. tom. xiii. passim.

<sup>49</sup> Stat. temp. Hen. VIII.

<sup>50</sup> Strype's Mem. vol. i. p. 27—33.



Hull and Newcastle-upon-Tyne, for the instruction and examination of pilots, erecting of beacons, light-houses and buoys, and for various purposes, to prevent shipwrecks<sup>53</sup>. But it is the peculiar glory of Henry VIII. that he may be styled the founder of the royal navy of England by appointing a board of commissioners of the navy, and by erecting storehouses for all manner of naval stores, and making yards and docks at Woolwich and Deptford for building and equipping ships of war. From these and other facts that might have been mentioned, it plainly appears, that Henry VIII. paid no little attention to trade, and that his endeavours to promote and encourage it were not altogether in vain.

But though the intention of Henry and his ministers were favourable to commerce, their knowledge of it was so imperfect, that not a few of their laws and regulations were rather hurtful than beneficial. Of this it would be easy to give many examples, but a few will be sufficient. What could be more unreasonable in itself, or more obstructive to the freedom of commerce, than that law, which was so frequently renewed and so strongly enforced, against the exportation of gold or silver in coin or bullion, and commanding all native merchants to import a certain quantity of these precious metals in every ship; and obliging foreign merchants to invest all the money they received for the goods they imported in

<sup>53</sup> Anderson's Hist. Com. vol. i. 342.

the commodities of the country<sup>52</sup>? Several corporations obtained monopolies by acts of parliament, which must have been hurtful both to trade and manufactures; and they obtained them on very strange suggestions. The bailiffs and burgesses of Bridport in Dorsetshire presented a petition to parliament A. D. 1529., representing that the people of their town had been in use, time out of mind, to make the most part of the great cables, halsters, ropes, and other tackling for the royal navy, and for the most part of all other ships within the realm, by which their town was right well maintained. But that of late years certain evil-disposed persons in the neighbourhood had begun to make cables, halsters, and ropes, by which their town of Bridport was in danger of being ruined, and the prices of cables, halsters, and ropes, were greatly enhanced. The first of these allegations might be true; but the second was certainly a most impudent and glaring falsehood. The increase of manufactures could not raise the price of the goods manufactured. It must have had a contrary effect, which was undoubtedly the real grievance of the good people of Bridport. On this false and absurd suggestion, an act was made that all the hemp that grew within five miles of Bridport should be sold only in that town, and that no person within five miles of Bridport should make any cables, halsters, ropes, hilters, &c. on pain of forfeiting all the goods they made<sup>53</sup>; an act no less imprudent than it was unjust. One other example will be sufficient to

<sup>52</sup> Stat. 4 Hen. VII. c. 23.<sup>53</sup> Stat. 21 Hen. VIII. c. 12.



convince us, that very pernicious laws were made in this period, (and perhaps not in this period only,) on very absurd pretences. The city of Worcester, the towns of Evesham, Droitwich, Kidderminster, and Bromesgrove, represented to parliament, A. D. 1533., that the said city and towns were well inhabited, and their inhabitants well maintained, by making woollen cloths of various kinds; but that of late years, divers persons dwelling in the hamlets, towns, and villages of the shire of Worcester, for their own lucre, had begun to exercise cloth-making of all kinds, to the great decay, depopulation, and ruin of the said city and towns. Upon this representation, an act was made, that no person of any degree in Worcestershire should make any cloth to be sold, except such persons as resided in the city of Worcester, or in the towns of Evesham, Droitwich, Kidderminster, or Bromesgrove<sup>54</sup>. That such restrictive laws were unfriendly and hurtful both to trade and manufactures is obvious, though it was certainly not the intention of the legislators to hurt them. Good intentions are not sufficient to make good legislators. Prudence and caution to prevent being deceived by interested persons; patient laborious investigation, and a thorough knowledge of the subject on which the laws are to be made, are no less necessary than good intentions. But notwithstanding these and several other obstructions to trade which might have been mentioned, there is sufficient evidence that the commerce of Eng-

<sup>54</sup> 25 Hen. VIII. c. 12.



land was considerably extended and increased in the reign of Henry VIII.

If commerce was but imperfectly understood in England in this period, it was still more imperfectly understood in Scotland. Several laws relating to trade were made in the reign of James V., but they were all restrictive, and tended rather to curb than to encourage a spirit for mercantile adventures. None but the inhabitants and freemen of royal boroughs were permitted to engage in trade; and even they were not permitted to engage in it unless they had a certain stock in money or goods<sup>55</sup>. While Henry VIII. encouraged his subjects to undertake long and dangerous voyages for the discovery of unknown countries, James V. made laws to prohibit his subjects from putting to sea in the three winter months<sup>56</sup>. Trade could not flourish under such restrictions.

As money and ships are two great instruments of commerce, without which it cannot be carried on, it is necessary to give a brief account of the state of them in every period of this work.

Though a pound is one of the most common denominations of money, it never was a real coin, either in gold or silver, in any age or country. Such large and ponderous coins would have been in many respects inconvenient. But for many ages, both in Britain and in other countries, that number of smaller coins which was denominated a pound in computation, or a pound in tale, really contained a pound of silver; and they might have been and frequently were weighed,

Pound in weight and pound in tale the same.

Began to differ.

<sup>55</sup> Black Acts, James V. ch. 27.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid. ch. 37. 34. 80.

as well as numbered, to ascertain their value. If the number of coins that were denominated a pound in tale did not actually make a pound in weight, an additional number of coins were thrown into the scale to make up the weight. This was a fair and honest practice; the departure from which occasioned many difficulties, mistakes, and impositions in money transactions, both in foreign and domestic trade.

About the beginning of the fourteenth century, Edward I., having exhausted his treasures by his long and expensive wars with Scotland, coined a greater number of pennies, halfpennies, and farthings, out of a pound of silver than formerly; which gave rise to the distinction between the pound in weight and the pound in tale. The difference at first was very small, and hardly perceptible; but it gradually increased in every succeeding reign; and at the accession of Henry VII. the nominal pound, or the pound in tale, was little more than half a real pound in weight, and contained only as much silver as thirty-one shillings of our money at present.<sup>57</sup>

Shillings.

Groats, weighing each forty-three grains, had been hitherto the largest silver coins: but Henry VII., A.D. 1504., coined shillings, then commonly called festoons, each weighing 144 grains, equal to three groats, and to twelve pennies. They were fair and beautiful coins for those times; but they are now become so exceedingly rare, that it is imagined that no great numbers of them were coined.<sup>58</sup>

<sup>57</sup> See vol. iv. p. 278, &c. vol. vi. p. 294, &c. vol. viii. p. 345, &c. vol. x. p. 263, &c.

<sup>58</sup> Folkes on Coins, p. 19. edit. 1763.

Henry VII. made several alterations in the form and devices of the coins of England. Instead of the full face that appeared on the coins of former kings, and which bore little or no resemblance to the prince intended to be represented, his face appears in profile, and bears a great resemblance to his real countenance. Still further to distinguish his coins from those of preceding or subsequent kings of the same name, the number VII. was added immediately after the name; this practice hath been followed by all his successors. He laid aside the open crown of former kings, and appears upon his coins with an arched imperial crown, surmounted by the globe and cross. To prevent clipping, he caused a circle to be made at the very edge of his coins. The silver coins of Henry VII. were shillings or pence, groats, half-groats, pennies, half-pennies, and farthings, of the same weight and value with those of his two predecessors, Edward IV. and Richard III.<sup>52</sup>

Silver  
coins.

Henry VII. coined a great deal of gold as well as of silver; but his gold coins in general bore the same names, and were of the same weight and value with those of his two predecessors, which have been already described<sup>53</sup>. He was however the first king of England who coined those large and beautiful pieces of gold called sovereigns, value forty-two shillings of those times, and half-sovereigns, value twenty-one shillings; he coined also quadruple sovereigns, weighing each an ounce of gold; but these last were undoubtedly designed for medals,

Gold  
coins.<sup>52</sup> M. Leake, p. 179. See vol. x. p. 263. 264.<sup>53</sup> Id. *ibid.*  
and



and not for current coins<sup>61</sup>. The gold coins of Henry VII., as they are enumerated in an act of parliament A. D. 1503., were fovereigns and half-fovereigns, ryals, half-ryals, and quarter-ryals, nobles and half-nobles<sup>62</sup>. All the coins of Henry VII., both of gold and silver, were of standard purity. He possessed too much money, and loved it too well, to sink its value by too great a number of baser metals.

Henry  
VIII.

Henry VIII. coined a great deal of money in his long reign. In the former part of it, his coins were of the same kinds and of the same weight and fineness with those of his predecessors, which have been described. But towards the end of his reign, after he had squandered all his father's treasures, the grants he had received from parliament, and the great sums he had derived from the dissolution of the religious houses, he began to diminish his coins both in weight and fineness. This diminution at first was small, in hopes perhaps that it would not be perceived; but after he had got into this fatal career, he proceeded by rapid steps to the most pernicious lengths. In the thirty-sixth year of his reign, silver money of all the different kinds was coined, which had only one half silver and the other half alloy. He did not even stop here; in the last year of his reign he coined money that had only four ounces of silver and eight ounces of alloy in the pound weight; and the nominal pound of this base money was worth only nine shillings and three-pence three farthings of our present money<sup>63</sup>. He

<sup>61</sup> Leake, p. 182. <sup>62</sup> 18 Henry VII. c. 5. <sup>63</sup> M. Folkes, p. 27.

began

began to debase his gold coins at the same time, and proceeded by the same degrees. But it would be tedious to follow him in every step. In this degraded and debased condition Henry VIII. left the money of his kingdom to his son and successor Edward VI. This shameful debasement of the money of his kingdom was one of the most imprudent, dishonourable, and pernicious measures of his reign; it was productive of innumerable inconveniencies and great perplexity in business of all kinds, and the restoration of it to its standard purity was found to be a work of great difficulty.

It had long been a great obstruction to trade and to improvements of every kind, that lending money upon interest was declared by the church to be usury, and highly criminal in Christians. This prevented laws being made for regulating the rate of interest; and the money-lenders (many of whom were Jews) took advantage of the necessity of the borrowers, and exacted most exorbitant interest. They had invented also several curious devices to elude the penalties of the laws against usury. Of these evils many complaints had been made; and by an act of parliament A. D. 1545., the interest of money was fixed at ten per cent.; and if any person took more, he was to forfeit three times the sum lent, the one half to the King, and the other to the informer. In the same act, the various tricks and devices that had been practised by the money-lenders, to escape the penalties of the laws against usury, are enumerated and prohibited.<sup>64</sup>

Interest of  
money.

<sup>64</sup> 37 Hen. VIII. c. 9.

Scotland.

The coins of Scotland were originally the same with those of England, in weight, purity, and value; and continued to be so till about the middle of the fourteenth century, when they began to fall a little below them. This difference in the coins of the two British kingdoms gradually increased; and not long after the beginning of our present period, the nominal pound of Scotland was only equal to one-third of the nominal pound of England. This appears with the clearest evidence, from the contract of marriage between King James IV. and the Princess Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. A.D. 1502. In one article of that contract it is stipulated, that the Princess should be infeoffed in lands of the yearly value of 2000*l.* English, or 6000 Scots. By another article, King James is bound to pay to his Queen 1000*l.* Scots, or 500 marks English, yearly, to be disposed of as she pleased<sup>s</sup>. As the nominal English pound at that time was equal to thirty-one of our present shillings, the Scots pound, in the beginning of the sixteenth century, was equal to ten shillings and four-pence sterling. But towards the end of this period A.D. 1544., the nominal pound of Scotland had sunk to one-fourth of the nominal pound of England. This appears from a contract of marriage between Matthew Earl of Lennox, and the Lady Margaret Douglas, daughter of the Queen-dowager of Scotland by her second husband the Earl of Angus, and niece to Henry VIII. By one article in that contract, King Henry engaged to settle an estate in England on the Earl of

<sup>s</sup> Rym. tom. xii. p. 787—791.



Lennox and the Lady Margaret, and their heirs, of the yearly value of 6800 marks Scots, which is equal (says the record) to 1700 marks English <sup>66</sup>. James IV. and V. coined a good deal of money both of gold and silver; for a particular description of which the reader must be referred to the work quoted below <sup>67</sup>; the introducing of it here would be tedious, and unsuitable to the design of general history. It may however be observed, that the Kings of Scotland assumed the arched imperial crown upon their coins about the same time with the Kings of England; that their coins were not inferior in their fabrication to those of England; and that the gold coins of James V., called bonnet, (because they have a bonnet on the king's head,) were the most elegant and beautiful coins in Europe in those times.

As money was certainly more plentiful in Britain, and the prices of provisions and the other necessaries of life were higher in this than in the preceding period, we have reason to believe that the expence of living was only six, or rather five times cheaper in nominal pounds than it is at present <sup>68</sup>. Various evidences of this might be produced; but one decisive proof will, it is hoped, be thought sufficient. By an act of parliament, A.D. 1545., it was provided, that when the church of a small parish, whose benefice did not exceed six pounds a-year, was situated within a mile of another church, the small parish might be

Expence  
of living.

<sup>66</sup> Rym. tom. xv. p. 31.

<sup>67</sup> Numismata Scotiæ, by Adam de Cardonnel.

<sup>68</sup> See Fleetwood's Chronicon Pretiosum, p. 112—120.

annexed to that other church. For this two reasons are assigned: 1st, That it would save the expence of keeping up two churches. 2d, That six pounds a-year was too scanty a living for a parish priest. And may not the same thing be said of five times six, or thirty pounds at present? By another clause in the same act it is provided, that if the parishioners of the small parish annexed, shall within a year raise their benefice to eight pounds a-year, the annexation shall be dissolved; because, in the opinion of this parliament, eight pounds was a competent living for the minister of a small parish. And can more be said of five times eight, or forty pounds a-year in our times? If we wish therefore to form a judgment of the real riches of persons in the different ranks in society at two different and distant periods, we must not only take into the account the quantity of money which they possessed, but chiefly the quantity of all other things which that money could have purchased. Thus, for example, the wages of a common labourer in our present period was only three-pence a-day; but he was really as rich, and could live as well as a labourer in our times who earns fifteen pence a-day. The same reasoning will hold good with respect to persons in all the other ranks in society. Money is not only a capital article in commerce, but it is a kind of commercial barometer. When money is scarce it is dear, and all other things are cheap. When money abounds it is cheap, and all other things are dear. This bears hardest upon stipendiaries, who have a certain  
fixed

fixed income in money ; because as money increases, the value of their income gradually decreases and in time becomes quite incompetent.

As ships are no less necessary to foreign and even to coasting commerce than money, the state of shipping requires some of our attention in every period.

The ships that had been formerly employed by the merchants of Britain in foreign trade were in general small, many of them under fifty, and few of them above one hundred and fifty tons. A few ships of greater burthen are mentioned by our historians, but they are mentioned as a kind of prodigies <sup>69</sup>. But after the discovery of the New World, when more distant voyages were undertaken, the merchants of England began to build larger and stouter ships. In this they were assisted and encouraged by Henry VII., who built several great ships, which he freighted to the merchants when they were not employed in the public service. The ship in which Mr. William Hawkins of Plymouth made three successful voyages to the Brasils and the coasts of Guinea, (the first in 1530.,) is represented as a ship of uncommon magnitude, a stout tall ship, of two hundred and fifty tons. <sup>70</sup>

But if the merchant ships were now in general larger and better built than those of preceding times, the ships designed for war were, it is said, augmented in size and strength in a much greater proportion. About the beginning of the sixteenth century, the great importance of superiority at

<sup>69</sup> See vol. x. p. 274.

<sup>70</sup> Hackluyt, vol. iii. p. 700.



sea was well understood ; and the sovereigns of the several maritime states of Europe began to vie with each other which of them should have the largest and stoutest ships of war. Henry VIII. built several great ships ; particularly one named the Regent, of 1000 tons, which required a crew of eight hundred men <sup>71</sup>. The King of France had also a number of great ships, of which the Cordelier was by far the greatest, and contained accommodation for eleven hundred men. These two noble ships, the Regent and Cordelier, having grappled with one another in a sea-fight off the port of Brest, A. D. 1512., they were both burned, with every person on board <sup>72</sup>. To replace the Regent, Henry VIII. soon after built another ship of the same burthen, but far more splendid and ornamental, called the Mary Grace Dieu <sup>73</sup>. King James IV. of Scotland, we are told, engaged also in this noble contest, and resolved to build a greater ship than any that had yet appeared. Lindsay of Pitscottie, who gives the most circumstantial description of this famous ship, which was called the Great Michael, says, that he received his information from Sir Andrew Wood of Largo, who was her quarter-master, and Robert Bartyne, who was master-skipper. As this writer seems to have been so well informed, it may not be improper to give his description of this famous ship, in his own words, changing only a few of them that would be unintelligible to an English reader.

<sup>71</sup> Archæologia, vol. vi. p. 201.

<sup>72</sup> Hall, f. 22.

<sup>73</sup> Arch. vol. v. p. 209.

“ In this same year (1512.) the King of Scot-  
 “ land bigged a great ship, called the Great  
 “ Michael, which was the greatest ship and of  
 “ the most strength that ever sailed in England or  
 “ France: for this ship was of so great stature, and  
 “ took so much timber, that, except Falkland, she  
 “ wasted all the woods in Fife, which was oak  
 “ wood, besides all timber that was gotten out of  
 “ Norroway; for she was so strong and of so great  
 “ length and breadth, to wit, she wastwelve-score  
 “ feet of length, and thirty-six feet within the  
 “ sides. All the wrights of Scotland, yea and  
 “ many other strangers, were at her device, by  
 “ the King’s commandment, who wrought very  
 “ busily in her; but it was year and day ere she  
 “ was complete. This great ship cumbered Scot-  
 “ land to get her to the sea. From that time that  
 “ she was a float, and her masts and sails com-  
 “ plete, with robes and ancores effiering thereto,  
 “ she was counted to the King to be thirty thou-  
 “ sand pounds of expences, besides her artillery,  
 “ which was very great and costly to the King,  
 “ and besides all the rest of her furniture <sup>74</sup>. She  
 “ had three hundred mariners to sail her; she had  
 “ six-score gunners to use her artillery, and had  
 “ a thousand men of war, besides her captains,  
 “ skippers, and quarter-masters. If any man be-  
 “ lieve that this description of the ship is not of  
 “ verity as we have written, let him pass to the  
 “ gate of Tillibarden, and there before the same  
 “ yewill see the length and breadth of her planted

<sup>74</sup> 30,000l. Scots at that time contained as much silver as 15,000l.  
 Sterling at present, and was equal in efficacy to 50,000l.

“with hawthorn by the wright that helped to make her <sup>75</sup>.” Such is the description of this ship given by Pitfcottie, and he certainly believed it to be true. It is probable, however, that he was misinformed in some things, particularly that she had a thousand fighting men on board, which is hardly credible.

King James sent this great ship, with two other gallant ships, the Margaret and the James, and a fleet of smaller vessels, having an army on board, to the assistance of the King of France, against a threatened invasion of that kingdom by the English, which soon after took place <sup>76</sup>. The Great Michael never returned to Scotland, but was sold by the Duke of Albany to the King of France, A.D. 1514., for 40,000 franks <sup>77</sup>; a very great sum in those times. James IV., who had a taste for maritime affairs, appears to have formed the design of raising a royal navy; but, by his untimely death, that design was blasted. Henry VIII., who may be justly styled the founder of the English navy, had formed the same design about the same time; but as he survived King James upwards of thirty years, and was at the head of a much greater, more powerful, and opulent nation, he made much greater progress in the execution of that design; and at his death he left a fleet greatly superior to that of any of his predecessors, and not inferior to that of any other prince in Europe. Some of Henry’s predecessors had a few ships, which they employed sometimes in trade, and sometimes in

<sup>75</sup> Pitfcottie, p. 107.

<sup>76</sup> Epist. R. R. Scot, tom. i. p. 214.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid. p. 110.



war; but they did not deserve the name of a navy. At the death of Henry VIII. the navy of England was on a very different footing; it consisted of fifty-three ships belonging to the crown, and only equipped for war. Some of these ships were of great magnitude: the *Henry Grace de Dieu* was of 1000 tons; she carried 19 brass and 103 iron guns; and her complement of men consisted of 349 soldiers, 301 mariners, and fifty gunners. There was another ship of 700 tons, two of 600, and two of 500, and the tonnage of the whole fleet was 6255 tons<sup>78</sup>. More evidence, if it was necessary, might be produced to prove, that the ships employed in England, and even in Scotland; both in trade and war, in this period, were in general larger, stronger, and better built than in any former time; which is a strong presumptive proof that the commerce, power, and opulence of the country had increased.

The trade of England was still carried on, for the most part, by two great companies; the company of the German merchants of steelyard, and the company of the merchant-adventurers of England. The first of these companies was the richest, the most ancient, and for several ages the most favoured by the kings of England, to whom they made valuable presents. This company was composed almost wholly of foreigners, and was far from being popular. They became at length so unpopular, that their persons were often insulted and their goods plundered by the populace of

<sup>78</sup> *Archæologia*, vol. vi. p. 220.

London. The company of merchant-adventurers consisted wholly of Englishmen, and every English merchant was admitted a member of it on paying a small fine. It appears so to have been the intention of government to divide the trade of England between these two companies; and certain branches of it were allotted to each of them in their charters, with strict prohibitions not to exceed their bounds. But the love of gain is not to be restrained by prohibitions lurking in charters. These two companies encroached on each other's privileges, and brought bitter complaints against one another before the King and council. The complaints of the merchant-adventurers were well-founded; the injuries they had received from the other company were very great, and ought to have been redressed; but their antagonists had powerful protectors at court, which enabled them to repel all attacks during the whole reign of Henry VIII. In the succeeding reign, the complaints of the merchant-adventurers prevailed, and the privileges enjoyed by the merchants of the steelyard were, after mature deliberation, revoked, and their corporation abolished, by the privy council. It appeared that they had exported in one year 44,000 pieces of cloth; and as they enjoyed an exemption from *alien* duties, they had defrauded the revenue, and injured the private adventurers, by colouring, or passing under their own names, the merchandize of other foreigners to a large amount.<sup>79</sup>

<sup>79</sup> Anderson, vol. i. p. 383.

THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

BOOK VI.

CHAPTER VII.

History of the Manners, Virtues, Vices, remarkable Customs, Languages, Dress, and Diversions of the People of Great Britain, from the accession of Henry VII., A.D. 1485., to the accession of Edward VI., A.D. 1547.

**A**MONG nations whose government is monarchical, the supreme magistrate is exalted to a power, and invoked by titles, scarcely compatible with human nature; while the people, from whom his authority originates, and on whose breath his existence depends, are in history regarded only as subservient to him. Their annals are adjusted and marked by his reign,  
filled



filled with his public transactions or secret policy; and as every atchievement is ascribed to his auspices, it is his life rather than their history that is recorded for the benefit of succeeding generations. From the public transactions, or the dark and dishonest intrigues of princes, the transition to the private character of the people is grateful; yet there our attention is still irresistibly attracted to the sovereign, whose example either extends to society, or whose court is an index to the manners, customs, and taste of the age.

Spirit of  
the Eng-  
lish.

It is observable that the spirit of a nation is subject to frequent, and sudden vicissitudes; that it passes from the extremes of religious frenzy, or civil discord, to a state of inactive and cold indifference. The English, after a long interruption, obtained, by the union of the rival roses, the blessings of a permanent government and domestic concord, and were unwilling to forfeit these by the rash renewal of their former troubles. The power of the nobles was broken, and their numbers diminished; the policy of the crown had suppressed their retainers; war, or the progress of society, had either destroyed or enfranchised their bondsmen; nor were armies ready to start, as formerly, at the sound of their trumpets. *Their* depression, and the disusage of slavery, produced a salutary alteration on the ranks of society, removing the materials as well as the causes of future commotions; but on the removal of these, an important change is perceptible in the spirit both of the government and  
people.

people. The regal power, counteracted hitherto by that of the nobles, subsisted, after the decline of their influence, without opposition and without restraint. Government was sanguinary, the people were passive, submissive to rapacious vindictive tyrants; at whose pleasure the laws were either superseded or perverted. The scaffold streamed with the blood of the nobles, and the flames of persecution consumed the religious; but the people suffered with patience, resigned the constitution to their monarch, and received as their religion whatever his caprice or his passions might dictate. Other nations, amidst the remains of chivalry, (the force of which was not yet exhausted,) discovered in their government much of their present moderation and lenity; and the contemporary reigns of Charles and of Francis exhibit despotic authority mitigated by refinement, mild in its exercise, and unstained by sanguinary exertions of power. In England, a tyrannical government argues a more barbarous state of society. The people were inured to bloodshed by the civil wars; and while their own security remained unaffected, beheld the fate of their superiors with supine indifference, or perhaps with a secret malignant pleasure. Government, it is true, was always vigilant to suppress their murmurs; and Henry VIII. condescended repeatedly to court their affections; religious contests served to balance their hopes and their fears; and the religious parties into which they were divided, applauded alternately every tyrannical action of Henry's reign. Perhaps they  
esteemed

esteemed his character; but theirs is marked by a tame servility, unexampled hitherto in the annals of England.

Manners.

Their manners, though comparatively rude, attained in the present period to a considerable refinement; of which, however, it is difficult to ascertain the precise degree, impossible to distinguish the minute gradations. Foreigners who visited the country, have transmitted a favourable report of the inhabitants; and Polydore Virgil, with a visible partiality, pronounces that theirs resembled the Italian manners<sup>1</sup>; but Erasmus informs us, that their manners participated of those nations from whom they originated, exhibiting a mixture neither so refined as the French, nor so rude as the German<sup>2</sup>. The resort of foreigners was considerable, and apparently acceptable to all ranks, the plebeians excepted<sup>3</sup>, who, like their own mastiffs, are still noted for their antipathy to strangers. The nobility and gentlemen of opulence began to travel for improvement through Europe, to study the languages, and acquire the refinement of different courts<sup>4</sup>; and this intercourse with foreigners at home and abroad contributed, without supplanting, to correct the rudeness of the national manners.

<sup>1</sup> Hist. p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Erasmi Colloq. Diverforia ad finem. Erasmus promised a description of English inns, which it is to be regretted he did not execute.

<sup>3</sup> Pol. Virgil, p. 15. Stowe, p. 505. Hall, Hen. VIII. p. 62.

<sup>4</sup> Surry, Wyat, and others, had travelled: and it is said that the first of the Bedford family distinguished at court was a Mr. Ruffel, who had acquired by travelling, the languages of the continent, and was employed by Sir John Trenchard his kinsman, to attend on Philip of Austria as an interpreter during his journey to court.

If



If the character, however, of a court be assumed from the sovereign, these manners, in the court of Henry VII., must have been rude indeed. On arriving at a village where Catharine of Arragon, after landing in England, was lodged for the night, Henry was told that the Princess had already retired to rest; but he announced his intention of visiting her bed-side, obliged her to rise and dress to receive him, and affianced her that evening to his son Prince Arthur<sup>5</sup>. Henry VIII. affected more gallantry, and his court was distinguished by superior politeness; but that romantic gallantry, which was congenial to Francis and to James IV., was adopted through emulation, and sat with visible constraint upon Charles, who disregarded, and upon Henry who forgot his youthful professions of respect for the fair. His passions were impetuous, his gallantry was indelicate, yet his character, brave, frank, and generous, like his grandfather Edward, though, like his father Henry, rapacious and jealous, attracted to nobility, and encouraged a magnificence unknown till then in the English court. The nobility, who had formerly shunned the court, unless at seasons when their appearance was necessary<sup>6</sup>, began to frequent it in Henry's reign; they exchanged their solitary dignity for social intercourse, exhausted their revenues in ostentatious magnificence, and while their existence literally depended on the smiles or frowns of a

<sup>5</sup> Leland's Collectanea, vol. v. p. 354.

<sup>6</sup> During parliament, or once a year, to perform their homage.

capricious master, acquired the frivolous, the pleasing refinement of courtly manners.

But the polish of courts is imparted only to a portion of society, and the refinement of the people may be estimated perhaps by their means of improvement, their early education, and domestic manners. Their education in the present period was extremely defective. Schools were rare; and before the reformation, young men were educated in monasteries, women in nunneries; where the latter were instructed in writing, drawing, confectionary, needle-work, and, what were regared then as female accomplishments, in physic and surgery<sup>7</sup>. The acquisition of the former were confined to writing, and a tincture probably of barbarous Latin<sup>8</sup>; but ignorance was still so common, that Fitzherbert recommends to gentlemen unable to commit notes to writing, the practice of notching a stick to assist their memory<sup>9</sup>. When removed from these seminaries to the houses of their parents, both sexes were treated in a manner that precluded improvement. Perhaps the best criterion of civilized society is the free intercourse, and reciprocal confidence between parents and their offspring; a situation in which an indulgent equality supercedes authority, and conciliates mutual esteem and affection. But domestic manners were

<sup>7</sup> Vid. a tract written in the last century, and published from a MS. of Mr. Asple's in the Antiq. Repertory, vol. iii. p. 43.

<sup>8</sup> A specimen, not indeed very intelligible, of the Latin acquired at Eton, may be found in Fenn's Orig. Letters. vol. i. p. 300.

<sup>9</sup> Husbandry, p. 86.

severe and formal ; a haughty reserve was affected by the old, and an abject deference exacted from the young. Sons, when arrived at manhood, are represented as standing uncovered and silent, in their father's presence ; and daughters, though women, were placed like statues at the cupboard ; nor permitted to sit, or repose themselves otherwise than by kneeling on a cushion, till their mother departed. Such austere manners were prevalent even in France<sup>10</sup>, and peculiar rather to the age than to the nation ; but the English, I am afraid, discover a latent, unfeeling ferocity in the relentless rigour of their domestic tribunals. Omissions were punished by stripes and blows ; and chastisement was carried to such excess, that the daughters trembled at the sight of their mother, and the sons avoided and hated their father<sup>11</sup>. These circumstances indicate that the manners of the people were ceremonious and stately, their refinement artificial, adopted only in their external intercourse, not habitual, nor retained to purify domestic life.

Chivalry, though its influence diminished daily, Chivalry.  
still subsisted as a splendid spectacle, supported by the mutual emulation of princes, their enthusiastic gallantry, or their predilection for arms and exploits of valour. Francis and James IV. imbibed the genuine spirit of chivalry ; and in

<sup>10</sup> " At Rosny are still shewn two stone benches, where the illustrious Sully enjoyed domestic comfort, himself seated, and the rest of his family standing uncovered near a bench facing him." Vid. Mirabeau's Considerations on the Order of Cincinnatus ; note AA.

<sup>11</sup> Vid. Tract. ut supra — Fenn's Letters, passim.



an age when craft began to predominate in politics, their conduct was often preposterously adjusted by the precipitate dictates of romantic honour. The introduction of refinement and taste in Scotland is ascribed to the espousals of James and Margaret; but although the people were fierce and untractable, the court was polished, and the King, whose deportment during the celebration of his nuptials was remarked and recorded, displayed the courtesy of an accomplished knight, and a delicacy far superior to the English monarchs<sup>12</sup>. Henry VIII. delighted in chivalry; its spirit neither perverted his judgment, nor improved his heart; but his tournaments gratified his taste for magnificence and his passion for arms. On these amusements, in which he engaged as a constant combatant, his father's treasures were profusely expended. His weapons sometimes were unusual, at least at tournaments, the battle-axe, and two-handed sword<sup>13</sup>; but these, I suppose, were *rebated*, or blunted, as the spears were with which the combatants were furnished. Yet on one occasion his life was endangered by his favourite Brandon, who shivered a spear on his helmet, without perceiving that his vizor was open, and his face exposed to a mortal blow<sup>14</sup>. At his interview with Francis in *the field of the cloth of gold*, his strength and dexterity were both conspicuous in a tournament perhaps the most splendid of the age. The two

<sup>12</sup> Vid. An account of Margaret's Journey to Scotland, and reception there, in Leland's Collect. vol. iv. p. 265.

<sup>13</sup> Herbert's Hist. p. 13.

<sup>14</sup> Hall, 122.  
kings,

kings, who, with fourteen companions, had undertaken to encounter all who challenged, entered the lists with their assistants, sumptuously arrayed in the richest tissues; and in the presence of their queens awaited the appearance of those knights whom the fame of their tournament was supposed to have attracted. Their opponents were ready, twelve gentlemen richly habited. Francis began; and after performing successive courses, and breaking several spears with applause, was succeeded by Henry, who shivered his spear at the first encounter; at the second, demolished his antagonist's helmet. Their joustings were continued for five days with equal splendour and similar success; and the minute descriptions of the attire of the knights, and the trappings of the horses, of their quaint devices and feats in arms, assure us that these spectacles were highly estimated<sup>25</sup>. The mock encounters of princes appear at present unimportant and trivial, as those of the mimic monarchs of the stage; yet if a servile or brutal exhibition delighted, by its massacre, the refined and rational nations of antiquity, how superior, as a spectacle, is the image of war, where kings and heroes are the only combatants!

These, inspected at a distance, were magnificent times, yet diversified withal, when examined closely, with simplicity of manners, and plainness or penury in the chief comforts of modern life. Margaret, on her marriage with James IV., made her public entry into Edinburgh, riding on a pil-

Simplicity  
of the  
times.

<sup>25</sup> Hall, 77.

lion behind the King<sup>16</sup>. The apartments of Hampton-court had been furnished, on a particular occasion, each with a large candlestick, a bason, goblet, and ewer, of silver; yet the furniture of Henry's chamber, independent of the bed and cupboard, consisted only of a joint-stool, a pair of andirons, and a small mirror<sup>17</sup>. The halls and chambers of the wealthy were surrounded with hangings, sometimes of arras, and replenished with a cupboard, long tables, or rather loose boards placed upon trestles, forms, a chair, and a few joint-stools<sup>18</sup>. Their beds were apparently comfortable, often elegant; but those of inferior condition slept on a mat, or a straw pallet, under a rug, with a log for a pillow. Glass windows were confined to churches and mansions, and carpets were only employed to garnish the cupboard<sup>19</sup>. The floors, composed of clay, and covered either with sand or rushes, were foul and loathsome, collecting and retaining for twenty years the offals of the table, and the putrid excretions of dogs and men; and Erasmus, from whom this description is taken, attributes justly to the uncleanness of the English, the frequent and destructive visitations of the plague.<sup>20</sup>

Virtues.

The morals are less flexible than the manners of a people; and those virtues that in former ages distinguished the British, subsisted in the present with little alteration. The English were generous

<sup>16</sup> Leland's Coll. vol. iv. p. 284.

<sup>17</sup> Supra, ch. v. sect. 1. Strutt, vol. iii. p. 69.

<sup>18</sup> Id. 65.

<sup>19</sup> Hollingshed, p. 188. Tract. ut supra. Vid. Strutt.

<sup>20</sup> Epist. 432.

and



and brave as formerly, fond of war and intrepid in danger. Their hospitality continued, not indeed in its former profusion, but corrected rather than abated by the changes produced on the modes of life. Their active virtues have already been enumerated in our former volumes, in a manner that renders repetition unnecessary. Their predominant vices afford a more copious and ungrateful subject; for the reformation detected the profligate lives of the monks and clergy, and the eloquence of the pulpit, acquiring from the reformers a new direction and additional vigour, touched with freedom or asperity the vices of the people.

Ignorance, a venial imperfection in the laity, becomes criminal in those who profess to teach or to discover the way to salvation; but perhaps the ignorance formerly conspicuous both in the monastics and the secular clergy, diminished after the dawn of reformation and letters. Their pravity did not diminish however, but resisted, at least in England, the censures of their enemies, and the sense of their own impendent danger. The visitations that preceded the suppression of the monasteries, discovered, if credit be due to the inspectors, crimes the most degrading to human nature. Hypocritical sanctity and holy frauds are congenial to every monastic institution; and the counterfeit relics imposed on the vulgar, or the artifices practised to support their credit, are to be regarded as the established trade and profession of religious orders. Intemperance is also to be expected wherever ascetics have obtained a relaxation from rigid discipline;

Vices of  
the clergy.

nor is their guilt inexpressible, if, after indulging in evening collations, they assembled irregularly, and drunk to matins. But the reports are replete with other crimes of a deeper complexion; the lewdness of the monks, the incontinence of the nuns, the abortions forcibly procured by the latter, and the monstrous lusts which the former indulged<sup>21</sup>. The particulars would stain and dishonour our page; yet an historian, anxious for the dignity of human nature, might wish to believe, that the reports of the visitors were inflamed by zeal, and perverted by an interested and malignant policy. It is difficult to conceive that they would venture, unsupported by evidence, to accuse a community of crimes repugnant to human nature; and their veracity seems to be vindicated by their extreme solicitude to preserve some convents whose conduct was exemplary. But these crimes were apparently notorious; nor is their existence doubtful, or the licentious lives of the regulars disputable, when their debaucheries had already attracted the papal indignation, and their crimes incurred the censures and menaces of Morton the primate. If, at the commencement of this period, the monks of St. Alban's had begun, in different convents, to displace the nuns, and substitute prostitutes, it is not probable that their morals were afterwards improved or their discipline re-established.<sup>22</sup>

Their hospitality.

The monks, however, had a merit in their liberal hospitality and charity. Their tables were open

<sup>21</sup> Strype, vol. i. ch. 34 and 35. Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. i. p. 241. Antiq. Repertory, vol. iii. 166.

<sup>22</sup> Supra, ch. ii.

to strangers, and as the cheer was excellent, much frequented by the neighbouring gentlemen. At St. Alban's, and probably at other abbeys, every traveller found an hospitable reception for three days; and was then permitted, if his conduct was satisfactory, or his business important, to protract his stay<sup>23</sup>. The fragments of their luxury furnished an extensive charity; and their indulgence to their tenants, whose rents were always moderate, endeared them to the peasants. In Scotland, where the regulars were not, I believe, so dissolute, similar hospitality was supported in monasteries; and in the abbey of Aberbrothick, about nine thousand bushels of malt seem to have been annually expended in ale<sup>24</sup>. But these communities were prejudicial, even by their charities, to the increase of industry; and their dissolution assures us that the most venerable institutions, however sanctioned by time or supported by prejudice, may be suppressed, when useless, without detriment or danger to society. It is probable that forty thousand were discharged from different religious houses; and it is certain that a number, superior to that of the clergy at present, was absorbed with facility into the mass of the people.

From the morals of the clergy, the transition to those of the laity is natural; and Henry, after dislodging vice from the cloisters, proceeded, in the same strain of reformation, to cleanse the stewes. These were a range of buildings in South-

Vices of  
the people.

<sup>23</sup> Antiq. Rep. vol. iii. p. 61.

<sup>24</sup> Chartulary.



wark, on the banks of the Thames, privileged by patent as brothels, regulated by statute, and tolerated as a necessary drain for corruption, from the reign of Henry II. to the last year of Henry VIII. The wretched prostitutes were then expelled, the stews were *put down* by sound of trumpet<sup>25</sup>; and their suppression was perhaps attended with more solemnity than that of the convents. Their suppression failed however to extirpate lewdness; and Latimer, whose sermons are replete with a barbarous eloquence, inveighs bitterly at its subsequent prevalence: "You have  
 " put down the stews," says this rude declaimer,  
 " but what is the matter amended? What availeth  
 " that? Ye have but changed the place, and  
 " not taken the whoredom away. I advertise  
 " you, in God's name, to look to it. I hear say  
 " there is now more whoredom in London than  
 " ever there was in the Bank. There is more  
 " open whoredom, more *stewed* whoredom<sup>26</sup>." The vices obnoxious to clerical censures are not always pernicious to society, nor is their magnitude certain, when transmitted through the medium of intemperate zeal. But Latimer's proposal, in a court sermon, for restraining adultery by a capital punishment, attests its prevalence<sup>27</sup>; nor is any inferior infliction too severe for a crime that embitters life, and corrodes the dearest connexions of nature; a crime, in its ultimate consequences, subversive either of social

<sup>25</sup> Stowe's Survey, by Strype, vol. ii. p. 7. Howel, Londonopolis, p. 337.

<sup>26</sup> Latimer's Sermons, p. 43.

<sup>27</sup> Id. 103.

intercourse, or productive of an utter relaxation of morals.

The vices and the follies peculiar to the age are necessarily the chief topics of pulpit eloquence; and, if credit were due to this severe reformer, the statesmen and judges were corrupted by bribery, the people profligate, destitute of charity, immersed in vice, and devoted to perdition<sup>28</sup>.

Wherever government is arbitrary, the administration of justice is perverted and partial; and judges subservient to regal influence are certainly not inaccessible to secret corruption. The unmeaning oaths to which the English have in every age been addicted are peculiarly offensive to pious ears, and in some minds generate a persuasion, that a people habituated to profane swearing are disaffected to the Deity whose name they dishonour, impervious to religion, and insensible of virtue. It may be observed, however, with more propriety, that habitual swearing diminishes our sense of the obligation attached to judicial oaths. Perjury was still the predominant vice that tainted the morals of every rank, and infected even the breast of the sovereign. Juries were perjured; their verdicts were generally procured by bribery; their corruption was notorious, and encouraged openly by Henry VII. in the iniquitous prosecution of his own subjects<sup>29</sup>. Princes claim and obtain an exemption from vulgar

<sup>28</sup> Latimer's Sermons, p. 18. 46. 55. 63. 66. 84.

<sup>29</sup> Stowe, 485. 11 Hen. VII. c. 21. 23 Hen. VIII. c. 3. Barrington's Observ. on the Stat. p. 410.

honesty;

honesty; and that which is fraud and perfidy in private life, is dignified, in their transactions, by the appellation of policy; yet the reader must observe, with some surprise, the repeated examples contained in this history, of princes corroborating, by mutual oaths and the rites of religion, those treaties which they had previously determined to frustrate or violate. Their treaties are at present neither more permanent nor more secure; but the intervention of oaths is wisely omitted as a superfluous adjection, not obligatory on the lax morals peculiar to princes.

Robbery.

To these crimes may be added theft and robbery, which were still so prevalent, that twenty-two thousand criminals are said to have been executed by the rigid justice of Henry VIII. Robbery was seldom attended with murder, and was probably still regarded as an occupation, of which the guilt might be extenuated by courage and success<sup>30</sup>. Murders and assassinations are frequent, however, in Scottish history, for the people were cruel, fierce, and ungovernable; and, to judge from the desperate crimes of the nobility, their manners were neither more softened, nor their passions better controlled and regulated. But whatever be the crimes of a people, there is in human nature a reforming principle that ultimately corrects and amends its degeneracy; and history furnishes repeated examples of nations passing from even a vicious effeminacy to an enthusiasm that regenerates every virtue. Such a change was effected, in a partial

Religion.

<sup>30</sup> Hollingshed, p. 186. 199. 246.

degree,



degree, by the reformation; which, recalling its profelytes from the errors and abuses of the Romish superstition, taught them to renounce the dissipation and vices of the age, to assume the badge of superior sanctity and more rigid virtue, to suffer in adversity with patience, and to encounter persecution and death with fortitude. Sectaries, from the constant circumspection requisite in their conduct, contract an habitual and gloomy severity; and foreigners, ever more observant than natives, discovered, in the present period, symptoms of that puritanical spirit which, at the distance of a century, was destined to give liberty to England and law to kings.<sup>31</sup>

The reformation might reflect discredit on recent miracles; but the period is still distinguished by excessive credulity. The astrologers in 1523., from the approach of eclipses and planetary conjunctions, predicted incessant rains and destructive inundations: the people were alarmed; many retired to the high grounds for safety; the abbot of Bartholomew in Smithfield built a house, which he stored with provisions, on Harrow-of-the-Hill; and those who reposed in the promise to Noah, were still apprehensive of a partial inundation, and collected meal sufficient for subsistence till the waters subsided. But the year elapsed with little rain, and the astrologers redeemed their credit, by confessing a mistake in their calculations of an hundred years<sup>32</sup>. The reformers probably were less credulous; but,

Credulity.

<sup>31</sup> Erasmi Epist. 127. Scaliger. 21.<sup>32</sup> Hall, Hen. VIII. 125.

believing

believing that the Pope was antichrist, they expected, as his power was partly broken, the speedy arrival of Christ in judgment; and, in every unusual appearance of the heavens, perceived, with a mixture of hope and trepidation, those signs supposed to announce the cessation of time, and destruction of the world<sup>33</sup>. An Egyptian experiment repeated by James IV. exhibits the superstitious credulity of the Scots. Whether to discover the primitive language of the human race, or to ascertain the first formation of speech, he inclosed two children with a dumb attendant in Inchkeith, an uninhabited island of the Forth; and it was believed that the children, on arriving at maturity, communicated their ideas in pure Hebrew, the language of Paradise.<sup>34</sup>

I would mention as an instance of credulity, the belief of a monstrous production of the human species, but the concurrence of grave historians attests and renders the fact indisputable. This monster was born in Scotland, and its appearance suggested the idea of twins fortuitously conjoined in the womb, united at the navel into a common trunk, and terminating below in the limbs of a male, but disparted above into two bodies, distinct and proportioned in all their parts, each endued with separate members, and animated each by a separate intelligence. Their sensations were common when excited in the loins or inferior extremities; peculiar to one, and unfelt by the other, when produced on the par-

<sup>33</sup> Latimer, 247.

<sup>34</sup> Pittscottie, 104.

ticular body of either. Their perceptions were different, their mental affections unconnected, their wills independent, at times discordant, and again adjusted by mutual concession. They received, by the direction of James IV., such liberal education as the times afforded; attained in music to considerable proficiency, and acquired a competent knowledge of various languages. Their death was miserable: at the age of twenty-eight the one expired; and his body corrupting, tainted and putrified his living brother.<sup>35</sup>

The feudal system was productive, among other Customs. preposterous customs, of early marriages, formed without disparagement of rank or birth, but without regard to disparity of age or repugnance of sentiment. Vassals, during their wardship, were at the absolute disposal of their lord, who literally sold them, while minors, in marriage; and prudent fathers, to frustrate his rapacity, were careful to accelerate, before their death, the nuptials of their offspring. The custom extended beyond the necessity from which it originated, and the death of Prince Arthur is to be ascribed to the premature consummation, at the age of fifteen, of his marriage with Katherine. When, on her divorce from Henry, a proof of that delicate circumstance was requisite, the opinion of two witnesses, the Duke of Norfolk and the Earl of Shrewsbury, was found-

<sup>35</sup> Buchanan, 242. Pitcottie, 103. Hawthornden, 69.

Mortua, quin etiam jungebat corpore vivis,  
Componens manibusque manus, atque oribus ora  
Tormenti genus! et sanie taboque fluentes  
Complexu in misero, longa sic morte necabat.

VIRGIL.



ed on their own marriage at the age of Prince Arthur; and it is remarkable that Herbert, the historian of these transactions, was himself married at the same age to a woman of twenty<sup>36</sup>. Chivalry was the season of romantic love; yet, as mankind are actuated chiefly by interest, marriage, with few exceptions, has in every age been a sordid bargain.

The mode which is still peculiar to Britain, of saluting ladies, appears to have excited the surprise of foreigners; and Erasmus, who approved of it as a laudable custom, avers with pleasantry, that whether you visit, depart, or return, whether you assemble by concert, or encounter by accident, you cannot stir in England without an interchange of luscious kisses<sup>37</sup>. An interchange not so disinterested was supported at court, where, on the new year, the king accepted, from his nobles and clergy, of gifts from five to fifty pounds, and repaid them either with smiles or occasional presents of gilt plate<sup>38</sup>. On solemn festivals, the king and his nobles bestowed each his *largeſs* on the guards or attendants, and an herald proclaimed the different donations with much solemnity; but James IV. delicately suppressed, at his marriage, the mention of his own, when his queen's was published<sup>39</sup>. Marriages, christenings, and established festivals, furnished frequent occa-

<sup>36</sup> Herbert's Hist. p. 270. Herbert's Life, p. 26.

<sup>37</sup> Epist. 65. In the description of Margaret's journey to Scotland, which was written by an herald, every kiss that she received is recorded with care. Let. Col. vol. iv.

<sup>38</sup> Strype, vol. i. p. 138. Walpole's Anec. vol. i.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid.

sions for convivial intercourse; but the gentlemen are described as assembling at other times in fields or forests, with hawks and hounds, and bugles suspended in filken baldricks<sup>40</sup>. There, under the pretext of hunting, they had often concerted rebellions, or convoked their military retainers to arms; and an early statute of Henry VII.'s still prohibits their hunting in vizors, or during the darkness and concealment of night.<sup>41</sup>

The domestic manners of the Scots have seldom attracted historical notice; and their advances in refinement are to be collected or conjectured from their peculiar customs, their progress in the arts, and their improvements in the various comforts of life. Their morals, contrasted with those of their ancestors, are arraigned as degenerate by their historian Boethius, who accuses their intemperance, censures their luxury, and laments their departure from the frugal moderation and rugged virtues of the ancient Scots<sup>42</sup>. His description, however, of these primitive, obdurate virtues is far from attractive; and what *he* denominates vicious intemperance and excessive luxury, may be fairly interpreted an increasing refinement, and superior elegance in social life. The nobles, who resorted seldom to cities, preserved in their castles their former rude but hospitable magnificence, which increased their retainers, and strengthened their power, secured their safety, or enabled them to prosecute their

<sup>40</sup> Tract. ut supra, in the Antiq. Repert.

<sup>41</sup> 1 Hen. VII. ch. 7.

<sup>42</sup> Boethius Descript. Scot. p. 12.

deadly feuds. The people were divided into factions by those lords to whom they attached themselves, whose interest they espoused, and whose quarrels they adopted <sup>43</sup>; and the clans peculiar at present to the Highlands, were probably once universal in Scotland. In the Highlands, and on the borders, clans were perpetuated by a constant warfare, that inured the people to the fierceness and rapine of a predatory life. As thieves and plunderers, their character was proverbial; yet the depredations committed generally on hostile tribes, assume an appearance of military virtue; and their mutual fidelity, their observance of promises, and, in the Highlands, their inviolable attachment to their chieftains, are circumstances sufficient almost to redeem their character <sup>44</sup>. The Chattan clan, during the minority of James V., had made a destructive incursion into Murray, but after their return were assailed and oppressed by superior forces; and two hundred of the tribe, rather than betray their chieftain or disclose his retreat, preferred and suffered an ignominious death <sup>45</sup>.

**Languages.** The mutability of language, to the learned, whose fame depends on its duration, an incessant topic of serious regret, seems to be counteracted by the art of printing, which, in proportion as it disseminates a taste for letters, re-acts as a model on colloquial speech, and operates, if not entirely to repress innovation, at least to preserve the stability, and perpetuate the radical structures of

<sup>43</sup> Major's Hist. p. 32.

<sup>44</sup> Lefly's Hist. pp. 56. 61.

<sup>45</sup> Id. 425.



language. Such stability the English language has acquired from printing, and at the distance of three centuries, still exhibits the same phraseology and syntactical form, varied only by those alterations essential to the progressive refinement of speech. The language of the period, if necessary to discriminate its peculiar style, was unpolished and oral; its character is rude simplicity, neither aspiring to elegance, nor solicitous of ease, but written as it was spoken, without regard to selection or arrangement. Reduced to modern orthography, it is only distinguishable from the common colloquial discourse of the present period, by a certain rust of antiquity, by phrases that are abrogated, or words that are either effaced or altered. These, however, are not numerous; and we may conclude, from the compositions of the learned, that the language of the people differed little from the present, unless in pronunciation, which, to judge from orthography, was harsh, and such as would now be denominated provincial or vulgar. Whatever has been since superadded, either by a skilful arrangement, or the incorporation of foreign or classical words and idioms, is more the province of critical disquisition than historical research; yet it merits observation, that the first attempts at elegance are ascribable, in poetry to Surry, in prose perhaps to Sir Thomas More, whose English style, as it was modelled on his Latin, is constructed with art, and replete with inversions, approaching to that which, in contradistinction to the vulgar, may be justly denominated a learned diction.

This history has already furnished sufficient specimens both of the Scottish and English languages, which, descended from the same Gothic original, and nearly similar in former periods, divaricated considerably during the present. This is to be attributed to the alteration and improvement of the English, for the Scottish was more stationary; nor is there in the language, a material difference between the compositions of James the First, and those of Bellenden <sup>46</sup>, Dunbar, and Douglas; each of whom, by the liberal adaptation of Latin words, enriched and polished his vernacular idiom. But for the union of the crowns, which in literature rendered the English the prevalent language, the Scottish might have risen to the merit of a rival dialect, different rather in pronunciation than structure; not so solemn, but more energetic, nor less susceptible of literary culture.

Dress.

Dress, submitted to the guidance of taste or vanity, is first displayed in magnificence; then, when the improvement of manufactures has rendered magnificence cheap and common, in the incessant change and variety of fashion. The dress of the period was costly, and in its fashions subject to frequent fluctuation; so costly, that the wardrobes of the nobility in fifty years had increased to twenty times their former value <sup>47</sup>; so changeable, that the capricious inconstancy of the national dress was quaintly represented by the figure of an Englishman naked, in a

<sup>46</sup> Bellenden, Archdeacon of Murray, translated Livy and Hector Boethius into Scotch; the latter was published, the former is in MSS. in the Advocates' Library in Edinburgh.

<sup>47</sup> Fitzherbert's Husbandry, p. 96.



musling posture, with sheers in his hand, and cloth on his arm, perplexed amidst a multiplicity of fashions, and uncertain how to devise his garments <sup>48</sup>. These fashions it is impossible now to discover, but the general dress of the period may be described from prints and pictures with sufficient precision.

The dress of the nobility, during the reigns of Richard and Henry the Seventh, was grotesque and fantastical, such as renders it difficult at first to distinguish the sex. Over the breeches was worn a petticoat; the doublet was laced, like the stays of a pregnant woman, across a stomacher, and a gown or mantle with wide sleeves descended over the doublet and petticoat down to the ancles. Commoners were satisfied, instead of a gown, with a frock or tunick shaped like a shirt, gathered at the middle, and fastened round the loins by a girdle, from which a short dagger was generally suspended. But the petticoat was rejected after the accession of Henry the Eighth, when the *trauses* or tight breeches, that displayed the minute symmetry of the limbs, was revived, and the length of the doublet and mantle diminished. The fashions which the great have discarded, are often retained by the lower orders, and the form of the tunick, a Saxon garment, may be still discovered in the waggoner's frock; of the *trause*, and perhaps of the petticoat, in the different trowsers that are worn by seamen. These habits were again diversified by minute decorations and changes of fashion: from an opinion

Its fashions.

<sup>48</sup> Camden's Remains, p. 17.



that corpulence contributed to dignity, the doublet was puckered, stuffed, and distended around the body; the sleeves were swelled into large ruffs; and the breeches bolstered about the hips; but how shall I describe an artificial protuberance, gross and indecent, in the age of Henry the Eighth, if we judge from his, and the portraits of others, a familiar appurtenance to the dress of the sovereign, the knight, and mechanic, at a future period retained in comedy as a favourite theme of licentious merriment<sup>49</sup>? The doublet and breeches were sometimes flashed, and, with the addition of a short cloak, to which a stiffened cap was peculiar, resembled the national dress of the Spaniards. The doublet is now transformed into a waistcoat, and the cloak or mantle, to which the sleeves of the doublet were transferred, has been converted gradually into a modern coat; but the dress of the age was justly censured as inconvenient and clumsy. “Men’s servants,” to whom the fashions had descended with the cloaths of their master, “have suche pleytes,” says Fitzherbert, “upon theyr brestes, and ruffles” “uppon theyr sleves, above theyr elbowes, that” “yf theyr mayster, or theym selfe, hadde never” “so greatte neede, they coulde not shoote one” “shote to hurte theyr ennemyes, tyll they had” “caste of theyr cotes, or cut of theyr sleves<sup>50</sup>.”

<sup>49</sup> The codpiece, on which Shakspeare is often so witty, made its first appearance, I believe, at the French court. It appears in a portrait of Henry by Holbein, and became so prevalent, that we discover it even in the picture of a common beadle. Vide Strutt’s *Antiq.* vol. iii.

<sup>50</sup> Fitzherbert’s *Husbandry*, p. 96.

The dress of the peasantry was similar, but more convenient, consisting generally of trunk hose, and a doublet of coarse and durable fustian.<sup>51</sup>

The materials employed in dress were rich and expensive; cloth of gold, furs, silks, and velvets, profusely embroidered. The habits of Henry VIII. and his Queen, on their procession to the

Magnificence.

Tower previous to their coronation, are described by Hall, an historian delighting in shews and spectacles. "His Grace wared in his upperst apparrell

"a robe of crimsyn velvet, furred with armyns;

"his jacket or cote of raised gold; the placard

"embrodered with diamonds, rubies, emeraudes,

"greate pearles, and other riche stones; a greate

"bauderike aboute his necke, of large balaffes.

"The Quene was appareled in white satyn em-

"brodered, her haire hangyng downe to her

"backe, of a very great length, bewtefull and

"goodly to behold, and on her hedde a coro-

"nall, set with many riche orient stones<sup>52</sup>."

The attire of females was becoming and decent, similar in its fashion to their present dress, but

Female dress.

less subject to change and caprice<sup>53</sup>. The large

and fantastic head-dresses of the former age were

superfeded by coifs and velvet bonnets, beneath

which the matron gathered her locks into tufts or

*tussocks*; but the virgin's head was uncovered, and

her hair braided and fastened with ribbons<sup>54</sup>.

Among gentlemen, long hair was fashionable

<sup>51</sup> For a more particular account of the dress of this period, vid. Strutt's Antiq. vol. iii. p. 75. plates 1. 12, 13, 14.

<sup>52</sup> Hall, p. 3.

<sup>53</sup> Polydore Virgil, p. 15.

<sup>54</sup> Latimer, p. 107. Moryson's Itinerary, part iii. p. 179.



through Europe, till the Emperor Charles, during a voyage, devoted his locks for his health or safety<sup>55</sup>; and in England, Henry, a tyrant even in taste, gave efficacy to the fashion by a peremptory order for his attendants and courtiers to *poll their heads*<sup>56</sup>. The same spirit induced him, probably, by sumptuary laws, to regulate the inordinate dress of his subjects. Cloth of gold or tissue was reserved for dukes and marquises; if of a purple colour, for the royal family. Silks and velvets were restricted to commoners of wealth or distinction; but embroidery was interdicted from all beneath the degree of an earl. Cuffs for the sleeves, and bands and ruffs for the neck, were the invention of this period; but felt-hats were of earlier origin, and were still coarser and cheaper than caps or bonnets<sup>57</sup>. Pockets, a convenience unknown to the ancients, are perhaps the latest real improvement on dress; but, instead of pockets, a loose pouch seems to have been sometimes suspended from the girdle.<sup>58</sup>

Scotland.

The Scottish was apparently the same with the English dress, the bonnet excepted, peculiar both in its colour and form. The masks and trains, and superfluous finery of female apparel, had been formerly prohibited; but fashion is superior to human laws, and we learn from the satirical invectives of poets, that the ladies still

<sup>55</sup> Whether in consequence of a vow or a head-ach is disputed by historians, Herbert, p. 316.

<sup>56</sup> Stowe, p. 571.

<sup>57</sup> Strutt, vol. iii. p. 83. 4 Hen. VII. c. 8., by which the price of the best hats is limited to 20d.; of the best caps to 2s. 8d.

<sup>58</sup> Strutt, plate 1. 14. vol. iii.

persisted



persisted in retaining their finery and muzzling their faces.<sup>59</sup>

The diet of the peasantry is subject, in different periods, to few alterations; because it consists of the common produce of the soil, prepared in the simplest manner for food. Their bread-corn in England was rye or barley, sometimes oats mixed with pulse; a food preferred for its nutrition to wheat, which, till rendered by a better cultivation cheap and abundant, was usually confined to the tables of the wealthy<sup>60</sup>. These tables were more luxurious and expensive than formerly; distinguished by the variety of delicate viands, as well as by the quantity of substantial fare<sup>61</sup>; and Polydore expatiates with visible complacency on the various pleasures of those tables at which he had feasted; on the juicy flavour of the mutton, and the sweetness of the beef, especially when slightly salted; on the tenderness of the young geese and the Kentish hens; the delicacy of the partridges, pheasants, and quails; and the fatness of the larks, thrushes, and blackbirds, of which incredible numbers were caught in winter, and presented almost at every table. But his taste was peculiarly gratified by the varieties and abundance of excellent fish, which, to a churchman, renders the mortification even of the appetite luxurious; he discriminates the gurnard, whiting, mullet, tur-

<sup>59</sup> Black Acts, p. 43. The statute provides, "That no woman cum to kirk nor mercat with hir face mussalit." Dunbar and Lindsay inveigh at the extravagance of the ladies in dress.

<sup>60</sup> Moryson's Itinerary, part iii. p. 449.

<sup>61</sup> Fitzherbert's Husbandry, 97. According to this writer, the table was four times more expensive than in former times.

bot, bremé, and sturgeon; depreciates the mackerel as dry, the shad as insipid; extols the rich and delicious oysters, and approves of the recent translation of the pike from fens and lakes into gentlemen's ponds<sup>62</sup>. To these the carp might be added, introduced from the continent in the present period as store for ponds<sup>63</sup>; and from these particulars, to a foreigner important, we may conclude that few delicacies were wanting at feasts. Vegetables, however, were sparingly provided; and as regular markets were not general, country families killed a number of beeves at Michaelmas, and subsisted till Whitsuntide on salted meat.<sup>64</sup>

Manner of  
living.

Their cookery cannot now be appreciated, or distinguished otherwise than by a profusion of hot spices with which every dish was indiscriminately seasoned<sup>65</sup>. Dinner and supper were served in the hall, where the first table was placed in a sort of recess, or elevation, at the upper end, and reserved for the landlord and his principal guests, while visitors less respectable were seated with the officers of the household, at long and narrow tables that occupied the sides and middle of the hall. The rank of the guests was again discriminated by their arrangement, by

<sup>62</sup> Polydore Virgil, p. 13.

<sup>63</sup> Hollingshed, p. 46. Anderson quotes the following distich:

“Turkeys, carps, hops, piccarel, and beer,

“Came into England all in one year.”

Hist. Com. vol. i. p. 354.

<sup>64</sup> Northumberland Household Book.

<sup>65</sup> Above 100lb. of spices were employed annually in the Northumberland Family. *Northumberland Household Book.*

their



their situation above or below the saltcellar, which was placed invariably in the middle of the table, and the usher was carefully instructed to displace such as might seat themselves unmannerly above their betters. The chief servants attended always above the saltcellar, beneath which the table was probably crowded with poor dependents, whom the guests despised, and the servants neglected. The servants were marshalled, and the dishes served, by orders issued aloud from the usher<sup>66</sup>; and at table none presumed to taste of the dishes till they were drawn successively upwards to the principal personage, from whom they descended again to the rest of the company<sup>67</sup>. Churchmen affected peculiar ceremony, and the Abbot of St. Alban's dined with greater state than the nobility themselves. His table was elevated fifteen steps above the hall, and in serving his dinner, the monks, at every fifth step, performed a hymn. He dined alone at the middle of his table, to the ends of which guests of distinguished rank were admitted; and the monks, after their attendance on the Abbot was over, sat down to tables at the sides of the hall, and were served with equal respect by the novices<sup>68</sup>. At Wolsey's entertainment of the French ambassadors, the company were summoned by trumpet to supper, and the courses were announced by a prelude of music. The second course con-

<sup>66</sup> Vid. Notes in the Northumberland Household Book. This mode of living was retained by some great families till the middle of the last century. Ibid.

<sup>67</sup> Hollingshed, 166.

<sup>68</sup> Antiq. Repert. vol. iii. p. 61.



tained upwards of an hundred devices or subtilties; castles, churches, animals, warriors justing on foot and on horseback; others dancing with ladies; “all as well counterfeited,” says the historian, “as the painter should have painted on a cloth or wall<sup>69</sup>.” Such entertainments were not of a short duration; the dinner-hour was eleven in the forenoon, the supper six in the evening; but the dinner was often prolonged till supper, and that protracted till late at night<sup>70</sup>. Breakfast seems to have been a solitary meal, not universal, but, like the collation after supper, confined to a few in their private apartments<sup>71</sup>. But it was not probably an unsubstantial meal; and the collation, the slightest repast of the age, consisted often of brawn, jellies, sweet-meats, ale, brandy, and spiced wines.<sup>72</sup>

In Scot-  
land.

The diet of the Scots was worse, and more penurious than that of the English. The peasants subsisted chiefly on oatmeal and cabbages, for animal food was sparingly used, even at the table of substantial gentlemen. An English traveller, who experienced the hospitality of a Scottish knight, describes the table as furnished with large platters of porridge, in each of which was a small piece of sodden beef, and remarks, that the servants en-

<sup>69</sup> Stowe, p. 535. Cavendish.

<sup>70</sup> Warton's Hist. Poet. vol. iii. p. 343. n. Antiq. Rep. p. 154. 186. Latimer, 108.

<sup>71</sup> Moryson's Itinerary, part iii. p. 150. Hollingshed, 170.

<sup>72</sup> Vid. The Articles of a Collation enumerated in Squire Meldrum, a Scottish Poem, by Sir David Lindsay of the Mount.

tered

tered in their blue caps without uncovering, and, instead of attending, seated themselves with their master at table. *His* mess was better however than theirs, a boiled pullet with prunes in the broth; but his guest observed, “no art of cookery, or furniture of household stuff, but rather “rude neglect of both<sup>73</sup>.” Forks are a recent invention, and in England the table was only supplied with knives; but in Scotland every gentleman produced from his girdle a knife, and cut the meat into morsels for himself and the women; a practice that first intermixed the ladies and gentlemen alternately at table. The use of the fingers in eating required a scrupulous attention to cleanliness, and ablution was customary, at least at court, both before and after meals<sup>74</sup>. But the court and the nobility emulated the French in their manners, and adopted probably their refinements in diet. The Scottish reader will observe, that the knight’s dinner was composed of two coarse dishes peculiar to Scotland<sup>75</sup>; but others of an exquisite delicacy were probably derived from the French, and retained, with little alteration, by a nation otherwise ignorant of the culinary arts. The Scots, though assimilating fast to the English, still resemble the French in their tables.

<sup>73</sup> Moryson’s *Itinerary*, part iii. p. 155. Moryson’s journey into Scotland was in 1598: but his landlord seems to have retained the manners of the former age.

<sup>74</sup> Leland’s *Collectanea*, vol. iv. p. 283.

<sup>75</sup> The one was, salt meat and oatmeal boiled together; the other, a fowl boiled with leeks and prunes;—both national dishes.



## Liquors.

Ale and Gascony wines were the principal liquors; but mead, cyder, and perry, were not uncommon. Hops were still scarce, and seldom employed in ale, which was brewed therefore in small quantities, to be drank while new. At the king's table ale was prohibited as unfit for use till five days old<sup>76</sup>. The wines, whatever was their quality, were certainly superior to our present harsh and astringent port; yet Erasmus complains repeatedly that good wine was unknown in England. His frail and sickly constitution required wine of a peculiar age and quality; and it is probable that his poverty deterred him from procuring the best<sup>77</sup>. The wine was still circulated in a large cup, from which the company drank alternately<sup>78</sup>. The English were sober, the Scotch intemperate; they are accused at least by their own historians of excessive drinking; an imputation long attached to their national character.<sup>79</sup>

## Diversions.

Martial diversions have been already described, and the sports of the field are, in different ages, pursued with an uniformity almost permanent. In England hunting has ever been a favourite diversion, and hawking has only been superseded by the fustil; but it was still practised with unabating ardour, and cultivated scientifically as a liberal art. Treatises were composed on the diet and discipline proper for the falcon; the genus was discriminated like social life, and a species appropriated to every intermediate rank, from an emperor down to a

<sup>76</sup> Strutt, vol. iii. p. 72. 108.<sup>77</sup> Epist. 447.<sup>78</sup> Epist. 124. 144.<sup>79</sup> Boethius, p. 15. Moryson, 156.



knave or peasant; nor were gentlemen more distinguished by the blazoning of heraldry, than by the particular hawks they were entitled to carry<sup>80</sup>. The long bow was also employed in fowling, a sport in which much dexterity was requisite; but archery was even a female amusement; and it is recorded that Margaret, on her journey to Scotland, killed a buck with an arrow in Alnwick Park<sup>81</sup>. The preservation of the feathered game was enforced in the present age by a statute, the first that was enacted of those laws which have since accumulated into a code of oppression.<sup>82</sup>

The Scottish monarchs hunted in the Highlands, sometimes in a style of eastern magnificence. For the reception of James V., the Queen his mother, and the Pope's ambassador, the Earl of Atholl constructed a palace or bower of green timber, interwoven with boughs, moted around, and provided with turrets, portcullice, and drawbridge, and furnished within with whatever was suitable for a royal abode. The hunting continued for three days, during which, independent of roes, wolves, and foxes, six hundred deer were captured; an incredible number, unless we suppose that a large district was surrounded, and the game driven into a narrow circle to be slain, without fatigue, by the King and his retinue. On their departure the Earl set fire to the palace, an honour that excited the ambassador's surprise; but the King informed him that it was customary with Highlanders to

Hunting.

<sup>80</sup> Strutt, vol. iii. p. 124.<sup>81</sup> Leland's Collect. vol. iv. p. 278.<sup>82</sup> 25 Hen. VIII. c. 11.

burn

burn those habitations they deserted. The Earl's hospitality was estimated at the daily expence of a thousand pounds, at present equivalent at least to three thousand pounds sterling.<sup>83</sup>

Masques  
and page-  
ants.

During the present period, several games were invented or practised to the disuse of archery, for the promotion of which, bowls, quoits, cales, tennis, cards, and dice, were prohibited by the legislature as unlawful games<sup>84</sup>. Tennis, however, was a royal pastime, in which Henry VIII. in his youth delighted much: and a match is recorded between him and the Emperor, the Prince of Orange, and the Marquis of Brandenburg<sup>85</sup>. But the favourite amusements of court, next to tournaments, were masques and pageants; the one an Italian diversion subservient to gallantry, the other a vehicle of gross adulation. The masques were destitute of character, humour, and dialogue; they were conducted in dumb show, and their merit consisted in the grotesque disguises of a part of the company, who entered as strangers to dance with the ladies. The masque and pageant were often united; for the pageant was properly a piece of machinery, an artificial mountain, a ship, a castle, in which the masquers were introduced into the hall, or from which, in solemn processions, allegorical personages recited pedantic and long panegyrics.

Theatrical  
amuse-  
ments.

Curiosity is naturally excited concerning the present state, which is properly the origin of the English drama; that state which preceded its

<sup>83</sup> Pitfcottie, 146.

<sup>84</sup> 33 Hen. VIII. c. 9.

<sup>85</sup> Hall, 98.

youthful



youthful vigour, when Shakespeare delineated human nature, even in the wildness of a fairy creation. But historical informations are not satisfactory, and we can only conclude that the revival of letters discredited mysteries, and propagated a purer taste for dramattick composition. We discover that a comedy from Plautus was performed at court, where, at Christmas, plays, or rather short interludes, were often represented<sup>86</sup>. But the revival of letters introduced the drama into schools and colleges; plays were composed by professors, and performed by their pupils; nor did grave lawyers, at their annual festivals, disdain the laurels acquired on the stage<sup>87</sup>. These, however, were temporary stages; but the church is still to be regarded as an established theatre, licensed, not indeed by divine permission, for the gratuitous exhibition of religious spectacles. Dispossessed by the reformers, or interdicted from preaching by the king's supremacy, the popish clergy seceded to secular stages, and endeavoured to discredit the gospellers by farces more efficacious and popular than their former sermons. The reformers retaliated, by converting the mysteries of the church into a satirical representation of the corruptions of popery; and repeated ordinances were afterwards necessary to suppress these ludicrous polemics of

<sup>86</sup> Hall, p. 3. 67. 256.

<sup>87</sup> Warton's Hist. Poet. vol. ii. 366. At Gray's-Inn, during the celebration of Christmas, a play was exhibited by the students, so offensive to Wolsey, that he imprisoned the author, a serjeant Roe, and deprived him of his coif. Hall, 154.



the church and stage<sup>88</sup>. In churches the performers were chiefly the choiristers; at court they were probably minstrels, of whom a company followed Queen Margaret from England, and exhibited several plays or mysteries at the Scottish court<sup>89</sup>. The minstrels, who disappeared under Henry VIII., were probably converted, by the prevalence of theatrical amusements, into itinerant players; in the succeeding reign, an established and apparently a numerous profession.<sup>90</sup>

Bear-bait-  
ing.

A more ignoble, perhaps a more popular spectacle, consisted of bears; “of which,” says Erasmus, “many herds are maintained in Britain, “for the purpose of dancing.” Bear-baiting was a favourite diversion, exhibited as a suitable amusement for a princefs.<sup>91</sup>

Domestic  
diversions.

The winter solstice, when the sun regains his northern direction, was celebrated by our remote and idolatrous ancestors; and Christianity, unable to suppress the festival, transferred it under the same name to a different day. At Christmas, or the feast of *Yule*<sup>92</sup>, peculiar dishes have been always employed, and every domestic diversion

<sup>88</sup> Warton, vol. iii. p. 198. Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. i. p. 318.

<sup>89</sup> Leland's Collect. vol. iv. p. 299, 300. Twenty-pence was the established price of each play exhibited at Christmas in the Northumberland family, and the annual expence of such representations amounted only to 33 shillings. *Northumberland Household Book*.

<sup>90</sup> Warton ut supra. Pinkerton justly remarks that the minstrel, in the entertainment of Queen Elizabeth at Killingworth, is introduced as a character of former times. *Scottish Ballads*, Pref. 74.

<sup>91</sup> Erasmi Adagia, p. 361. Leland's Collect. vol. iv. p. 299.

<sup>92</sup> *Festis Iolenfis*, as it is translated from the Scandinavian language. Vid. Baillie's *Lettres sur les Sciences et sur l'Atlantide*.

adopted

adopted that tends to cheer or to dissipate the gloom of winter. To regulate, or rather to promote such pastimes, a lord or abbot of misrule was created<sup>93</sup>; but of these amusements, perhaps, the most rational was the recital of old and romantic tales. The domestic amusements, in a period subsequent to the present, are thus enumerated: “The ordinary recreations which we have in winter are cards, tables and dice, shovel board, cheffe-play, the philosopher’s game, small trunkes, billiards, musicke, maskes, singing, dancing, ule-games, catches, purposes, questions; merry tales of errant knights, kings, queens, lovers, lords, ladies, giants, dwarfs, thieves, fayries, goblins, friars, witches, and the rest<sup>94</sup>.” Among these amusements cards began to predominate, to be prohibited by parliament, and licensed by the king. Gaming became more inordinate and ruinous<sup>95</sup>; but let not cards be therefore depreciated; an happy invention, which, adapted equally to every capacity, removes the invidious distinctions of nature, bestows on fools the pre-eminence of genius, or reduces wit and wisdom to the level of folly.

<sup>93</sup> In Scotland, the Abbot of Unreason. Arnot’s Hist. Edin.

<sup>94</sup> Burton’s Anatomy of Melancholy, p. 271.

<sup>95</sup> Rymer’s Fœd. vol. xiii. p. 330. vol. xiv. p. 707. Fitzherbert, 98.





# APPENDIX

## TO THE

### SIXTH BOOK.

---

#### NUMBER I.

BIRCH MS. 4160.5. collated with HARL. MS. 482. fol. 128.

[The original of this, in an old written hand, is in the hands of Sir Robert Cotton, 18th August 1616.]

PERKIN WARBECK'S *Proclamation, published in the Time of his Rebellion in the Beginning of the Reign of HENRY VII.*

RICHARD, by the grace of God, king of England and of France, lord of Ireland, prince of Wales: To all those that these our present letters shall see, hear, or read, and to every of them, greeting. And whereas we, in our tender age, escaped, by God's great might, out of the Tower of London, and were secretly conveyed over the sea to other divers countries, there remaining certain years as unknown; the which season it happened one Henry, son to Edmond Tydder, earl of Richmond created, son to Owen Tydder, of low birth, in the county of Wales, to come from France and entered into this our realm, and by subtle false means to obtain the crown of the same unto us of right appertaining. Which Henry is our extreme and mortal enemy; as soon as he had knowledge of our being alive, imagined, compassed, and

wrought all the subtle ways and means he could devise to our final destruction, inſomuch as he hath not only falſely ſurmifed us to be a feigned perſon, giving us nicknames, ſo abuſing your minds, but alſo, to deter and put us from our entry into this our realm, hath offered large ſums of money to corrupt the princes in every land and country ; and that we have been retained with and made importune labour to certain of our ſervants about our perſon, ſome of them to murder our perſon, and other to forſake and leave our righteous quarrel, and to depart from our ſervices, as by Sir Robert Clyfford and other was verified and openly proved ; and, to bring his curſed and malicious intent aforeſaid to his purpoſe, he hath ſubtilly and by crafty means levied outrageous and importable ſums of money upon the whole body of our realm, to the great hurt and impoveriſhing of the ſame : All which ſubtle and corrupt labours by him made, to our great jeopardy and peril, we have, by God's might, graciouſly eſcaped and over-paſſed as well by land as by ſea, and be now with the right high and mighty prince our deareſt couſin the king of Scots ; which, without any gift or other thing by him deſired or demanded to the prejudice or hurt of us or our crown or realm, hath full lovingly and kindly retained us, by whoſe aid and ſupportation we, in proper perſon, be now, by God's grace, entered into this our realm of England, where we ſhall ſhew ourſelves openly unto you ; alſo confounding our ſaid aforeſaid enemy in all his falſe ſayings, and alſo every man of reaſon and diſcretion may well underſtand that him needed not to have made the foreſaid coſtages and importune labour if we had been ſuch a feigned perſon as he untruly ſurmifeth, aſcertaining you how the mind and intent of the foreſaid noble prince our deareſt couſin is, that if that he may find or ſee our ſubjects and natural liege people, according to right and the duty of their allegiance, reſort lovingly unto us with ſuch power as by their poiſſance  
ſhall

shall move, be able of likelyhood to distrefs and subdue our enemies, he is fully set and determined to return home again quietly with his people into his own land, without doing or suffering to be done any hurt or prejudice unto our realm, or to the inhabitants of the same. Also our great enemy, to fortify his false quarrel, hath caused divers nobles of this our realm whom he hath suspect and stood in dread of, to be cruelly murdered, as our cousin the lord Fitzwater, sir William Stanley, sir Robert Chamberlayne, sir Simon Montford, sir Robert Radcliffe, William Daubeney, Humphry Stafford, among others, besides such as have clearly bought their lives; some of which nobles are now in the sanctuary. Also he hath long kept and yet keepeth in prison, our right entirely well-beloved cousin Edward, son and heir to our uncle duke of Clarence, and others, withholding from them their rightful inheritance, to the intent they should be of might and power to aid and assist us at our need, after the duty of their leigeance. He hath also married by compulsion certain of our sisters, and also the sister of our foresaid cousin the earl of Warwick, and divers other ladies of the blood royal, unto certain of his kinsmen and friends of simple and low degree; and putting apart all well-disposed nobles, he hath none in favour and trust about his person but bishop Fox, Smith, Bray, Lovell, Oliver King, sir Charles Somerset, David Owen, Rysely, sir Joseph Tuberville, Tylere, Robert Litton, Guildeford, Chumley, Emson, James Hobart, John Cutte, Garthe, Hansey, Wyot, and such other caitiffs and villains of simple birth; which, by subtle inventions and putting of the people, have been the principal finders, occasioners, and counsellors of the misrule and mischief now reigning in England. Also we be credibly informed, that our said enemy, not regarding the wealth and prosperity of this land, but only the safeguard and surety of his person, hath sent into divers places out of our realm, the foresaid nobles, and caused to



be conveyed from thence to other places the treasure of this our realm, purposing to depart after, in proper person, with many other estates of the land, being now at his rule and disposition; and if he should be so suffered to depart, as God defend it should be, to the greatest hurt, jeopardy, and perill of the whole realm that could be thought or imagined: Wherefore we desire and pray you, and nevertheless charge you and every of you, as ye intend the surety of yourself, and the commonwealth of our land, your native ground, to put you in your most effectual devours with all dilligence to the utmost of your powers, and stop and let his passage out of this our realm: ascertaining you, that what person or persons shall fortune to take or distrefs him, shall have for his or their true acquittal in that behalf after their estate and degrees, so as the most low and simplest of degree that shall happen to take or distrefs him, shall have for his labour one thousand pounds in money, and houses and lands to the yearly value of one hundred marks to him and his heirs for ever. We remembering these promises, with the great and execrable offence daily committed and done by our foresaid great enemy and his adherents, in breaking the liberty and franchises of our mother holy church, to the high displeasure of Almighty God; besides the manifold treasons, abominable murders, manslaughters, robberies, extortions, the daily pilling of the people by dismes, tasks, tollages, benevolences, other unlawful impositions and grievous exactions, with many other heinous offences, to the likely destruction and desolation of the whole realm, as God defend, shall put ourself effectually in our devoir, not as a step-dame, but as the very true mother of the child, languishing or standing in perill to redress and subdue for the foresaid mischief and misrules, and to punish the occasioners and haunTERS thereof after their deserts, in example of others. We shall also by God's grace, and the help and assistance of the great  
lord

lords of our blood, with the council of other sage persons of approved policy, prudence, and experience, dreading God, and having tender zeal and affection to indifferent ministrations of justice and the public weal of the land, peruse and call to remembrance the good laws and customs heretofore made by our noble progenitors kings of England, and see them put in due and lawful execution, according to the effect and true meaning they were first made or ordained for; so that by virtue thereof, as well the disinheriting of rightfull heirs as the injuries and wrongs in anywise committed and done unto the subjects of our realm, both spiritual and temporal, shall be duly redressed, according to right, law, and good conscience; and we shall see that the commodities of our realm be employed to the most advantage of the sameth intercourse of merchandizes betwixt realm and realm, to be ministred and handled as shall now be to the commonweal and prosperity of our subjects; and all such dismes, tasks, tollages, benevolences, and lawful impositions, and grievous exactions, as be above rehearsed, utterly to be foredune and laid apart, and never from henceforth to be called upon, but in such cases as our noble progenitors, kings of England, have of old time been accustomed to have the aid, succour, and help of their subjects and true liegemen.

Also we will, that all such persons as have imagined, compassed, or wrought privily or apparently since the reign of our foresaid enemy, or before, any thing against us, except such as since the reign have imagined our death, shall have their free pardon for the same, of their lives, lands, and goods, so that they at this time, according to right and the duty of their allegiances, take our righteous quarrel, and part, and aid, comfort, and support us with their bodys and goods.

And over this we let you wotte, that upon our foresaid great enemy, his adherents and partakers, with all other such as will take their false quarrel, and stand in their de-

fence against us with their bodys or goods, we shall come and enter upon them as their heavy lord, and take and repute them and every of them as our traitors and rebels, and see them punished according and upon all our subjects, that according to right and the duty of their leigance will aid, succour, and comfort us with their powers, with their lives or goods, or victual our host for ready money ; we shall come and enter upon them lovingly as their natural liege lord, and see they have justice to them equally ministered upon their causes : wherefore we will and desire you and every of you, that incontinent upon the hearing of this our proclamation, ye, according to the duty of your allegiance, are ready yourselves in your best defensible array, and give your personal attendance upon us where we shall then fortune to be ; and in your so doing ye shall find us your right, especial, and singular good lord, and so to see you recompensed and rewarded as by your service unto us shall be deserved

---

## NUMBER II.

*The Confession read by PERKIN WARBECK when set in the Stocks on a Scaffold at Cheapside. Extracted from Grafton, p. 929. Hall, 49.*

FIRST, it is to be knowne, That I was borne in the towne of Turney in Flaunders, and my father's name is John Olbeck, which sayde John Olbeck was comptroller of the said towne of Turney, and my mother's name is Katheryn de Faro ; and one of my grandfires upon my father's side was named Diryek Olbeck, which dyed ; after whose death my grandmother was maryed unto Peter Flamme, that was receaver of the forenamed towne of Turney, and deane of the botemen that rowe upon the water



water or ryver called Lefchelde; and my graundfire upon my mother's fide was Peter de Faro, which had in his keeping the keyes of the gate of Saint John's within the fame town of Turney; also I had an uncle called Maifter John Stalyn, dwelling in the parishe of Saint Pyas within the fame towne, which had married my father's fister, whose name was Jone or Jane, with whome I dwelled a certayne feason; and after I was led by my mother to Andwerp for to learn Flemishe in a house of a coufin of mine, an officer of the said towne, called John Stienbeck, with whome I was the space of halfe a yere; and after that I returned again to Turney, by reason of the warres that were in Flaunders; and within a yere followying I was sent with a marchaunt of the said towne of Turney named Berlo, to the marte of Andwarpe, where I fell sick, which sicknesse continued upon five moneths; and the said Barlo sent me to borde in a skinner's house that dwelled beside the house of the Englishe nation; and by him I was from thence carried to Barowe marte, and I lodged at the signe of the Olde Man, where I abode the space of two moneths; and after this the sayd Barlo sent me with a marchant of Middelborough to service for to learne the language, whose name was John Strewe, with whom I dwelled from Christmas til Easter, and then I went unto Portyngale, in the company of sir Edward Bramptone's wyfe, in a ship which was called the Quene's ship; and when I was come thether, then I was put in service to a knight that dwelled in Lushborne, whicke was called Peter Wars de Cogna, wyth whome I dwelled an whole yere, whiche sayde knight had but one eye; and because I desyred to see other countries, I toke licence of him, and then I put myselfe in service with a Briton, called Pregent Meno, the which brought me with him into Ireland, and when we were there arrived in the towne of Corke; they of the towne, because I was arayed with some clothes of filke of my sayde maister's, came unto me and threaped upon  
mee

mee that I should be the duke of Clarence sonne that was before time at Duellin; and forasmuch as I denied it, there was brought unto me the holy Evangelists and the crosse by the maior of the towne, which was called John le Mellen, and there in the pefence of him and other I tooke my othe as the truthe was, that I was not the forsayde duke's sonne, nor nonne of his blood : and after this came unto me an Englishman, whose name was Stephen Poytron, with one John Water, and layde to me in swearyng great othes, that they knew well that I was king Richarde's bastard sonne; to whom I answered with like othes, that I was not; and then they advised me not to be afearde, but that I should take it upon me boldly, and if I would so do, they would ayde and assist me with all their power against the king of England, and not only they, but they were assured well that the erles of Desmond and Kildare should do the same; for they forced not what parte they tooke, so that they might be revenged upon the king of England, and so against my will made me to learn Englishe, and taught me what I should do and say; and after this they called me Duke of Yorke, second sonne of king Edward the fourth, because king Richarde's bastard sonne was in the handes of the king of England; and upon this the sayde John Water, Stephen Poytron, John Tiler, Hughbert Burgh, with many other, as the forsayde erles, entered into this false quarrell: and within a short time after the French king sent an ambassador into Ireland, whose name was Loyte Lucas, and mayster Stephyn Fryam, to advertise me to come into Fraunce; and thence I went into Fraunce, and from thence into Flaunders, and from Flaunders into Ireland, and from Ireland into Scotland, and so into England.

## NUMBER III.

*Dissertation on the Character of PERKIN WARBECK,  
and on the Crimes imputed to Richard the Third.*

THIS Appendix the author lived not to execute; and it is much to be regretted, that no memorial remains of his opinion on a subject so long controverted, and still so obscure. The character of Richard, and the transactions during his troubled reign, are inseparable from the controversy concerning Warbeck; and of that controversy, a particular examination is considered as requisite to complete this volume. Historical dissertation admits of minuter research, and more critical disquisition than general history; nor am I responsible if, in some particulars, these researches correspond not entirely with the text of our author.

The murder of Richard's nephews is represented by most historians as the necessary sequel of his former crimes. He meditated, it is said, at an early period, his accession to the throne, and for that purpose promoted the execution of Clarence, his brother, and procured from parliament the attainder of his issue. On the death of Edward IV. he intercepted the person of the young king, and imprisoned his kinsmen, conducted him with pomp and seeming respect to the Tower, obtained or extorted from the privy council the office of protector, professed in public, and with repeated oaths, his allegiance to his nephew, but concerted secretly to despoil him of his crown. Alike regardless of the ties of friendship, of oaths, and of bloodshed, he executed, without trial, Hastings, his friend, Gray, Rivers, Vaughan, and others, from whom he apprehended obstruction to his schemes; and then circulated absurd reports, to persuade the people that his nephews were bastards, and himself the  
legitimate



legitimate heir of the crown. It was insinuated, that Richard alone was legitimate, as his brothers had sprung from their mother's illicit amours, and asserted, that Edward's previous marriage with Elizabeth Lucy, rendered his connexion with the queen adulterous, and their issue spurious. The last topic was employed by Buckingham, who harangued the citizens on Richard's pretensions; and obtaining a few faint acclamations, he proceeded next day, with the mayor and aldermen, to tender the crown to Richard, who, after much affected importunity, consented to reign. Such an usurpation was to be secured by the murder of the young princes; and is it credible that Richard, the perjured Richard, whose steps to the throne were marked with blood, would abtain from the devoted lives of his nephews? Their removal was requisite for his security; for conspiracies were forming to restore them to liberty, and reinstate them in their rights. That they were removed by murders is demonstrated by their sudden disappearance, and the subsequent prevailing report of their death; by Richard's inability to produce them in order to dispel such rumours; by his proposed alliance with their sister Elizabeth, whose right to the crown was only valid in the event of their death; and by the united testimony of the principal Yorkists, who, assured that the princes were dead, joined the Lancastrians to dethrone the tyrant. The particulars of the murder were afterwards investigated, authenticated by the confession of the surviving assassins, and in a subsequent age corroborated by the accidental discovery of the bodies. Warbeck, who personated the younger brother, was therefore an impostor. His story is incredible; those who dispatched his brother spared him from compassion, and connived at his escape. In that event, instead of consuming his early youth as an obscure wanderer, he must have speedily re-appeared in the Netherlands, at his aunt the duchess of Burgundy's court; and the partisans of

of York must have been soon apprised of his miraculous escape. But he appeared not till nine years afterwards, not till the support which the duchess had given to another impostor, disclosed her ignorance of his escape, and her readiness to concur in every similar imposture, distressing to Henry. And the evidence, apparently so complete, is fortified and rendered irresistible by Warbeck's voluntary confession at the gibbet, when he had nothing to expect from Henry's clemency, and nothing farther to apprehend from his power.

The preceding is certainly a plausible narrative, if not entirely consistent with historical truth. Nor is its truth contested, unless by a few, whose opinion, however, the result of judicious and accurate inquiries, is entitled to peculiar respect and attention<sup>1</sup>. The controversy between them resolves into four general divisions, or portions, I. The crimes attributed to Richard's youth; II. His usurpation or acquisition of the crown; III. The fate of his nephews; and IV.. The pretensions and character of Perkin Warbeck. But it is necessary, previous to such inquiries, to ascertain the credit due to original authorities, and these have been properly reduced to the unknown continuator of the Chronicle of Croyland Abbey, to Rous, Fabian, and Sir Thomas More. The three first were contemporary with Richard, the last with Warbeck; but Fabian was a wretched annalist, more attentive to the succession of mayors and sheriffs, than to the transactions of princes; and Rous, a recluse priest, seems to have written without information, but with all the bigotry and prejudice of the Lancastrian party. The Chronicle of Croyland is less partial; the author is favourable to Edward's memory, and expresses some regret at the indignities offered to Richard's body. Sir Thomas More is a copious historian, and his narrative of Richard's usurpa-

<sup>1</sup> With the respected names of Carte and Walpole, may I inscribe that of the late Dr. Henry?

tion, and the murder of his nephews, has been transcribed in every subsequent Chronicle, adopted by Polydore Virgil, and followed almost implicitly by modern historians. To these Bacon has been added as an original authority; a character to which Buck is equally entitled, as both had access to original papers that are now destroyed. But in these inquiries, it is chiefly necessary to guard against the imposing authority of great names.

I. An impartial historian must exculpate Richard of the crimes imputed to his early youth<sup>2</sup>, the murder of Henry VI., of his son prince Edward, and perhaps of Clarence. According to the Croyland Chronicle, prince Edward, the duke of Somerset, the earl of Devonshire, and others, were slain at the battle of Tewkesbury, or afterwards, *ultrixibus quorundam manibus*; according to Fabian, Edward, on receiving a blow from the king, was dispatched by his servants; but in the next century, historians, improving on the story, devolved this menial office on Clarence, Dorset, Hastings, and Gloucester<sup>3</sup>. The death of Henry happened, according to Fabian, on the eve of Ascension, the night after king Edward's triumphal arrival in London; a concurrence of circumstances sufficient to afford just suspicion of a violent death. It was variously related, says Fabian; but the prevailing report was, that Richard stabbed him. The Croyland Chronicle is less explicit: *Taceo hoc temporum interstitio, inventum esse corpus regis Henrici, in turrim Londiniarum exanime; parcat Deus, et spatium penitentiae ei donet, quicumque tam sacrilegas manus in Christum Domini, ausus est immittere. Unde agens tyranni*

<sup>2</sup> Richard, who perished prematurely at the age of thirty-two, was a youth of eighteen at the battle of Tewkesbury. It is not likely that such a boy would be employed to assassinate Henry and his son.

<sup>3</sup> Hall, Grafton, Hollingshed. Stowe, a more judicious author, adheres strictly to Fabian. Buck quotes an ancient MS. Chronicle in Sir Robert Cotton's custody, to prove that Richard, though present, drew not his sword. Buck apud Kennet. See Chron. Croyl. p. 555.



*patiensque gloriosi martyris, titulum mereatur*<sup>4</sup>. The narrative indicates the popular rumour, that the martyr perished by the tyrant's (probably Richard's) hands; but we discover from Hollingshed that the death of Henry, as recorded in certain contemporary writers, was occasioned by extreme grief for the loss of his son, his own disasters, and the ruin of his friends<sup>5</sup>. This, though asserted by writers, "favouring altogether," says Hollingshed, "the house of York," is the more probable, as Richard seems to have entertained too much respect for the good old king, to be the unnecessary and officious instrument of his death. After his accession, he removed the body of Henry from Chertsey, and interred it with royal solemnity at Windsor<sup>6</sup>; a circumstance imputable only to a veneration either for the illustrious descent, or the piety of a monarch, who, because he was a fool, was reputed a saint. The pretended rumour is contradicted therefore, both by contemporary evidence, and a fair interpretation of Richard's conduct, who would not, after an interval of twelve years, revive, by any indiscreet hypocrisy, a rumour so prejudicial to his own reputation. But the following remarkable information is contained in a late edition of Shakespeare: "It has been observed to me by Mr. Edderton, that it appears on the face of the public accounts allowed in the Exchequer for the maintenance of Henry VI. and his numerous attendants in the Tower, that he lived to the twelfth of June, which was twenty-two days after the time assigned for his pretended assassination; was exposed to public view at St. Paul's for some days, and interred at Chertsey with much solemnity, and at no inconsiderable expence<sup>7</sup>." If the fact be such, and I see no reason to question the authority, what becomes of our ancient chroniclers? I will not speak of

<sup>4</sup> Chron. Croyl. p. 556.

<sup>5</sup> Hollingshed, vol. ii. p. 690.

<sup>6</sup> Rous, p. 217. Stowe, 424.

<sup>7</sup> Malone's Shakespeare, vol. xi. p. 653.

their accuracy; but what reliance can be placed in their truth? If Henry died not on the night of Edward's triumphal entry, there is no foundation for the suspicion of violence; and we must conclude that Fabian and the monk of Croyland, writing at a distant period, (Fabian died in 1512,) forgot the regular succession of events, and adopted a subsequent vain surmise, in order to render their saint a martyr<sup>8</sup>. These crimes originated, therefore, from the same Lancastrian prejudices that accused Richard of murdering his wife, whose death was occasioned by a lingering malady, and accelerated as the monk of Croyland conjectures and insinuates, not by poison, but her husband's neglect<sup>9</sup>.

The execution of Clarence is ascribed, by our older historians, to the queen's instigation, whose intercession might have certainly saved him, and whose brother Rivers was enriched by his forfeiture. But I cannot discover that Richard was a gainer, that he obtained a larger portion of his wife's inheritance<sup>10</sup>. The queen's relations were ambitious and insolent; Clarence, impatient, impetuous and haughty; and, as they domineered at court, his imprudent opposition, and perhaps the temptation of a rich confiscation, provoked his fate. Their procedure was conformable to the court intrigues of the period; they began by accusing and convicting his domestics and friends, in order to impel him to some desperate counsels.

<sup>8</sup> Hollingshed, to render the murder indisputable, asserts that the wounds bled afresh at St. Paul's.

<sup>9</sup> Chron. Croyl. p. 572.

<sup>10</sup> Rymer Fœd. vol. xii. p. 95. The hypocritical language of this donation is curious, and seems to fasten the murder indisputably on Rivers. "*Sciatis quod nos, inclitæ memoriæ nostræ reducentes de grandibus injuriis, gravaminibusque offensis, non solum carissimo consanguineo nostro Antonio comiti Ryvers, verum etiam nobilibus parentibus suis, per Georgium nuper ducem Clarenciæ indigne perpetratis, et quod idem dux, die quo obiit et antea, voluit et intendebat quod prædictus comes omnino recompensaretur.*" The grant insinuates that Clarence, at his death, made a nuncupative will in Rivers' favour; a proof that his conduct required exculpation.

Buckingham,

Buckingham, connected them with the Queen's party by his marriage with her sister, was created high-steward to pronounce the sentence; and Clarence's fate is the counterpart of Humphrey Duke of Gloucester's, who perished in the former reign, by the machinations of Queen Margaret, and Suffolk her minion. Richard, who had also quarrelled with the Queen's relations, acted with more circumspection than Clarence; yet the same influence that ruined his brother might have been directed afterwards against himself: nor is it probable that he would weaken his own security by conniving indirectly at the destruction of Clarence. The Queen's influence was formidable, and exerted for the worst purposes, to aggrandise her family by the depression or ruin of the principal nobility. Hastings once was committed to the Tower, and his life endangered by the accusation of Rivers"; and Richard, from the ambitious views of the Queen and her kindred, and their influence during an unprincipled reign, had certainly some reason to apprehend that Clarence's fate might extend to himself.

II. These transactions, then, give us no indications of Richard's character, his ambition, his cunning, or predisposition to cruelty. The succeeding events are more decisive: the young king intercepted; Rivers, Gray, and Vaughan apprehended, and with Hastings executed, without even the formality of a trial. Gloucester, as first prince of the blood, was constitutionally protector; but the Queen had certainly projected measures for retaining her influence during the minority, and securing the regency to herself or her brother. She had ordered Rivers to raise an army; a measure calculated not for escorting the King, but for preserving to themselves the possession of his person, intimidating their enemies, and usurping the

" Sir Thomas More.



government. When the scheme was detected and counteracted in council, the escort was limited to two thousand men; and whether these troops were brought forward, some artifice seems to have been employed at Nottingham in detaching Gray, Rivers, and Vaughan from the King's attendants. There they were arrested; and the hints casually furnished by historians, of Dorset's entering the Tower, removing the treasures of the late King, and employing them partly in preparing a fleet, demonstrate that the Grays were accused, with reason, of conspiring to seize the administration, by retaining the person of the young King<sup>12</sup>. So far Gloucester is justifiable, as he only anticipated those whose ambition threatened disturbance to the state. But the subsequent execution of these noblemen, and of Hastings, Richard's friend and confederate, must be ascribed to a premeditated scheme of usurpation. The Protector aspired to the crown, and secured it by the previous removal of every obstacle; and in these sanguinary transactions we discover the first certain indications of his ambitious designs.

Yet our progress is arrested by an unexpected difficulty—Edward's marriage with Lady Eleanor Butler,—a fact better authenticated than historians imagine. The Croyland Chronicle, and a passage (a vague passage) in the *Memoirs of Commynes*, were regarded as the only evidence, till the rolls of Richard's parliament were discovered and published. Yet these authorities, separately, are not satisfactory: the marriage is mentioned by Commynes and the monk of Croyland, as a pretext adopted to justify Richard's usurpation; nor are the rolls of parliament of more authority, than any attestation of a falsehood that might be extorted then from a servile, or obtained to-day from a venal parliament. But there is another authority less controvertible, the respected authority of Sir Thomas More.

<sup>12</sup> Sir Thomas More. Walpole's *Historic Doubts*.

His history is a highly coloured, though unfinished performance, published originally in English, afterwards in Latin, the language in which it was probably first composed. The English copy is inserted in Hall, Grafton, Stowe, and Hollingshed; but a licentious and faulty paraphrase by Strype or Kennet, has, with most authors, superseded the original<sup>13</sup>. The history from its very commencement is partial; it expatiates on Richard's personal deformity and monstrous birth, his perverseness and pravity *while still in the womb*; ascribes the murder of Henry to his dagger, the death of Clarence to his intrigues and ambition; and proceeds to relate such mysterious, and secret transactions, as the death of the actors precluded from transpiring. At the death of Hastings, in explaining the pretext employed by Richard for bastardising his nephews, the historian pauses, suspends his narration; reverts to the period of Edward's marriage with Elizabeth Gray, and that for the express purpose of demonstrating that his previous marriage, or precontract with another, was an obsolete calumny already refuted. He informs us that the Dukes of York, disapproved of the proposed connexion with Elizabeth Gray, endeavoured to dissuade her son from the marriage. "The King was inflexible; and his mother" (I translate from the Latin) "incensed at his disobedience, concerted other measures for impeding the match. Elizabeth Lucy, a lady of noble birth and exquisite beauty, had been debauched by Edward. On the approach of the nuptials, when the banns were published, the Dukes his mother, as if to absolve her conscience, objected with tears, that her son was already espoused to Elizabeth Lucy, their faith

<sup>13</sup> With Hume, it certainly superseded the original, when he asserted that More mentioned Lady Butler's as well as Elizabeth Lucy's marriage, and treated them both lightly as rumours. Hist. vol. iii. p. 455. note M. Lady Butler's name is not once mentioned by More; but her story is inserted in Kennet's Version.

" plighted, and their nuptials consummated. The marriage was therefore interrupted, either by the priest's refusal, or the King's reluctance to celebrate the rites, till an asperision, to which his mother's scruples had contributed weight and authority, was examined and disproved. Elizabeth Lucy, though instructed secretly, and inspired with ambitious views by the Ducheſs, confessed, when interrogated on oath, that whatever were her expectations, no matrimonial obligation had been contracted by Edward. Thus the pretended marriage was detected, and its falſehood publiſhed, previous to the King's marriage with Elizabeth Gray. Theſe circumſtances," the hiſtorian concludes, " are detailed perhaps with too much prolixity; but it is neceſſary to know that the ſole objection which the Protector diſcovered againſt Edward's marriage was a calumny long exploded and antiquated."

This paſſage, diveſted of its rhetoric, diſcloſes an important hiſtorical fact—that Edward's marriage with Lady Gray was interrupted for a time by his own mother; that ſhe appeared in church when the banns were publiſhed, and with tears prohibited the celebration of the marriage, as her ſon was already contracted to another. Her allegation, the more authoritative as it proceeds from a mother, is diſproved by Elizabeth Lucy's confeſſion: the hiſtorian dwells on this as a confutation of the calumny. Surely were theſe circumſtances admitted as truth, when a mother, terrified at the violation of a ſacramental obligation, (marriage then was eſteemed a ſacrament,) prohibits her ſon's nuptials, a reaſonable ſuſpicion may be entertained that her objection was not without foundation, that a monarch, impetuous in his paſſions, and arbitrary like Edward, might either extort or fabricate the pretended confeſſion.

But in this pretended confeſſion there is no truth. The pretext of Richard's uſurpation was his brother's precontract,



tract, not with Lucy, but with Lady Eleanor Butler. Shaw, therefore, if instructed by the Protector, could not preach on Edward's precontract with Elizabeth Lucy; nor could Buckingham adopt such an injudicious topic in haranguing the citizens. Richard could not resort to an objection absolutely preclusive of his own pretensions; for Elizabeth Lucy had a son by Edward, Arthur Plantagenet, afterwards Lord Lisle, whose legitimacy must have been recognised with his mother's marriage, and his title established to the crown itself. The fact is indisputable, that Richard's nephews were excluded as spurious, on account of their father's marriage with Eleanor Butler. "Osten-  
 " debatur in quodam rotulo pergameni, quod filii regis  
 " Edwardi erant bastardi, supponendo illum præcontrax-  
 " isse cum quadam Alienora Boteler, antequam reginam  
 " Elizabeth duxisset uxorem." Cron. Croyl.—"Edward  
 " was and stood married, and troth plight to one Dame  
 " Eleanor Butler, daughterto the Earl of Shrewsbury, with  
 " whom the said King Edward had made a precontract of  
 " matrimony long time before he made the pretended  
 " marriage with Elizabeth Gray." Roll of Parliament.—  
 What then does More's information amount to? He in-  
 forms us that the objection was not devised by Richard,  
 but that it had been agitated previous even to Edward's  
 marriage. Does he disprove it? He substitutes a different  
 female, and on her confession, which must be fictitious,  
 argues against the existence of the marriage. The con-  
 clusion is inevitable, that the King's marriage with Eleanor  
 Butler stands authenticated by her mother's attestation,  
 and refuted by no contradictory evidence.

I venerate too much the character of Sir Thomas More, not to attribute, if possible, his mistakes to ignorance; but I am afraid that his narrative discovers, in the sequel, an intended and artful deviation from the truth. Fabian in-  
 forms us, that Shaw preached on Sunday, to the dispa-  
 ragement of Edward's children, and *abucion* of the audi-

ence; that on Tuesday, Buckingham harangued the citizens assembled in Guildhall; and that Richard, assuming on Thursday the regal dignity, was conducted to Westminster and installed as King. Fabian in these particulars could not be mistaken, though he knew not, or neglected to mention a public instrument produced on Thursday at Barnard's castle, conceived in the name of the lords and commons, containing a recital of Richard's titles, and a supplication for his immediate assumption of the crown. This, the Croyland Chronicle assures us, was the *pretext* and *colour* employed to justify the Protector's usurpation; but Sir Thomas More, in opposition to every historical evidence, has devised a different pretext and colour. Buckingham, and the lords of his party, attended by the mayor and aldermen and a multitude of citizens, proceeded on Wednesday to the Protector's residence, who, affecting to mistrust their intentions, appeared at a gallery to receive their address. Buckingham announced the desire of the people; Richard, after much declamatory dialogue, is persuaded to reign; and the historian concludes with some facetious and pertinent remarks on this scenic exhibition. These circumstances are certainly possible, but they could not have escaped the observation of Fabian. A citizen and a spectator apparently of every public solemnity, he could not have failed to mention the convocation of the citizens in consequence of Buckingham's request on Tuesday, their procession to Barnard's castle, and their interview with the Protector; transactions of far more pomp and importance than Shaw's sermon at Paul's cross, or Buckingham's speech at Guildhall. The events of Sunday, of Tuesday, and of Thursday, are in Fabian recorded with care; the transactions of Wednesday are represented by More as the necessary sequel of those on Tuesday, as occasioned by the acclamations of a few apprentices, and Buckingham's public request to the citizens to attend him on the morrow. The silence both of Fabian and the monk

of Croyland, disproves these incidents, and demonstrates, that they were interpolated by More to supply the unoccupied interval between Buckingham's harangue on Tuesday, and the supplication presented to Richard on Thursday. His intention is obvious; to suppress the real pretext or colour employed to vindicate Richard's accession, and for that purpose he diverts our attention to a different day, and substitutes a different, and a false pretext. The supplication, still engrossed in the rolls of parliament, establishes Richard's title on Edward's prior marriage with Eleanor Butler, and the consequent illegitimacy of his offspring by Elizabeth Gray. More, instead of refuting, evades the plea, substitutes Lucy, to conceal the marriage of Eleanor Butler, and creates a series of fictitious transactions, to suppress the knowledge of Richard's titles, and obscure the proximate cause of his accession to the throne. Lucy, preferred it seems as a daughter by the Dukes of York, was, according to More, *nec ignobilis, quem forte virginem rex corruget*. She was the daughter of one Wiat, the wife of one Lucy, obscure persons; and if More was ignorant of her marriage with the latter, (a circumstance preclusive of her contract with Edward,) he must have been sensible that neither the Wiats nor the Lucys were then ennobled. His inadvertence has retained a circumstance historically certain. Lord Butler's widow was of noble birth; her father was the Earl of Shrewsbury, her mother the former Duke of Buckingham's daughter, and her marriage with Edward is still attested by more than common historical evidence. Had the historian maintained, instead of controverting, the existence of the marriage, our assurance would have depended on his veracity; but his attempt to confute it by the suppression of certain circumstances, and the substitution of others, demonstrates that the fact was incontestible, too strong to be fairly stated, and too stubborn to be openly resisted. His extreme anxiety, his solicitude to convince us that the accusation was calumnious, betrays his knowledge and



conviction of its truth. He had explored it to the source, traced it backward to Richard's mother, to the distant period of Edward's marriage. He assures us that it was not invented by Richard, and explains it at length, *ut melius cognoscatur quam falsam olim revictam, rejectamque columniam pretextuit. Ne ignoraretur protector, Edwardi filiis natalium vitium objecturus, nihil reperisse quod illius matrimonio objicerit, prater excussam olim et antiquatam calumniam.* Yet this antiquated calumny, so long and so industriously exploded, cannot bear a relation without the most material deviation from truth. His very solicitude to explain, his industrious researches to discover, the truth, are evidence against him. He had discovered its origin at Edward's marriage (1463), and must have understood its application at Richard's accession in 1483. In every particular he suppresses the truth, and but for a casual discovery in the sequel of his history, compared with a passage in the Memoirs of Commynes, the world would have still been ignorant, that Lady Butler's marriage with Edward was examined in council, that it was supported by the depositions of different witnesses, and established by the testimony of Stillington the bishop, who performed the ceremony.

An historian, with whose philosophical genius the minute details of history were scarcely compatible, has remarked, that the statute declaring the illegitimacy of Edward's children, appeared on Henry's accession and marriage with Elizabeth, too despicable to be reversed by parliament<sup>14</sup>. Henry's policy in suppressing that statute, affords additional proof of Edward's marriage with Eleanor Butler, and an adequate solution of More's intentional perversion of the fact. The Year Book informs us, that the judges, assembled by Henry to consult together on the repeal of the statute proposed, that it should be "taken off the rolls, annulled, cancelled, destroyed, and burnt," without being rehearsed, its contents divulged, or more

<sup>14</sup> Hume's Hist. vol. iii. p. 457. note M.

than a few words of the preamble recited. The reason assigned was that the statute, because it was "false, shameful, and seditious, ought to be put in perpetual oblivion; for if any part of the specialty of the matter had been rehearsed, then had it remained in remembrance always." The statute would have been destroyed without the ceremony of being reversed, but an act was necessary to indemnify those to whose custody the rolls were entrusted<sup>15</sup>. The statute was abrogated therefore in parliament, taken off the rolls and destroyed; and those possessed of copies were directed, under the penalty of fine and imprisonment, to deliver them to the chancellor; "so that all things said or remembered in the bill and act be for ever out of remembrance and forgotten"<sup>16</sup>. The statute was abrogated without recital, in order to conceal its purport, and obliterate if possible the facts it attested; and a proposal for reading it, that Stillington Bishop of Bath might be responsible for its falsehood, was over-ruled and stifled by the King's immediate declaration of pardon<sup>17</sup>. Its falsehood would have merited and demanded detec-

<sup>15</sup> Tous les justice in l'Exchequer chambre, par le commandement le roi, communerent pour le reversal del' bil et act, qui bastard les enfans le roi E. IV. et Eliz. sa femme. Et pristeront sa direction pour ceo, que le bill et l'act fuit cy, faux et slanderieux, q'ills ne voill reberse le matter ne l'effect de la matre mes tant solement que Ric. fist un faux et seditieux bill, a estre mis a luy, qui commence sic, pleaseh it Your Highness to consider these articles ensuing, &c. sans pl. rehearsal. And this was the consideration of the justices, that they rehearse no more of the matter, that the matter might be and remain in perpetual oblivion for the falseness and shamefulnes of it. And if any part of the especialty of the matter, &c. Nota icy bien la policy. Nota enseient q'ill ne puissent estre pris hors del record sans act del parliament pour l'indemnité et jeopardie d'eux q'avoient les records in leur gard.—Year Book, Hilary Term, 1 Hen. I.

<sup>16</sup> Rot. Parl. 1 Hen. note 18.—But for the Year Book, it would be impossible, from the short recital of the preamble, to discover which of Richard's acts was reversed by this statute. Hume's mistake was unavoidable, as he overlooked the Year Book which Carte had quoted.—Carte's Hist. vol. ii. p. 824.

<sup>17</sup> Et meme le jour le bill fuit leu en parliament chambre, mes fuit mouve per aucun deux que ser., bon ordre que cestuy que fist ceo faux bill

detection, not concealment; and Stillington, whose evidence had formerly established the marriage, was, if perjured, an object of punishment, not of pardon. But why this precaution to efface all knowledge of Edward's precontract, the pretext of Richard's usurpation or accession? The suppression of the statute without inquiry into its truth, or explanation of its purport, demonstrates that the recital was dangerous, the fact incontestable; otherwise it is not conceivable that Henry would prohibit an investigation so necessary to vindicate his own accession and his Queen's legitimacy, or pardon Stillington, whom he never forgave; and whose negotiations to procure the delivery of Henry, when an exile in Brittany, into Edward's hands, had rendered him so peculiarly obnoxious, that his destruction was effected, afterwards on the false pretext of his having participated in Lincoln's rebellion<sup>18</sup>. But that which Henry interdicted, the historian<sup>19</sup>, publishing under his tyrannical auspices, durst not venture to revive or investigate. His danger would have been considerable had he assigned as the means of Richard's accession, the bill of supplication engrossed in a statute erased from the record, the knowledge of which was intercepted, and the possession even of a copy prohibited as criminal; but his destruction would have been inevitable had he perpetuated a fact which the legislature, obsequious to the deliberations of the judges and the injunctions of Henry, had determined to consign to perpetual oblivion. In concealing Edward's marriage with Eleanor Butler, More cooperated directly with Henry's intentions, and in creating a refutable, fictitious marriage with Elizabeth Lucy, en-

bill reformera ceo, et disient que le evesque de B. (Stillington then Bishop of Bath and Wells,) fist le bill, et les seigniors vouloient aver luy in le parlement chambre a aver luy respondre a ceo. Et le roy difait, que il avoit luy pardonner et pour ceo il ne vouluit plus fait a luy; quod nota, constantia regis. Et quidam episcopi fuerunt contra ipsum.—Year Book, *ibid*.

<sup>18</sup> Godwin de Preful. Angl. v. Stillington.

<sup>19</sup> More's History was written according to Grafton in 1508.

devoured



deavoured to discredit all traditionary remembrance of Richard's title.

I observed that the authorities separately were not satisfactory; collectively they are forcible, perhaps conclusive. Stillington's evidence has been rejected as that of an unprincipled priest, actuated either by servility to Richard, or revenge for the injuries sustained from Edward. We now discover, that at a period long previous to Richard's accession, Edward's mother was apprised of his marriage, and strove ineffectually to preserve him from bigamy; that her information originated either from the injured lady, or from Stillington, the priest who pronounced the ceremony, and in whose hands the contract was deposited; that Edward, whether to recover the contract, or to revenge and punish the disclosure of his secret, disgraced and imprisoned the Bishop, nor released him till a severe fine was extorted<sup>20</sup>; that the testimony of the latter, thus corroborated by Edward's resentment, was with other depositions produced and sustained as satisfactory in council; that it was afterwards recognized in full parliament<sup>21</sup>; and finally, that it was established incontrovertibly in the succeeding reign, by the tacit confession of Henry, who endeavoured to suppress the fact; and of those historians who, in order to disprove it, converted a regular marriage, solemnized according to the rights of the church, into a supposed precontract with a different woman; and attempted, on her fictitious confession, to

<sup>20</sup> L'évesque de Bath mit en avant a ce duc de Glocestre, qui ledit Edward, étant fort amoureux d'une dame d'Angleterre lui promit de l'épouser, pourveu qu'il coucha avec elle, ce que la consentit: et dit l'évesque *quil les avoit épousez* et n'y avoit que lui, et eux deux.— En plain parlement, le duc de Glocestre fit degrader les deux filles du dit Edward, et declara bastardes, sous couleur de quelque cas quil prouver par un evesque de Bath in Angleterre, qui autrefois avoit un grand credit avec Edward, et puis sa desappointa, et tient en prison, et le rançonne pour un somme d'argent; le quel evesque disoit qu'Edward avoit promis fei de mariage a une dame quil nommoit et en avoit faits la promesse entre *les mains du dit evesque*. — Mem. de Commines, vol. i. pp. 437. 497.

<sup>21</sup> En plain parlement. Commines.

obviate the existence of a previous marriage. More than that, we obtain the unequivocal testimony of Buckingham; who, on the death of his grandfather at the battle of Northampton, became, at the age of five, a ward of the crown, and according to feudal usage, was selected during his minority, as an advantageous husband for the Queen's sister<sup>22</sup>. During his early youth, while educated under the tuition of Edward, he was probably ignorant of Lady Butler's marriage; but his subsequent confederacy with Richard against his wife's relations, can be attributed only to a keen resentment at the discovery of the injury his cousin had sustained. His interest during the administration of the Woodvilles was equivalent to whatever he could expect with Richard; and unless some secret disgust be admitted, he had no temptation to desert his connections. No rational motive could actuate his conduct, but that conviction which he felt and expressed, and those passions which would prompt a proud and indignant spirit to renounce his interests, and relinquish every political connection, to sacrifice even the lives of his friends, in order to revenge the dishonour of his family. That conviction of which he assures us, when alone presumable as a motive, from the tenor of his conduct, is an indisputable testimony to the truth of the marriage. "Richard," he informs us, "brought in instruments, authentic doctors, authorities of the law, with depositions of divers witnesses, testifying Edward's children to be bastards; which depositions then I thought to be *as true* as now I know them to be false and feigned<sup>23</sup>". His belief is certain; his subsequent incredulity may be regarded as a gratuitous concession to Morton, with whom, in concerting rebellion, a disavowal of his former con-

<sup>22</sup> Dugdale's Baronage. — Buckingham's education was committed by Edward to his sister the Duchess of Exeter. Id.

<sup>23</sup> Grafton, Hall, in continuation of More. — See in the note above, the quotation from Commynes.

viction was a decency not to be omitted by historians. Whether he was afterwards disabused of error, or perverted by ambition, may be justly questioned, when his deliberate conviction had already adjudged the crown to Richard. "When the said depositions were before us" (lords spiritual and temporal, evidently the council,) "read, and diligently heard, Richard stood up, bare-headed, saying, "Well, my lords, even as I and you would that my nephews should have no wrong, so I pray you do me nothing but right; for these witnesses and sayings of famous doctors be true, for I am only the indubitable heir to Richard Plantagenet Duke of York, adjudged to be the very heir to the crown of this realm by the authority of parliament." Which things, (says Buckingham,) so by learned men for verity to us declared, caused me and others to take him for our lawful and undoubted prince and sovereign lord<sup>24</sup>." I am unwilling unnecessarily to criminate human nature; and as Richard's conduct, previous to his appointment to the protectorate, may receive an explication on justifiable motives, I will not presume that, in the allegiance sworn to his nephew, he was intentionally perjured; that he meditated schemes to support his pretensions, or was conscious even of his right to the crown. Were conjecture admissible in historical controversy, I would advance, as a reasonable supposition, that the Duchess of York, a prudent woman, who had guarded the secret from the inconsiderate Clarence<sup>25</sup>, had concealed it with equal circumspection from Richard, nor disclosed it till his return from the north after Edward's death, when his power as protector enabled him to vindicate his title, and exclude a bastard race from the throne. But whatever was the period at which his ambition commenced, his right of succession, as the heir of Richard Plantagenet his father,

<sup>24</sup> Grafton, Hall, in continuation of More.

<sup>25</sup> See vol. ix. ch. i. sect. 5.



is to me indisputable. Clarence's issue was excluded by attainder, and Edward's marriage with Lady Butler is established at present by such evidence as it is possible either to obtain or expect, such as would be transmitted through the medium of an hostile faction, always malignant, and ultimately victorious. If the records of the Yorkists have perished with their family, the truth, though suppressed by their enemies, may be still traced in the partial and contradictory narratives of those historians, who, at a subsequent period, disfigured the annals of a short reign, disquieted and unfortunate, but not inglorious.

III. The preceding discussions, as preparatory to our inquiries concerning the young princes confined in the Tower, give us few indications of Richard's character, his historical character, and no assurance whatever of the fate of his nephews. Instead of a perjured traitor, we recognize the legitimate sovereign of England. Instead of a violent usurpation, we discover an accession, irregular according to modern usage, but established without violence on a legal title. The crimes imputed to his youth disappear; and in the execution of Rivers, Gray, and Hastings, if the ultimate object was to secure his succession, some intermediate mysterious cause will be suspected by those, whose inquiries have taught them to peruse our ancient historians with extreme mistrust <sup>26</sup>.

Richard,

<sup>26</sup> The execution of Gray and Rivers may be considered as a just retribution for the murder of Clarence: nor is Richard's morality highly censurable, if he inflicted a just revenge on his brother's murderers without reversing the attainder of his issue, that established his own succession to the crown. The effect of the attainder was too remote, consequential, and precarious, to involve Richard in a share of the murder; and acquitting him of any participation in that crime, we must allow that, according to the spirit of those times, his revenge was justifiable, prompted at least by a laudable resentment. Hastings's execution is more mysterious. More's information has been considered as traditionary, gleaned from his converse with Richard's contemporaries; but a tradition recorded by Harrington (1596) assigns his history

Richard, according to these historians, assuming on the ninth, or the nineteenth of June, the regal dignity, was crowned

tory to Morton, (Malone's *Shakespeare*, vol. v. p. 562.) and a Latin History of Richard, composed by that prelate, was preserved in the last century by Roper, a descendant of More, to whom, as a favourite pupil, the book had devolved. (Buck. apud Kennet, 546.) That such was the source of his information, the substratum on which he constructed his history, is farther confirmed by the English edition, which, extending beyond the period of Richard's accession, comprehends the murder of his nephews, the secret disaffection of Buckingham, and terminates abruptly in the midst of an interesting conversation between the latter and Morton. The conversation is resumed and continued by Hall and Grafton, in a manner equally minute and circumstantial, nor apparently less authentic; and as the particulars could only be obtained from Morton, I conclude that they and More had access to the same original information, and attributed the materials of the history in question to Morton, the ornamental and classical varnish to More. This discovery may exculpate More from the imputation of propagating deliberate falsehood. Not a spectator merely, but an actor chiefly instrumental in Richard's destruction: Morton's knowledge and intentional misrepresentation of Edward's marriage, and Richard's title, bestows additional confirmation on both. The seizure and execution of Hastings, at which he was present, is preceded in his history by dreams and omens, and related with circumstances so ridiculous, that they provoke a smile amidst all the tragic declamation of the drama. The Protector, at a council held in the Tower, requested a dish of strawberries from Morton for dinner, retired for an interval, but returning with a countenance expressive of wrath and vengeance, exclaimed at the forcery practised on his person by the Queen, Jean Shore, and Hastings her paramour, and bared his withered arm as a proof of their guilt. The most prominent circumstances are historically certain; a cry of treason was raised without, the Protector's armed attendants, on his opening the door, rushed into the council, apprehended Hastings, the primate, and Morton, and while the latter were imprisoned, the former was conducted to immediate execution. [Fabian.] But the intermediate circumstances are false and absurd; Jean Shore was the mistress of Dorset, not of Hastings, and, from an original letter of Richard's, was treated certainly with peculiar lenity. (Historical Doubts, p. 118.) But why these dreams and predictions of Hastings's death? Shall we believe that Richard's arm was withered and useless, Richard a warrior, expert at arms? or if secret, that he would expose his dishonour; if notorious, that he would render it the absurd pretext for the murder of his friend? What do these multiplied absurdities amount to? The artificial glare with which the whole is surrounded, generates a suspicion that some treason was detected

crowned on the sixth of July, and thereafter began a progress through Gloucester, Warwick, and Coventry, northward to York; during which the young princes were secretly murdered. These events are recorded as passing in rapid succession, as connected together; the execution of Hastings with Richard's accession, the death of the princes with his coronation, and immediate removal from London. The public records correct these dates; the accession took place on the twenty-seventh of June, about a fortnight after the execution of Hastings, and the coronation was celebrated on the sixth of July, in the presence of almost every peer of the realm<sup>27</sup>. The progress north commenced in the beginning of September, and till that period we are assured that the princes continued alive.

During this expedition, associations were formed, and various insurrections projected for their delivery; but when these were matured, and Buckingham proclaimed as the leader of the enterprise, a report prevailed that the princes had suffered a violent death. Such is the concise and barren account of contemporary writers, whose narrations rather attest the existence of the rumour than the truth of the murder, and to whom the manner in which it was perpetrated was then unknown. Succeeding historians have adopted that which, among different traditional stories, appeared the most probable to Sir Thomas More. Richard, during his progress, presaging danger from the lives of his nephews, dispatched an attendant from Gloucester with orders to Brakenbury for their immediate death. Brakenbury resisted the dishonest pro-

---

detected and punished, a conspiracy in which Morton had participated with Hastings, and was therefore desirous to remove from view.

<sup>27</sup> Compare Grafton's list of the peers present at the coronation with the lords summoned to parliament in the reigns of Edward IV. and Henry VII., and it will appear that their number amounted to about thirty-six, of whom thirty-two attended the coronation, and in all probability concurred in presenting the bill of supplication. Henry's first parliament was not attended by half the number. See Parliamentary Hist.

posal,



posal, and Green the messenger returned with his refusal to Richard at Warwick, who complaining to a page that his commands were unexecuted, was directed to Sir James Tyrell (then asleep with his brother in the next apartment) as an aspiring man, depressed by Ratcliffe, and likely to perpetrate whatever was enjoined. Tyrell accordingly was commissioned next morning to receive, for a single night, the keys and the command of the Tower from Brakenbury, and repairing to London, employed Dighton and Forest to stifle the princes while asleep at midnight. The bodies were buried at the bottom of the staircase, but were afterwards removed by the chaplain; and Tyrell, having performed his commission, hastened back to Richard, by whom he was knighted, much honoured, and highly rewarded.

It has been observed with truth, that these circumstances are improbable, and partly false; that Richard, before his departure from London, would have sounded Brakenbury in devising the murder; nor would such a proposal be entrusted either to a letter, or to verbal credentials; that Richard would not have communicated his disappointment so freely; nor was Tyrell, already knighted and master of the horse, in a situation to be either depressed by Ratcliffe, or recommended to the King's notice by a nameless page; and finally, that Brakenbury on his refusal would not have been superseded for the palpable purpose of murder, nor again entrusted with the command of the Tower.<sup>28</sup>

But the story is not destitute of evidence, the confession of the assassins, to be noticed in the sequel, and the accidental discovery, in the last century, of bones correspondent in size to those of the princes, buried in the Tower, under the rubbish of a ruinous staircase. They were found, it is said, in a chest or coffin at the depth of

<sup>28</sup> Walpole's Hist. Doubts, p. 53.

ten feet, in rebuilding a staircase conducting from the King's lodgings to the chapel in the White Tower, and were deposited as the remains of the princes, by Charles II. in Westminster Abbey<sup>29</sup>. The identity has been inferred from their size and irregular interment, indicating, as the ground was not consecrated, a secret murder from the coincidence of the place with historical description, and from the presumption that no children unconnected with the crown were exposed in the Tower to a violent death<sup>30</sup>. To me the inference appeared at first to be strong and conclusive; but there are difficulties not to be surmounted or obviated:—1. The coincidence of place is extremely doubtful. The princes, according to a tradition preserved in the Tower, were lodged in a building near the water-gate, and Tyrell, as we are informed, remained, till the murder was finished, at the bottom of the staircase, beneath which he interred their bodies<sup>31</sup>. They were buried therefore under the stairs of their lodging; but Henry, to whom the assassins disclosed the place, sought ineffectually to discover the bodies, and concluded at last that the chaplain, who was then dead, had removed them elsewhere. Their bodies therefore must have been transferred from the staircase of their lodging, to that of the chapel; and those who were present at the discovery and inspected the bones, admitted that they were found, not in the place where Tyrell had deposited, but where the priest had removed, them<sup>32</sup>. That place was un-

<sup>29</sup> Sandford's Genealog. Hist.

<sup>30</sup> Hume's Hist. vol. iii. p. 459. note M.

<sup>31</sup> Bacon, p. 608. The place where the princes were confined, has been denominated the Bloody Tower.

<sup>32</sup> See Sandford's Genealogical History, where, on the authority of the King's surgeon, who was present at the discovery, the place where the bones were found, is explicitly marked, and admitted to be different from the place where Tyrell interred them. Whoever examines the situation of the chapel, and its distance from the staircase, still shewn in the bloody Tower, must be convinced that the bones were not discovered where Tyrell was said to have buried the bodies.

known,

known, its coincidence with the situation of the bodies is conjectural, nor is it probable that a staircase should be twice selected to conceal their remains; but it is certain that the chaplain, when directed by Richard to remove their bodies to a place less unsuitable to the sons of a king, would have given them a regular interment in consecrated ground.—2. The identity of the bones is uncertain. The Tower was both a palace and a state prison, the receptacle of Lollards, heretics, and criminals, within which those who died by disease or violence were always buried: the discovery therefore of bones is neither surprising nor, perhaps, uncommon; but we must guard against the extreme credulity perceptible in the officers, who, persuaded that the princes were secretly interred in the Tower, appropriated every skeleton to them. Bones found at a former period in a deserted turret were regarded as the remains of one of the princes; though some entertained a ludicrous suspicion, that they belonged to an old ape who had clambered thither and perished<sup>33</sup>. As to the bones in question, we are merely informed that their size corresponded with the age of the princes; and without assurance of the time at which, from the state of the bones, they were probably interred, we are required to believe, that during a period of two centuries they remained unconsumed, and the chest in which they were deposited entire. We know not whether the situation indicated a secret murder by an irregular interment in unconsecrated ground; they were buried beneath the staircase of a consecrated chapel, in ground which, previous to the erection of the staircase, had perhaps been consecrated as a place of interment. They were buried ten feet beneath the surface, a depth which the murderers had no leisure, the priest no occasion, to penetrate; his business was to inter them decently, not to conceal

<sup>33</sup> Buck. p. 552.



them; and on the supposition of their removal to consecrated ground, who can distinguish their remains from others? But the depth of a grave on the outside of a chapel, indicates people that had died of the pestilence, and were buried precipitately in the same coffin without the church, and at such a distance from the surface, as to prevent the danger or the dread of contagion. I know not that children of royal blood were alone exposed in the Tower to a violent death; but the discovery of a skeleton in the ruins of the Bastile, would have been no proof that the man in the iron mask was assassinated.<sup>34</sup>

There is another objection to More's relation, if established, absolutely preclusive of the fact. A singular, and, for Richard's memory, a providential concurrence of circumstances, enables us to ascertain the duration, and to trace the particular stages, of that progress, in the course of which the supposed destruction of his nephews was planned and accomplished. He was at Westminster on Sunday the thirty-first of August, where he ratified a league with the King of Castile, and at York on the seventh of September, the day preceding his second coronation<sup>35</sup>. Windsor, Oxford, and Gloucester, are specified as the three first stages of his journey; and he seems to have carried his Queen to Windsor, with the Spanish ambassadors, on Monday the first of September, and leaving them there, to have proceeded on Tuesday to Oxford, where, at the requisition of the university, he released Morton, it is said, from the Tower. At Woodstock, which he probably reached that evening, the popular clamour induced him to disafforest an extensive circuit, an-

<sup>34</sup> When the identity of place is removed, it is obvious, that the presumption arising from the size of the bones is slight in itself, and obviated both by the discovery of similar bones at a former period, and the certainty that private murders were not uncommon, and interments frequent and customary in the Tower. Arthur Lord Lisle, the brother of these princes, was buried, with many others, in the Tower.

<sup>35</sup> Rymer, vol. xii.

nexed by his brother to Whichwood forest<sup>36</sup>; and at Gloucester, whither he arrived on the morrow, he honoured his ducal city by the creation or appointment of a mayor and sheriffs. These circumstances postpone his arrival in Gloucester till Wednesday the third, and he must have resumed his journey on Thursday, in order to accomplish it within the period limited. Passing through Worcester, he was rejoined at Warwick on Thursday by the Queen and the Spanish ambassadors from Windsor; and proceeding through Coventry and Leicester, he arrived on Friday at Nottingham, on Saturday at Pontefract, and on Sunday at York. With the train and impediments of a court, which limited the daily progress to fifty miles, the time allotted, of which the two first days were expended necessarily at Windsor and Oxford, was barely sufficient for performing the journey. Green then, if dispatched from Gloucester, or on the road thither, had no time to return to London on Wednesday, execute his commission to Brakenbury, and rejoin Richard on Thursday at Warwick; a journey upwards of two hundred miles before the establishment of regular posts. Tyrell, commissioned to supersede Brakenbury, departed early on Friday from Warwick; yet we are assured that, returning after the execution of his orders, he overtook

<sup>36</sup> Rous, p. 216. Chr. Croyl. More. The different stages of the progress are to be discovered by an inspection of these writers; the duration of it is ascertained by Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. xii. There is a letter, however, in Drake's *Eboracum*, from John Kendal, Richard's secretary, to the mayor of York, dated at Nottingham the 23d of August, (without any year,) informing the mayor, that the court had been worshipfully received throughout the progress, and desiring pageants to be prepared for their reception at York, p. 117. Ex lib. Chart. in Cust. Com. Ebor. Were the date certain, the letter could not invalidate the authority of the records published by Rymer; but it was written undoubtedly in the ensuing year, and dated, as I suspect, on the 23d of September, on which day Richard was certainly at Nottingham, Rym. vol. xii. Drake apprehending that it was written previous to the coronation in the former year, and knowing that the progress was over, and that Richard was not at Nottingham on the 23d of September of that year, altered, as I imagine, the date to August.

the King previous to his arrival on Sunday at York. The wardrobe roll, in which were inserted as an article of expenditure, robes provided for Edward, affords no presumption, as was once expected, that the young prince walked in procession at his uncle's coronation. But its information is otherwise material, that previous to the progress northward, Sir James Tyrell, knighted during the former reign, was master of the horse, and in that capacity received considerable deliveries from the wardrobe, to be employed in the approaching coronation at York<sup>71</sup>. The presumption thence arising of his attendance at the coronation, is confirmed by More's narrative of his hastening after the murder of Richard, who received him with marked approbation and honour, circulated a report of the death of his nephews, and *then* prosecuted his journey to York. Tyrell, therefore, was present, and officiated at the coronation as master of the horse. The dates are insurmountable, authenticated by public instruments; they reduce this strange transaction to three days; and we are required to believe, that Tyrell, who, dispatched from Warwick on Friday, could not arrive at the Tower till Saturday, nor perpetrate the murder till midnight, departed from London on Sunday morning, and rejoined the king on the road, previous to his arrival that evening at York. We are required to believe, that two consecutive journies of five hundred miles were performed by Green and Tyrell in four days, and these with the interruption of two nights, and the day preparatory and previous to the murder. Such journies, with our modern roads and relays of horses, may be practicable at present; but when I review the particulars, and consider the period, I conclude without hesitation, that the fact related by More is im-

<sup>71</sup> See Mill's account of wardrobe roll in the *Archeologia*, vol. i. from which it appears that the wardrobe keeper had taken the opportunity of charging in the disbursements of Richard's coronation, the robes formerly provided for the Lord Edward. See also *Hist. Doubts*, p. 65.



possible. He knew not, it is evident, that the progress was strictly limited to seven days; but finding the month of August unoccupied, appropriated that period to Richard's progress and Sir James Tyrell's adventures; prolonged the stay of the former at Gloucester, Warwick, and other cities, till the latter rejoined him, and about the end of August, conducted them both to York, before the departure of either from London. The time assumed was requisite for the various transactions recorded; restricted to the short space of a week, it demonstrates that these are fictitious; that Richard could not be overtaken on Thursday at Warwick, by a messenger sent on Wednesday from Gloucester, to the Tower of London; and that Tyrell, dispatched thither on Friday, and employed on Saturday in selecting instruments, removing the keepers, and making other arrangements preparatory to the murder, could not possibly perpetrate the fact, rejoin Richard, and reach York, in the space of a day.<sup>38</sup>

The murder, however, is still possible, as the credit of contemporary writers remains unimpaired; and of these, as the most credulous and prejudiced, Rous shall be first examined, and dismissed for ever: " Gloucester obtained, " or rather invented, the title of Protector, to promote " himself, and disinherit King Edward, who, with his " brother, was imprisoned so closely, that the particular death by which they were martyred (*qua morte martyrizati sunt*) was known to few. The " throne of the murdered kings was then usurped " by their protector, Richard the tyrant, who had " remained two years in his mother's womb, and at " Fotheringay, on the feast of eleven thousand virgins, " was born with long hair, and his teeth complete: at " his nativity the Scorpion was ascendant, a sign in the

<sup>38</sup> Carte was the first that discovered this argument; but a typographical error in the dates renders it, as explained in his history, absolutely unintelligible. Hist. vol. xi. p. 816.

“ house of Mars ; and as the Scorpion’s aspect is bland  
 “ and *fawning*, its sting mortal, such was Richard, who  
 “ received his master Edward with kisses and *fawning*  
 “ caresses, and in three months, murdered him and his  
 “ brother, poisoned his own wife, and what was most de-  
 “ testable both to God and the English nation, slew the  
 “ sanctified Henry VI. ” The historian who deduces  
 Richard’s crimes from a calculation of his nativity, may  
 attest the popular belief and rumour ; but his private in-  
 formation must rest, where he has placed it, on the autho-  
 rity of the stars.

The princes, according to Fabian, were on Richard’s  
 accession, “ put under sure keeping in the Tower, in  
 “ such wise as they never came abroad ;” and afterwards  
 “ the common fame ran, that King Richard had put them  
 “ unto secret death ; for the which and other causes had  
 “ within the breast of the Duke of Buckingham, the said  
 “ Duke conspired against him.” “ Remanserunt Ed-  
 “ wardi filii sub certa deputata custodia infra turrim, pro  
 “ quorum liberatione, exceperunt populi australes et oc-  
 “ cidentales plurimum submurmurare, inire coetus et  
 “ conventiuncula, maximeque hic qui per franchisesias et  
 “ sanctuaria dispersi sunt. Cumque tandem populus ad  
 “ ulciscensum considerationes iniret, factis publicis pro-  
 “ clamationibus, quod Dux Buckinghamiæ facti pœnitens  
 “ capitaneus in hac re principalis existerit, *vulgatum est*  
 “ *dictos Edwardi filios, qua genere violenti interitus ignora-*  
 “ *retur, decessisse in fata &c.*” Such is the authentic in-  
 formation derived from contemporaries, expressive only of  
 the prevailing opinion ; yet of an opinion supposed to be  
 corroborated by the repentant conviction of Buckingham,  
 the belief of the insurgents, and the positive testimony of  
 those Yorkists who joined the Lancastrians, and promoted  
 Richmond to the throne of England.

<sup>39</sup> Rous, p. 214.

<sup>40</sup> Page 567, 8.

Perhaps there is too much refinement in supposing, that for different purposes, a similar report was propagated both by Richard and Buckingham; by Richard to persuade the people that the *death* of his nephews rendered him indisputably their sovereign; by Buckingham, to convince them that the *murder* of the princes required and justified *his* resistance, the degradation of the tyrant, and the elevation of a new line to the throne. We are informed by More, that Richard circulated the first report of the death of his nephews, an improbable circumstance on the supposition of their murder; but we are assured by the monk of Croyland, that the rumour prevailed not, till the insurgents were prepared for revolt, not till Buckingham was proclaimed their leader<sup>41</sup>. Such an opportune report, diverting their attention from the young princes whom they had confederated to rescue, to the exiled Richmond, generates a suspicion that it was disseminated purposely by Buckingham and Morton, and afterwards preposterously attributed to Richard. Their motives hitherto have never been examined. Buckingham's family had been Lancastrians; his father perished at the battle of St. Albans, his grandfather at that of Northampton; and Morton, a Lancastrian also, had been faithful to Henry VI. in his lowest fortune. Buckingham's defection has been variously ascribed to resentment or penitence; resentment at the refusal of deserved rewards, and repentance of his treachery to Edward's children. Every reward that could ensure a friend, or attach a subject, had been accumulated on him; and it is not credible that a repentant humour would induce him, for Richmond's benefit, to endanger himself, or dissolve the government he had recently constructed. A political character is seldom accessible to penitence, unless it be profitable. Resentment at Edward's offspring, had con-

<sup>41</sup> Supra.



ned him with Richard ; from whom, as no cause of quarrel existed, ambition alone could detach him afterwards. His motives may be discovered from his conversations with Morton, an artful intermixture of truth and falsehood<sup>42</sup>. Morton, a prisoner at Brecknock, remarking Buckingham's secret disaffection, proposed that he should dethrone the tyrant Richard ; and if averse to the cares and disquiet of a crown, bestow it on the princess Elizabeth, or reinstate the royal lineage of Lancaster. Buckingham replied, that at Gloucester, when informed of the murder of the princes, (a murder not then perpetrated,) he forsook the court with detestation and horror ; and ruminating during his journey on the destruction of the tyrant, recollected for the first time that himself, the descendant and representative of John of Gaunt, possessed an indubitable title to the crown. An interview with Margaret Countess of Richmond, destroyed these visions, by reminding him that they were sprung from two brothers, Dukes of Somerset, and lineal descendants of John of Gaunt ; but that as her father was the elder brother, her son's was therefore the preferable title. But he could not be ignorant that the Beauforts, dukes of Somerset, though descended from John of Gaunt, were the produce of an adulterous connection with Catharine Swineford ; and when legitimated by parliament, were excluded expressly from succession to the crown. He must have remembered his own descent from Anne, daughter and heiress of Thomas of Woodstock, son of Edward III., and younger brother of Edmond of Langley, and John of Gaunt, progenitors of the York and Lancastrian families ; and recollected (for he bore the arms of Thomas of Woodstock) that such descent afforded a title inferior only to Richard's,

<sup>42</sup> See More, and Hall and Grafton's continuation of this curious conversation : the particulars of which, as they were derived from Morton himself, serve to elucidate much of the obscurity attending Richard's accession.

and superior to any pretensions of his or Richmond's, as the spurious descendants of John of Gaunt<sup>43</sup>. The fact is, that Richmond never avowed his pretensions, till the field of Bosworth decided his right. Individually his power was unequal to a contest with Buckingham, whose Lancastrian title, however defective, was sufficient to conciliate the Lancastrian interest; and whose ambition, had his rebellion prospered, would have induced him assuredly to retain and wear, not to resign to Richmond, the crown he had conquered; and to fortify his doubtful title, by an union with the Yorkists, the intermarriage of his son with the Princess Elizabeth. Whatever were the secret motives of Morton and others, *his* propinquity to the crown, and the probable issue of his conduct if successful, indicates an ambition aspiring to royalty, and productive of rebellions, in which repentance had no share. The murder therefore of the young princes is not authenticated by his revolt, since we cannot conclude from his conduct, that his motive was to avenge their death. On the contrary, a report propagated on the eve of a general insurrection, excites a suspicion that it was devised to render the insurrection popular, to justify the proposed degradation of Richard, and the transference of the crown to a different family.

But the report is confirmed by contemporary evidence, that of the chief partizans of York; who, persuaded of the murder, concurred with the Lancastrians in supporting Richmond, and promoting the union of the rival roses<sup>44</sup>. The argument is specious, not satisfactory; for those enumerated as the principal Yorkists, were either Lancastrians, or connected by birth or affinity with Bucking-

<sup>43</sup> Sandford's Geneal. Hist. Dugdale's Baronage.

<sup>44</sup> Hume's Hist. vol. iii. p. 456. A strong proof of Hume's inattention to the *minutiae* of history is, that those whom he enumerates as the principal Yorkists were all Lancastrians, the Stanleys excepted.

ham and Richmond. The Courtneys were Lancastrians, and steadfast adherents of Henry VI., the Earl of Devon was enriched by the forfeiture of the Duke of York; his son was attainted by Edward, and afterwards slain, fighting for the Lancastrians, at the battle of Tewksbury; and his family supported the insurrection of Buckingham. The Talbots were Lancastrians, and obtained their share in the rich confiscations of the Duke of York; the Earl of Shrewsbury and Christopher his brother fell at Northampton; and Sir Gilbert Talbot, a surviving brother, brought a large accession of strength to the standard of Richmond. The Stanleys were properly Yorkists; but Lord Stanley's marriage with Richmond's mother, which rendered his fidelity suspicious, occasioned his subsequent defection from Richard. The Blounts were Yorkists; but Lord Mountjoy and Sir James<sup>45</sup> his brother, were connected both with Buckingham and Richmond; their mother was the dowager Duchess of Buckingham; Henry Stafford their uterine brother was the Countess of Richmond's second husband; and the execution of Buckingham their nephew, attached them necessarily to Richmond's interest. If the Berkleys were Yorkists, we discover in their accession to Buckingham's conspiracy, their dissatisfaction at the recent elevation of the Howards, descended with them from the daughters of Thomas first Duke of Norfolk, and Earl Marshal of England; but as their mother was the eldest daughter, the revival of these honours in the Howard family was probably resented as injurious to theirs<sup>46</sup>. Bouchier's and Hungerford's fathers

<sup>45</sup> Who betrayed the castle of Hams to Richmond.

<sup>46</sup> The title of Norfolk had been bestowed before-hand by Edward on his second son Richard Duke of York, whom he betrothed and intended to marry to the infant daughter and heiress of Mowbrey, the last Duke. It was suggested, I find, by a learned prelate, in his correspondence with the late Dr. Henry, that Richard would not have offered, nor would Howard have accepted, the title, unless it was vacant; and as there was no forfeiture, there is reason to presume that the



fathers were Lancastrians; Willoughby, Cheney, Dawbeny, Arundel, and others, were either soldiers of desperate fortune, or private gentlemen whose political connections no researches can now discover. Sir Thomas St. Leger is marked as a partisan of the house of York, on account of his marriage with the Duchess of Exeter, Richard's sister; but the Duchess died in the former reign; and as her first husband was a devoted Lancastrian, we have no assurance that the second was a Yorkist. The conspiracy for which he suffered was concerted to rescue and restore the princes, and its formation preceded the report of their death<sup>47</sup>. Those partisans, whose desertion of Richard can be rendered a presumptive attestation of the murder, are therefore reduced to the Grays and Woodvilles, the queen's relations; and as these were originally Lancastrian families, I cannot discover that Richmond's accession was effected, as historians have imagined, by a previous coalition with the principal Yorkists.<sup>48</sup>

The queen's friends, whose attachment to the house of York depended solely on their alliance with Edward, projected, for the restitution of his children, those insurrections to which Buckingham, Morton, and the Lancastrians acceded. The report of the murder dissolving their recent connection with the Yorkists, renewed their former attachment to Lancaster; and I must conclude

the title was vacated by the Duke of York's death. The argument is the less conclusive, as Howard's creation took place on the 28th June 1483, when the Duke of York was certainly not understood to be dead. The interests of a boy might have been disregarded, or the revival of the title in his person considered as irregular, injurious to the claims of the Howards, descendants of the first Duke. But the Duke of York, as far as history can ascertain, was certainly alive on the 8th of September following.

<sup>47</sup> See Dugdale's Baronage, under the names of the respective families enumerated in the text.

<sup>48</sup> In the historians of the period there is no trace of such a previous union of the Lancastrians and Yorkists.

that

that they acted on a firm persuasion and belief of the fact, when they transferred their interest gratuitously to Richmond, concurred in his marriage with the Princess Elizabeth, and for his benefit persisted in those insurrections, that were first concerted to rescue Edward V. from prison. Their evidence resolves, however, into mere opinion, their belief of a dark and secret transaction, to the truth of which they had no certain access: it is diminished by the frequent fluctuations, and destroyed by the apparent contradiction of their subsequent conduct. The Queen, on assurance of safety, forsook the sanctuary, and resorted with her daughter to Richard's court: his proposals for marriage proved so acceptable to the princess Elizabeth, that she seems to have languished with impatience for the nuptials<sup>49</sup>; and the Marquis of Dorset endeavoured, by the Queen his mother's directions, to escape from Richmond, by whom he was intercepted, and during the subsequent invasion, detained prisoner at Paris. Either their former persuasion was much altered, or the mother had forgotten or pardoned the murderer of her sons, and the daughter was desirous of embracing a husband, polluted with the recent blood of her brothers. Adopting their conduct as the rule of evidence, we must conclude from Buckingham's insurrection, when their interest was certainly exerted for Richmond, that they were actuated then by the report of the murder, and their own internal conviction of its truth; but we must also conclude from the same rule, that Richard was afterwards enabled to establish his innocence, to convince the Queen that her children survived, or at least that their death was casual, not accelerated by his interference. If he was serious in his proposals to marry Elizabeth his intention was not to strengthen his title, (her illegitimacy

<sup>49</sup> Buck quotes a letter of hers to the Duke of Norfolk, preserved in the Earl of Arundel's library, and expressive of extreme impatience for the marriage.

precluded

precluded that,) but to frustrate any hostile connection with Richmond.

The circumstances now ascertained are, the existence of the princes on the eight of September, a conspiracy for their restoration, to which Buckingham and the principal Lancastrians acceded, a report of their murder, and the concurrence and temporary resolution of their kindred to transfer the succession to a different family. Two contradictory conclusions are deducible: 1. That Richard, to counteract the object of an alarming conspiracy, extinguished the male issue of Edward his brother: 2. That the report of the murder, originating with Buckingham and Morton and the chief Lancastrians, was calculated to deceive, to conciliate the insurgents to their private measures; and that it afterwards passed uncontradicted by Richard, as the probable means of uniting the divided adherents of York. Were the evidence to terminate here, the last conclusion would be properly rejected; the disappearance of the princes, succeeded by a report and belief of their murder, would constitute a satisfactory proof that their death was violent. But the evidence extends to a subsequent period; and as the re-appearance of one of the princes would render the murder of his brother extremely improbable, the conclusion must be suspended till we ascertain the character of him who, personating the Duke of York, has in history been hitherto denominated Perkin Warbeck.

IV. It is singular, and perhaps peculiar to Henry's fortune, that his success was promoted, and his acquisition of the crown effected, by a persuasion of the death or murder of the young princes; and that his reign was disquieted afterwards, by the prevailing opinion of their having either escaped the cruelty, or survived by the clemency, of their unfortunate uncle. Cardinal Bourchier expressed his apprehension of the Queen's intention to  
remove



remove the youngest beyond the realm; and early in Richard's reign a conspiracy for conveying them both abroad was detected and punished<sup>50</sup>. Another design for the escape of one of their sisters, in disguise, from sanctuary, was discovered during the progress to York<sup>51</sup>; and scarcely was Henry established on his throne, when a report was diffused, and generally credited, that the sons of Edward IV. had been conveyed secretly away, and were still alive, concealed by their obscurity in some distant region<sup>52</sup>. Whether the rumour was coëval with Henry's reign, or propagated that Lambert Simnel might personate the Duke of York, the character assumed by that juvenile impostor was determined by a subsequent report of Warwick's murder, not, as historians have misconceived, of his escape from the Tower. Surmises of secret violence to state prisoners, were not peculiar to Richard's reign; and but for Lambert's imposture, that rendered the public exhibition of Warwick necessary, *his* death or existence might have remained as mysterious at present as that of his unfortunate cousins, concerning whom reports are so various, and whose fate historians are so solicitous to discover.<sup>53</sup>

On

<sup>50</sup> More. Stowe, Ric. III.

<sup>51</sup> Chron. Croyl.

<sup>52</sup> "The deaths and final fortunes of the two young princes have nevertheless so far come in question, that some remained long in doubt whether they were in Richard's days destroyed or no." More. — In vulgus fama valeret, filios Edwardi regis, aliquo terrarum secreto migrasse, atque ibi superstites esse." Pol. Virg. p. 569. — "Neither wanted there even at this time" (Henry's accession) "secret rumours and whisperings, which afterwards gathered strength, and turned to great trouble, that the two young sons of King Edward IV. or one of them, (which were said to be destroyed in the Tower,) were not indeed murdered, but were conveyed secretly away, and were yet living.—And all this time it was still whispered every where that at least one of the children was living." Bacon, p. 4. See Hall.

<sup>53</sup> "Fama valeret Edwardum Varvici comitem, vel necatum, vel brevi necandum. Haud ita multo post, fama passim dissipavit in carcere interisse." Pol. Virg. p. 69.—This material fact, perverted by Hall and Grafton, from their tenderness to Henry, has strangely escaped

On the appearance of Lambert, when the Earl of Lincoln departed to solicit assistance from the Dukes of Burgundy, Henry, after much deliberation in council, seized the Queen-dowager's person, confiscated her estates, and confined her for life in a solitary cloister. The pretext was, her having departed from sanctuary, and entrusted her daughter to Richard's care; a false pretext, adopted obviously to conceal a more secret, and in Henry's eyes a more criminal transaction. Either she connived with Lincoln in Lambert's imposture, or possessed some dangerous political secret, dangerous to the future stability of Henry's government; and when the preceding report of her son's escape is combined with the subsequent appearance of Warbeck, that she was imprisoned in consequence of such a report; estranged from all correspondence with the world, to prevent her testimony in the event of her son's existence from transpiring; stripped of her wealth, to intercept any secret resources from him; is a conclusion more probable than this, that, convinced of the death of her sons, yet dissatisfied with Henry, she engaged in a conspiracy, and promoted an imposture, for the purpose of transferring the crown from the Queen her daughter, and Prince Arthur her grandson, to Lincoln, Richard's nephew, formerly declared his presumptive heir. Let historians, who ascribe such conduct to habitual intrigue and the desire of power, beware of indulging in wanton conjectures. If she had no son to succeed to the throne, she had no power to expect from the promotion of Richard's heir, or Warwick, Clarence's issue, not less hateful to her than Lincoln. The report then

escaped the notice of our recent historians, who have all supposed the imposture founded on the report of Warbeck's escape; such imposture was superfluous if the escape was true, and liable to immediate detection if his person remained in Henry's custody. We see that Henry was defamed in much the same manner as Richard; but who will assure me that, had Warwick never been exhibited, his execution would have been public, or that his murder would not have been attributed to Richard.

that occasioned her imprisonment, demonstrates the probability, as it discloses Henry's apprehensions, that one at least of her sons existed; and as it was preceded by repeated attempts for their rescue, it is to be verified or refuted by an investigation of Perkin Warbeck's pretensions and character.

Historical notices concerning this personage, are slight and unsatisfactory, transmitted either by Henry, or by writers who discover a rancorous prejudice against his rival. Warbeck's first appearance was in Ireland, whence he was invited by ambassadors to France; and on the peace of Estaples, he repaired to Flanders, claimed, it is said, and obtained the protection of the Dukes of Burgundy, was received as her nephew the Duke of York, the descendant of Edward IV. her brother. The imposture originated, as is generally asserted, in her inveterate hatred of the Lancastrian party; for the depression of which, she circulated rumours of her nephew's escape from the tyranny of Richard her brother; and after a search for years, discovered a youth of obscure birth, qualified to personate the youngest of the princes, of the same age, handsome and elegant in his person and appearance, with a crafty head and bewitching address, so subtle and cunning, that it was impossible in conversation to detect his falsehood; such a wanderer, that it was difficult to trace his origin, or discover his adventures; an expert linguist, to whom the English was familiar as his vernacular language; a Jew by birth, yet so similar in every feature to him whom he personated, that the resemblance could only be solved by the supposition of his being an illegitimate descendant from the same father. This *mercurial*, the Dukes secretly retained at court, instructed him in her cabinet to assume the demeanor and state of a prince, without departing from a modest sense of his own misfortunes; informed him of every circumstance relative to the character he was intended to personate; described minutely the persons and features of the King and Queen



his pretended parents, their son Prince Edward, their five daughters, and those who had formerly attended the Duke of York; devised a *smooth and likely tale* of his brother's death, and his own escape; and concluded her instructions by teaching him how to evade, when interrogated, such captious questions as might tend to detection. When properly tutored, and inspired by the Duchefs with unbounded ambition, he was sent with an English lady<sup>54</sup> to Portugal, and afterwards emerged from obscurity in Ireland, assumed the character of the Duke of York, and attracted the notice, and acquired the esteem and friendship, of different princes. At Paris, an hundred English gentlemen, who resorted to him, were convinced of his birth, and embraced his interest; his behaviour was princely, and supported uniformly with such propriety, that all ranks, persuaded of his title, regarded him as Richard Duke of York: the counterfeit was practised so long, that it became habitual: it deceived himself: from a liar, he became a believer, and was almost converted into the identical character which he was employed to exhibit<sup>55</sup>. Of this relation, our author justly observes, that it is too laboured and artificial to be strictly true; that particulars extremely improbable, and of a nature too secret for the historian to discover, are asserted positively without proof; and that it is "more like a tale contrived to solve appearances, than like genuine history, supported by proper evidence<sup>56</sup>."

Its purport is to discredit the public declarations of an aunt, on whose testimony the existence and identity of her nephew would otherwise be established; and its credit therefore depends on the character and probable motives of the Duchefs of Burgundy, whether her character can

<sup>54</sup> Lady Brampton; yet her evidence was never produced.

<sup>55</sup> Bacon, p. 607. *Credunt simul quæ fingunt*, had belonged, I thought, to religious impostors.

<sup>56</sup> *Supra*, ch. i. sect. i.

warrant the imputation, and what motives could suggest the contrivance of so vile an imposture. Margaret was the sister of Richard, the widow of Charles the Hardy, the tutelage of whose grandchildren, the Flemings, ever jealous of their liberties, transferred, on the death of his daughter (the offspring of a former marriage), from Maximilian their father, to Margaret's care. Her execution of this maternal trust, as described by an historian partial to Henry, will explain her character. "*Hos* "*liberos materno amplexa amore, mira charitate, nutrit* "*bat, accipiebat, fovebat, studiose que rebus domesticis* "*operam tribuebat, quæ ejusmodi officiis magnam apud* "*Flandres sibi auctoritatem compararet*"<sup>57</sup>. Such affectionate and prudent conduct indicates those mild and beneficent virtues, that conciliated the esteem and respect of the untractable Flemings, not that character addicted to intrigue and prone to mischief, which might be suspected of dangerous and dark machinations. An imputation so inconsistent with her general character, derives no presumption from her former conduct. Lambert Simnel she never acknowledged, nor supported otherwise than by furnishing Lincoln her nephew, once the presumptive heir of the English crown, with troops to render his pretensions effectual. Whatever was the secret object of that insurrection, the imposture was certainly concerted without her participation; her assistance was solicited by Lincoln alone, and granted, on every hypothesis, to support a nephew<sup>58</sup>, not Lambert, a boy removeable at Lincoln's pleasure. But on Warbeck's appearance,

<sup>57</sup> Polydore Virgil, p. 570.

<sup>58</sup> Either Lincoln, or Richard Duke of York, (Warwick then was supposed to be murdered,) but most probably the latter. Lincoln, connected with the Plantagenets by the female line, found, when he employed Lambert to personate Warwick, that he could not claim in his own person; and the pageant could have been removed afterwards with a bad grace, unless by the superior right of the Duke of York.

when

when Lincoln had perished, and Warwick's life was at Henry's disposal, there was no prince of the house of York whose accession such an imposture could promote. Warbeck's reward, in the event of his success, was the crown of England; and on the supposition of his imposture, Margaret, for the purpose of supplanting Henry, must have selected a vagabond of a detested race, to personate the heir, and maintain the honour, of her illustrious family, to acquire, and transmit to his own descendants, that crown which, in her opinion, was the exclusive patrimony of the house of York. Whatever were her prejudices or antipathy to Henry, the conduct imputed to her involves "such perverseness, wickedness, and malice, "as is scarcely credible;" more than that, its absurdity would have defeated her own intentions. She hated Henry, because he depressed her family, and communicated no share of his splendor or power to her niece, his wife. Therefore she labours, by every detestable artifice, to transfer the crown from her own family, from her niece the descendant of the house of York, to the obscure son of a converted Jew. Conclusions so preposterous must be rejected, and Margaret's acknowledgment received as evidence of an unsuspicious nature, confirming the preceding report of her nephew's existence, and attesting his identity with Perkin Warbeck.

There is some difficulty, perhaps, on the disappearance of the Duke of York at the age of nine, his re-appearance at manhood, and obscurity during the intermediate period. The difficulty is thus obviated: He was either conveyed from the Tower by the intervention of some of his mother's friends, or committed by Richard to the care of Margaret, to be educated abroad, in a manner correspondent to the mediocrity of his future fortune. On these suppositions, Margaret's court was the last place to which he could have fled for refuge while Richard was

<sup>59</sup> Supra, ch. i. sec. 1.



alive, or where he could have obtained public protection when Richard was dead. Flanders then was a scene of distraction; its cities had revolted against Maximilian; the inhabitants were dependent on England for a lucrative commerce; and had Margaret produced her nephew in public, no protection could have been obtained from a feeble government, or expected from a people averse to every altercation, that might terminate in an interruption of their trade with England. The facility with which Henry, by a short suspension of commerce, procured the expulsion of Warbeck from Flanders, affords a satisfactory reason for his obscurity during his early youth, if entrusted by Richard or others to Margaret's care. If conveyed abroad, as his manifesto seems to insinuate, by his mother's assistance, he must have effected his escape during Richard's life, or after his death at the battle of Bosworth, when Brackenbury the lieutenant was slain, and before Willoughby with the unfortunate Warwick had arrived at the Tower. On the first supposition, a boy, entrusted probably to some faithful domestic, and too young to be proposed as a popular leader, had no friendly potentate to receive him on the Continent. Margaret of Burgundy might have restored him to Richard her brother; the courts of France and Brittany were pre-occupied by Richmond, who, as a Lancastrian, was hostile to every male of the house of York, and whose influence was such, that he detained the Marquis of Dorset at Paris in an honourable custody<sup>60</sup>. Silence and concealment were therefore necessary; but if on the other, and to me the more probable, supposition, his escape was effected after his uncle's death, and during the flight or confusion of those officers to whom the Tower was entrusted, concealment and silence were still more requisite. His mother was in London, and must have been sensible, that when Henry, at the head of a victorious army, assumed the

<sup>60</sup> Hall, p. 26.

crown, there was no resource but immediate flight, no protection but profound obscurity, to preserve her son from perpetual confinement. Assuredly, had Henry, who disregarded his sister's pretensions, secured his person, Warwick's portion must have been his; and as they were involved in the same ignominious death, they must have shared for life in the same oblivious gloom of a dungeon. Whatever was the fate of his elder brother, whether he died in confinement, or escaped to the Continent, I will not presume that he perished by Richard's orders, when I find the existence of the youngest attested by the common report of the age, the public unsuspicious declarations of his aunt, and Henry's severity, otherwise unaccountable, to the Queen his mother.

It was incumbent on Henry, if desirous to vindicate his own title, to discredit the Duchess of Burgundy's evidence, and to ascertain in the most unequivocal manner, the supposed murder of the Duke of York, and the pretended origin of Perkin Warbeck. Either would have sufficed to detect the imposture; but Warbeck's identity with the Duke of York is, by a strange fatality, best authenticated by Henry's narrative of the obscure birth of the one, and his measures to discover the murder of the other. There were three circumstances in Warbeck's history, for which a particular explanation was requisite, —a visible and strong resemblance of the Duke of York, a perfect knowledge of the English language, and a plan projected by a foreign youth for dethroning a monarch, by personating a prince who had perished in his childhood. But of these the narrative adopted by historians, and the confession attributed to Warbeck, contain different contradictory solutions.

1. In the reign of Edward IV. a Flemish Jew, recently converted to the Christian persuasion, resided during a season in London, where his wife was delivered of a son, to whom, at his baptism, the king condescended to act as

sponsor<sup>61</sup>. Such a godson as Perkin, for a monarch whose name was Edward, is alone ridiculous; but the tale is calculated to explain that resemblance which could not be contested, by the surmise of a previous intrigue between Edward and Warbeck's mother. The tale, if true, was susceptible of proof; and as Henry's title to the crown was in question, it was incumbent on him to establish the fact by the testimony of those who had either witnessed Warwick's baptism, or remembered his father at Edward's court. But the name of his pretended father is uncertain;—Warbeck according to historical narrative; Osbeck according to the confession ascribed to Perkin, as extorted from him; a confession which informs us that his birth-place was Tournay, but contains no trace of a Messiah from the Jews to the English nation.

2. He was removed in his infancy to Tournay, as a residence sufficient for the acquisition of the language might have involved Henry in the difficulty of proving his birth and early education in England<sup>62</sup>. But his knowledge of English was confessedly perfect, acquired, according to Bacon, in Flanders, by frequenting the company of English merchants; as if perfection were attainable in any language from the casual intercourse of a boy with foreigners. His confession is more explicit, and more contradictory. He was born at Tournay, from which his first excursion was to Antwerp, whither he was sent to acquire the Flemish, his native language; afterwards he lodged at a skinner's adjoining to the "house of the English nation;" and at last was placed by his friends in a merchant's service at Middleburgh, with whom he remained from Christmas to Easter, for the express purpose of learning the language. The merchant's name was John Strew; the language he taught was undoubtedly English: yet in Ireland, where Warbeck was mistaken for a Plantagenet, the inhabitants constrained him, against

<sup>61</sup> Bacon.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid.



his inclination, to acquire that language. Henry, solicitous to account for the purity of his accent, insinuated that his knowledge of English, which commenced from his vicinity at Antwerp to the English factory, was completed during his stay at Middleburgh; yet dissatisfied with this solution, Henry sends him at last to Ireland, to be instructed by force in the English language. The Duke of York, if attended after his escape from the Tower by an English domestic, would retain the purity, and cultivate the propriety, of his vernacular language; but that correct pronunciation, which to him was natural, could be communicated to Warbeck, neither by an intercourse abroad with the English, nor by a short and precarious residence among the Irish<sup>63</sup>. His pretensions, announced on his arrival in Ireland, must have been authenticated by a previous acquaintance with the language; an acquaintance unaccountable, unless on the supposition of his being the identical Duke of York.

3. That a foreigner, a youth of obscure birth, should devise or execute such an imposture, assume the name, and support the character of a prince, whose person was unknown to him, indulge the preposterous ambition of supplanting a powerful and vigilant monarch, and in the character of their native prince, of usurping the throne of a nation, to which he was an absolute stranger, were contradictions which Henry was obliged to reconcile, by ascribing the imposture to Margaret's secret instigation and contrivance. She discovered in Warbeck a resemblance of her nephew, tutored him to personate that prince, and, to provide for the exigencies of his future

<sup>63</sup> It is easy to estimate the possibility of the fact; the acquisition of languages is now facilitated by grammars and dictionaries. Let us consider then within what determinate number of years we ourselves, residing in England, could acquire the Dutch or Flemish in perfection; and if in the course of a life, neither study, nor the converse of natives, could accomplish that, let us again consider what residence abroad would be necessary, and we will discover the impossibility of Perkin's acquiring English abroad or in Ireland.

character, stored his mind with instructions and anecdotes concerning his family. Such a character, with the best instructions, was surely an arduous attempt for a foreigner. In the character of princes numerous impostors have deceived the world, but history furnishes no example of an impostor personating a foreign prince, to impose himself as a native on a foreign nation. The name of the unfortunate Warwick was adopted twice, but by English impostures. In the next century the false Demetrius, whose history has some resemblance to Warbeck's, obtained for a short period the Russian empire; but Demetrius, whatever was his birth, was a native of the country he aspired to govern<sup>64</sup>; and in our own memory, Pugalscheff and others, who successively assumed the name of their murdered sovereign, were Russians, whose language and manners coincided with the character they endeavoured to personate. Such a residence abroad, as might vitiate the pronunciation, and alter the manners, of the Duke of York, would certainly facilitate the attempt to support his character; but as Warbeck's pronunciation was confessedly perfect, and his behaviour consistent, we may estimate, with sufficient precision, the obstructions to be surmounted by a foreign impostor. Suppose then that the tragedy of Richard the Third were exhibited at Paris, and a French youth, instructed by an English actor to perform the part of the Duke of York; his erroneous pronunciation and defective utterance, the repugnance of his action and manners to those peculiar to the English nation, his inability to preserve or attain to propriety for a single scene, would convince us that Warbeck, a foreigner, could not possibly be capacitated by Margaret's

<sup>64</sup> Demetrius is treated uniformly as an impostor by Russian historians, but foreigners, less prejudiced, are apt to recognize his title on the authority of a mother's public acknowledgment, never publicly disowned or retracted. He was supposed to have been murdered in his infancy, but re-appeared, attesting his escape, at the age of manhood.—Vide Cox's Travels.

instructions, for the performance of the same character, with unexampled consistency, during his life. But Margaret was herself incapable of informing this actor; her marriage and departure from England preceded the birth of the Duke of York, nor could she discover his resemblance in Perkin, describe his character, the features and appearance of his brothers and sisters, (none of whom she had ever beheld,) nor instruct her pupil in the daily incidents, the companions and pursuits of his juvenile years, at a court in which, after her marriage, she had never resided<sup>65</sup>. The historical narrative is therefore false; but the confession published as Warbeck's disclaims it in a manner that exculpates Margaret and discredits itself. It was in Ireland, according to the confession, when Warbeck appeared at Cork dressed in some silk clothes of his master, that he was first mistaken for a Plantagenet, the son of Clarence; and when he denied it on oath, Water formerly the mayor, and Poytron an Englishman, repaired to him privately, maintained that he was a natural son of the late King Richard, assured him of adequate protection and succour, and advise him to assume that character without being intimidated by Henry's power. "And so," says the confession, "against my will they forced me to learn English, and taught me what I should do and say; and after this they called me Duke of York, second son of King Edward IV., because King Richard's bastard son was in the hands of the King of England." Thus the imposture, concerted in Flanders with such artful preparation, by the Dukes of Burgundy, disappears from the canvas, and the whole resolves into an idle tale of a servant mistaken by the Irish for a prince, (not from personal resemblance, but because he was

<sup>65</sup> His information has also been attributed to Trion, formerly Henry's French secretary, seduced from his service, and dispatched with Lucas to Warbeck in Ireland; but a Frenchman retained for a period as a clerk by Henry, could communicate few particulars, and none of the domestic or secret transactions of a former reign.



dressed in his master's clothes,) and a plan for dethroning the King of England, constructed on such a mistake, by the mayor of Cork. Such absurd falsehood demonstrates that the confession was either extorted by torture, or fabricated after the execution of Warbeck. It was unknown to Fabian and Polydore Virgil, both contemporaries<sup>66</sup>; but historians of a subsequent period, who adopted the narrative of the latter, with such deviations as their prejudice suggested, have superadded to those indignities, and to that dishonourable death to which Warbeck was exposed, a public confession of his birth and parentage, his adventures and frauds, read aloud, they assure us, first when he was set in the stocks at Cheapside, and again before his execution at Tyburn. That the confession was fictitious, is certain from its falsehood; for Warbeck landed in Ireland, not to be trained to imposture, but to assert his pretensions, and to solicit assistance from the potent Earls of Kildare and Desmond<sup>67</sup>. That it was fabricated by Henry, is more than probable; but to what shall we attribute his suppression of Margaret's share in the imposture? Not to any regard for Margaret, whose character Warham, his ambassador in Flanders, had loaded publicly with reproach and abuse<sup>68</sup>. Henry, to render the

<sup>66</sup> Polydore Virgil was sent by the Pope to England to collect the papal tribute about the year 1500, and continued there till the Reformation commenced. His history, as he informs us in a dedication to his brother, of his book *De Inventoribus Rerum*, was begun in 1505 at Henry's request, and finished in twelve years. His information was certainly derived from Henry; and with respect to Warbeck's execution in 1499, must be genuine: but he either knew not, or regarded the confession as spurious, when he omits it in his account of Warbeck's being set in the stocks, and afterwards hanged at Tyburn; p. 608.—See Fabian also.

<sup>67</sup> His letters to these noblemen were supposed to have been extant in Sir James Ware's time.—Ware's *Annals of Ireland*, 1492.

<sup>68</sup> "Dr. Warham, in the latter end of his oration, a little rebuked the lady Margaret, and hit her on the thumbs, saying, that she now in her old age, and within few years, had produced and brought forth two detestable monsters, that is to say, Lambert and Perkin Warbeck; and being conceived of these great babes, not in eight  
 " or

the imposture probable, had circulated a story which he could not authenticate, and in the confession which he published, durst not assert. The accusation of Margaret would have rendered a proof of the imposture necessary, and might have provoked her to publish, in her own vindication, incontestible evidence of Warbeck's identity with the Duke of York. The repugnance between the confession and the historical narrative, (both of which originated with Henry,) must be ascribed to the impossibility of supporting either; and we must conclude that Henry was unable, either to ascertain the pretended birth of his rival, or to remove the improbability of a foreigner, a youth of obscure condition, aspiring to his crown, and projecting to dethrone him, by assuming the character of a prince destroyed in his early youth, whose name was almost forgotten in the world. His spies were certified, it is said, of Warbeck's parentage by "many honest persons in 'Tourney;" but that testimony might have been obtained by his ambassador in a more unexceptionable and public manner, when Warbeck was expelled by his influence from Flanders. That testimony was necessary to vindicate his title; but his inability to produce it, assures us that he had made no real discovery of Warbeck's origin, to disprove his identity with the Duke of York.

Nor is their identity refuted by Henry's pretended discovery of the previous murder of the Duke of York. It is justly observed<sup>69</sup>, that on Henry's accession, when

"or nine months, but on the one hundred and eightieth month, for both these were at the least fifteen years of age before she could be brought to bed of them; and when they were newly crept out of her womb, they were no infants, nor sucking children, but lusty younglings, and of age sufficient to bid battle to kings." Grafton, p. 901.—The historian observes, that although Margaret was vexed at being *hit on the thumbs*, Perkin was more disconcerted at the detection of his fraud in Warham's oration. Thus Henry accused Margaret publicly of a share in the imposture, and afterwards retracted the accusation in the confession which he fabricated. Can that be ascribed to decorum?

<sup>69</sup> Historical Doubts.

Richard and his numerous adherents were attainted, the passions of the people, inflamed and agitated, should have been productive of an immediate investigation of the murder. No inquiry was instituted however, not till Henry (as Bacon informs us) imprisoned, on Warbeck's appearance, Dighton and Tyrell, the surviving assassins, and obtaining ample confessions of the murder, released the one "who spake best for his interest," but detained the other, whom he afterwards beheaded for a different crime. The purport, according to Bacon, of these confessions, was discovered only by public report; for Henry made no use of them in his subsequent declarations. Nor could he, for the confessions had not then an existence. Sir James Tyrell at that time enjoyed his confidence, if not his esteem. He had obtained from Henry the command of Guisnes; and after Warbeck's appearance and reception at Paris, was appointed one of the commissioners to conclude the treaty of Estaples with the French<sup>70</sup>. He was not imprisoned till ten years afterwards; when, on Suffolk's flight in 1502, he was accused of treason, attainted and beheaded. His confession must be postponed to that period; as More informs us, that, "when in the Tower for treason committed against Henry, he and Dighton confessed the murder<sup>71</sup>." Henry's previous measures to ascertain the murder, originated therefore in the historian's invention; and as Tyrell's crime was a confederacy with Suffolk, no reliance can be placed on a rumoured confession, never published, but calculated to asperse the character, and vindicate the execution of a soldier the victim of a tyrant's suspicions. Warbeck's pretensions required an immediate proof of the murder; but no discovery was made, nor inquiry instituted, till

<sup>70</sup> Hall, p. 18. 55. Rym. Fœd. vol. xii. p. 481.

<sup>71</sup> Warbeck, who appeared in 1492, was executed in 1499. Fabian mentions Sir James Tyrell's imprisonment and execution on Suffolk's account in 1502; not a word of his confession or imprisonment formerly.



Warbeck's death ; when a confession, certainly fictitious, was fastened on a person already condemned for a different crime.

Admitting then that Henry attempted neither to discover the murder, nor to establish the pretended obscurity of Warbeck's origin, that his competitor's pretensions derive additional confirmation from his failure, there was another more obvious detection of which the imposture was susceptible, an absolute criterion to determine its truth. Personal identity, at different periods, derives its sole proof from the opinion of friends, and acknowledgments of kindred ; and Margaret's attestation of her nephew's identity might have been counteracted, if false, by the more authoritative declarations of nearer relatives. The mother must have remembered her son, and the sisters their brother, whom they had formerly endeavoured to preserve in sanctuary, and the lost object of their fond regret, no lapse of time could efface from their memory. Manhood might expand, but it could not extirpate his youthful features ; or if these were altered, a thousand incidents still remained,—the particulars of the night in which they took refuge in sanctuary, their distresses, dangers, and mutual endearments, their last separation and solemn farewell, the recollection of a sister's tears and a mother's blessing, all remained to determine his filial and fraternal claims. The declarations of the Queen-dowager, of the Queen, or of her sisters, would have decided his character ; and their denial of his pretensions would have disabused the nation, and silenced for ever the sceptical voice of inquiry. “ But Warbeck “ never was confronted with them : they were never “ asked, Is this your son ? is this your brother ? ” Their verdict admitted of no appeal ; but they might have recognised in Warbeck, the youth they had fondly cherished in sanctuary, and the motions of nature might

<sup>72</sup> Historical Doubts, p. 85.

have disregarded the feeble injunctions of a tyrant. This was an obvious mode of detection, far preferable to the reports of spies, or a spurious confession; but the proof which Henry withheld or avoided, operates decidedly in Warbeck's favour, whose identity, thus established by the direct or presumptive evidence of his nearest kindred, is farther attested by his father's friends, Stanley, Fitzwalter, and others, who finally sealed their conviction with their blood. Their information, it is true, was derivative, not personal; yet its certainty may be estimated by the conviction it excited, such as exposed their lives to the rigour, and their fortunes to the rapacity, of a jealous tyrant. Their testimony might be corroborated, if necessary, by that of different contemporary princes; nor can we attribute to a smooth and plausible tale the reception Warbeck experienced from James IV., or believe that, without credentials or proofs of his birth, he obtained the cordial support of that monarch, and a princess his near relation in marriage. But the belief and declarations of friends and kindred, the opinion of the most respectable personages that distinguished the period, Henry's inability to discover the murder, or detect the imposture, constitute such evidence as can only be impaired or confirmed by those probable, or ostensible motives, with which Richard and Henry were respectively actuated. Acquitted of treason, usurpation, and treachery, and of the murders formerly imputed to his youth, Richard's character assumes a milder hue, and his supposed cruelty to Edward's, seems irreconcilable with his tenderness to Clarence's issue, as his accession, founded on the incapacity of both, rendered either equally formidable; and the attainder of the one might have been reversed as easily, as the illegitimacy of the other had been declared by parliament. No adequate motive could stimulate to a murder which neither strengthened his title, nor during Warwick's survival, increased his security; and the conclusion deducible

cible from the disappearance of his nephews, and the report of their murder, is removed by the subsequent report of their existence, and the re-appearance of the youngest, whose identity, which his friends and kindred attested, his implacable enemy was unable to discredit. Henry's apprehensions of their appearance, are discovered by his severe and unmerited treatment of the queen-dowager, his preservation of Lambert as a remedy against future *enchancements* of a similar nature, his regret that Lincoln's death intercepted the knowledge of the *bottom of his danger*<sup>73</sup>; and his systematical depression of the Yorkists must be attributed, after his marriage with Elizabeth, not to a foolish and incurable prejudice, but to a persuasion that the existence of one of their princes rendered it dangerous to entrust them with power. But the reason assigned by Henry for the execution of Warwick, *vacuam domum scelestis nuptiis facere*, discloses his secret conviction of Warbeck's descent from the house of York. At the instigation of Ferdinand, who refused his daughter while the male line of Plantagenet existed, Warwick was removed as an obstruction to Prince Arthur's approaching marriage<sup>74</sup>. His conspiracy with Warbeck was therefore fictitious, or rather, as was understood at the period, a snare prepared for their mutual destruction; but as Warbeck, if an impostor, was no obstacle to Arthur's nuptials, Henry, whose policy spared Lambert, stooped confessedly to a detestable artifice, in order to terminate his own or Ferdinand's fears, by the extinction of the two surviving princes of the race of Plantagenet.

That Perkin Warbeck was a genuine Plantagenet, that Richard was no usurper, nor a tyrant stained with the blood of his kinsmen, are conclusions of which the reception can only be obstructed by the difficulty of discarding our ancient historians. Their credit, however, is now diminished; more information is traced to Morton, than

<sup>73</sup> Bacon.<sup>74</sup> Ibid.



whom there was none more interested in traducing his recent, deserted sovereign; Polydore Virgil, a courtly writer, composed his history at Henry's request; and when succeeding chroniclers transcribed the one, and improved on the other, we may be assured that, during the Tudor dynasty, literature possessed no curiosity to examine, nor spirit to vindicate, an obscure and dangerous historical truth. Would historians, afraid to intimate the defect inherent in Henry's title, express the slightest recognition of his rivals, or suggest a marriage that rendered himself an usurper, his wife a bastard, and the royal issue of England's roses, doubly illegitimate, destitute of every hereditary or legal claim<sup>75</sup>? Would historians, whose rancour has branded Richard with every personal deformity and moral turpitude, transfer to Henry the imputation of murdering, in Warbeck, the true Plantagenet, to secure an equivocal right to the crown? The same causes operated after the accession of the Stuarts, whose divine or hereditary right, derived from Henry's daughter, would have been impaired by whatever tended to Richard's vindication; and Buck, the first who asserted his innocence, felt the necessity of procuring a new title for the reigning family, in the descent of James from the Saxon monarch<sup>76</sup>. Bacon's history might have been composed from materials that are now lost; an apologetical history, calculated to establish his master's despotical principles, and display their milder exercise, by the severe precedent of a former reign; but when the historian records as real what he conceived requisite, who can discriminate facts from the produce of invention? The inquisition concerning the murder of the princes, however

<sup>75</sup> "A bastard branch of Lancaster, matched with a bastard of York, were obtruded on the nation as the right heirs of the crown; and as far as two negatives make an affirmative, they were so."—*Historic Doubts*, p. 40.

<sup>76</sup> From Margaret, Edgar Atheling's sister, married to Malcolm Canmore.

requisite, was not instituted; and Warbeck's manifesto was perverted, either capriciously, or to countenance the purport of a wretched speech. That manifesto contains no explanation of his escape from the Tower, nor was it prudent to expose his secret deliverers to Henry's resentment; but his supposed oration to the Scottish court (a fiction of Grafton's, embellished by Bacon) will not persuade us that the *smooth and likely tale* of his deliverance was absurd and improbable; that his life, according to his own account, was spared by the compassion, and his escape effected by the connivance and aid, of his brother's murderers<sup>77</sup>. But to those who, in estimating the voice of history, take no computation of the character of historians, timid or venal, subservient to the times, or obsequious to power, let me suggest an illustration that may render the present dissertation not entirely barren of moral instruction. The fate of Richard's nephews, and the participation of the Scottish Mary in her husband's murder, constitute two problematical questions in British story, exemplified in the recent annals of Europe, by crimes of a more unequivocal and detestable die. Richard died like a soldier, but his memory has been persecuted with unmerited hatred; and the beautiful and accomplished Mary, expelled from her throne and paternal kingdom, bewailed her misfortunes in a long captivity, and expiated her imputed guilt with her blood. The present generation has beheld a princess murder her husband and usurp his throne, and with despotic impunity rule an empire to which she was an alien. We have seen usurpation recognized as legal, parricide and regicide approved as glorious, by the monarchs of Europe, who, instead of confederating to vindicate sovereignty thus outraged, solicit her alliance,

<sup>77</sup> A smooth and likely tale indeed! It is observable, that the proclamation, the only genuine evidence derived from Warbeck of his pretensions or character, neither gives countenance to the absurdity supposed to attend his escape, nor accuses Richard of a single crime: yet Bacon has given it such an implied meaning.

and sue for her friendship ; by those monarchs, who, if a gallant nation, re-asserting its freedom, interpose an intermediate power between the prince and his people, are alarmed for their own indefeatable supremacy, and eager, by the conspiracy of their flagitious arms, to reduce that state to its pristine servitude. Two observations are deducible from an example, the dishonour, not the detestation, of Europe: The one is, that the virtues and the vices of the human species are, in different periods, nearly balanced ; that if three centuries of progressive refinement have improved the manners and repressed the vices, they have also debased and degraded the virtues of the moderns ; supplanted that indignation which pursued the supposed guilt of a Richard and a Mary, and instructed nations, at least their rulers, to sympathize with the successful crimes of a female usurper, not to commiserate the wrongs of her murdered husband. The other observation is, that under her despotism his fate will be converted by the discreet historian into a natural demise ; and if her successors are interested in her meretricious virtues, the falsehood will be propagated by future historians, till the time arrive when the crime itself shall become problematical, and the inquirer, who reads in foreign authors the *decease* of the prince, will not credit the imputation of a murder, of which the annals of his country contain no trace. But when the just imputation of such atrocity is, in this enlightened period, suppressed by power, or averted, even among foreigners<sup>78</sup>, by its splendor, who will tell me that, during five reigns, and a long century, of Tudor domination, historians would venture, by the suggestion of Richard's title, to pronounce his successors a race of usurpers, or by a surmise of his innocence, to establish their right on the murder of his

<sup>78</sup> See in Coxe's Travels (but I forget the passage, the personage, the period of time, or the particular region,) a curious instance of such a *decease*.



nephew, the Duke of York? The Stuarts are accused, and perhaps with truth, of obliterating the evidence of Mary's guilt; and it is not presumable that a document of Richard's innocence, or his nephew's existence, would survive the suppression of the monasteries, and escape the destructive vigilance of either Henry. But whether the solicitude of Mary's descendants has redeemed her innocence, Richard's must be recognized, when of numerous accusations, no crime has been substantiated by a race of sovereigns hostile to his memory, nor scrupulous either in the abuse of power, or the perversion of truth.

## NUMBER IV.

[Ex originali in Bibl. Thomæ Astlei, arm.]

Recepta Scaccarij. DECLARACIO fact. metuendissimo domino nostro regi nunc Henrico Octavo per Johannem Cutte militem subthes. Anglie tam de feodis & annuitatibus diversarum personarum solut. ad receptam Scaccarij illustrissimi principis famose memorie domini Henrici nuper regis Anglie Septimi quam de omnibus & singulis denariorum summis pro quibuscumque alijs causis per mandatum dicti nuper regis ad receptam predictam solut. & assignat. pro uno anno integro finit. ad festum sancti Michaelis Archangeli anno regni serenissime majestatis predict. nuper regis 24to. ut in consequentibus particulis plenius apparent; videlicet,

Tempore nuper regis Henrici Septimi.

Dominis, militibus, armigeris, & diversis alijs personis.

	℥.	s.	d.
JOHANNI comiti Oxon. constabular. Turris regis London. de feod. suo, per annum	100	0	0
Willelmo domino Conyers — De hereditate sua, per annum	20	0	0
Thome domino Dacre — Locumtenent. Westmarch. versus Scociam, per annum	153	6	8
Thome domino Darcy — Locumtenent. Estmarch. versus Sociam, per annum	114	13	4
	Edwardo		

	£.	s.	d.
Edwardo Ratcliff mil. } Locumtenent. Mi-			
& } dlemarch. versus			
Rogero Fenwyk arm. } Scociam per annum	114	13	4
Jacobo Strangwais mil. — De hereditate sua,			
per annum	20	0	0
Thome Lovell mil. — Custod. castri regis			
Nott. de feodo suo, per annum	26	13	4
Thome Brandon mil. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	40	0	0
Edwardo Darell mil. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	20	0	0
Edwardo Wyngefeld mil. — De annuitate			
sua, per annum	40	0	0
Willelmo Vampage mil. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	33	6	8
Rowlando Vylevile mil. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	20	0	0
Johanni Carewe mil. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	33	6	8
Matheo Baker arm. — De annuitate sua, per			
annum	33	6	8
Antonio Fetyplace arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	33	6	8
Thome Parre arm. — De annuitate sua, per			
annum	33	6	8
Ricardo Hastyngs arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	33	6	8
Edmundo Duddely arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	66	13	4
Henrico Wyatte arm. — Clerico jocalium do-			
mini regis, de annuitate sua, per annum	13	6	8
Petro Champayn arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	20	0	0
Roberto Knollys arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	13	6	8
Thome Neville arm. — De annuitate sua,			
per annum	20	0	0
Johanni Heron — Rangeatori regis infra fo-			
restam de Waltham, per annum	9	2	6
Hugoni Denys — Virgebajulo infra castrum			
regis de Wyndesore, per annum	18	5	0
G G 4			Johanni



	£.	s.	d.
Johanni de Roye—De annuitate sua, per ann.	26	13	4
Edwardo Chefeman—Coferario hospicij regis de appunctuac. per annum	-	300	0 0
Andree Wyndesore mil.—Clerico magne garderobe regis de appunctuac. per annum	300	0	0
Johanni Meawtys—Secretario domini regis in lingua Gallica, de annuitate sua, per annum	40	0	0
Roberto Rydon—Clerico consilij domini regis de annuitate sua, per annum	-	26	13 4
Ricardo Dycons—Custod. Brun. domini regis in communi banco, de annuitate sua, per annum	-	6	13 4
Willelmo Smyth—Custod. †corum & al. har- nec. regis infra Turrin London. de annui- tate sua, per annum	-	18	5 0
Roberto Hafilrigge—Custod. garderobe regis infra palacium Westm. de feodo suo, per annum	-	12	3 4
Petro Narbone—Barbitonfori domini regis, de annuitate sua, per annum	-	13	6 8
Ricardo Gybson & alijs lusoribus domini regis. —De annuitate sua, per annum	-	13	6 8
Henrico Glasebury & alijs ministrallis domi- ni regis—De annuitate sua, per annum	53	6	8
Garcionibus & pagettis camere domini regis de reg. inter se erga festum natalis Do- mini annuatim consuet. per annum	-	100	0 0
Willelmo Cornyshe—Magistro puerorum capelle regis, de annuitate sua, per annum, pro excubicione eorundem puerorum	26	13	4
Radulpho Jenette—Custod. lectorum & ar- mature domini regis infra castrum de Wyndesore, de feodo suo, per annum	13	13	9
Ricardo Gybson—Portatori magne garde- robe regis in civitate London. per annum	6	1	8
Antonio Spynell—De annuitate sua, per ann.	20	0	0
Johanni de Pounce—Armurario regis de annuitate sua, per annum	-	20	0 0
Ricardo Smyth—Custod. gardini regis infra Turrin London. de feodo suo, per annum	9	2	6
			Thome

	£.	s.	d.
Thome Holden — Custod. hospicii regalis infra pallacium Westm. de feodo suo, per annum	6	1	8
Radulpho Pontiewe — Brigandario regis, de annuitate sua, per annum	10	0	0
Cornelio Vandestrete — Arefmaker, de feodo suo, per annum	18	5	0
Henrico Wyndefore — De annuitate sua, per annum	5	0	0
Johanni Turstan — Magistro barge domini regis, de annuitate sua, per annum	11	8	6½
Eidem Johanni — Pro vadijs 20 hominum ad serviend domino regi in barga sua, per annum	20	0	0
Fredefwide Pullenham — De annuitate sua, per annum	5	0	0

Summa hujus tituli, £2,111 15 2½

### Heraldis & pursevandis domini regis.

Thome Bevolte, al. Clarenceux herald, de annuitate sua, per annum	20	0	0
Johanni Young, al. Norrey herald, de annuitate sua, per annum	20	0	0
Johanni Pounce, al. Somersett. herald, de annuitate sua, per annum	13	6	8
Johanni Joynor, al. Rychemounde herald, de annuitate sua, per annum	13	6	8
Laurencio de la Gatta, al. Rougecrox pursevand, de annuitate sua, per annum	10	0	0
Radulpho Lagoo, al. Blewmantell pursevand, de annuitate sua, per annum	10	0	0

Summa hujus tituli, £ 86 13 4

### Diversis personis ecclesiasticis.

Magistro Johi Yong — Custod. rotulorum cancellarie regis, de feodo suo, per annum	31	8	2
---	----	---	---

Magistro

	£.	s.	d.
Magistro Johi Yong—Decano capelle domini regis pro oblacionibus ipsius domini regis debit' in die passaven, per annum	33	6	8
Willelmo Malham — Clerico parve bage cancellar. domini regis, de feodo suo, per annum	10	0	0
Fratribus minoribus Oxon. — De annuitate sua, per annum	33	6	8
Fratribus predicatoribus Cantebrig. — De annuitate sua, per annum	16	13	4
Fratribus minoribus Cantebrig. — De annuitate sua, per annum	16	13	4
Fratribus predicatoribus in civitate London. — De annuitate sua, per annum	20	0	0
Fratribus & sororibus sancte Katherine juxta Turrim London. — De annuitate sua, per annum	3	13	4
Abbatj monasterij de Stratford — De annuitate sua, per annum	5	0	0
Willelmo Gyddyng — Clerico rectori de Ayfshe, de annuitate sua, per annum	5	0	0
Ricardo Surbande — Clerico rectori capelle regis infra Turrim London. de annuitate sua, per annum	6	13	4
Infirmis leprosis sancti Egidij London. de annuitate sua, per annum	3	0	0
Puero episcopo sancti Nicholai infra capellam sancti Stephani, de annuitate sua, per ann.	1	0	0
Summa hujus tituli,	£185	13	10

### Servientibus domini regis ad arma.

Gilberto Mawdesley — De feodo suo, ad 12d. per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Thome Twysday — De feodo suo, ad 12d. per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Hugoni Cholmeley — De feodo suo, ad 12d. per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Willelmo			



	£.	s.	d.
Willelmo Butteler — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Jacobo Conyers — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Leonello Crafford — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Mauricio Butteler — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Willelmo More — De feodo suo, ad 12d. per			
diem, per annum	18	5	0
Johanni Harper — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Roberto Wafshyngton — De feodo suo, ad			
12d. per diem, per annum	18	5	0
Edwardo Gryffith — De feodo suo, ad 12d.			
per diem, per annum	18	5	0

Summa hujus tituli, £200 15 0

Valectis de corona domini regis.

Johanni Wattys — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Henrico Strete — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Willelmo Almer — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Olivero Turnor — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Ricardo Davye — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Ricardo Evan — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Johanni Jeffron — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Roberto Walker — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Johanni Amyas — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6
Johanni Brereton — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per			
diem, per annum	9	2	6

Johanni

	£.	s.	d.
Johanni Forde — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Petro Wrattton — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Johanni Whytyngton — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Henrico Hopkyns — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Edmundo Huntewade — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Ricardo Smyth — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Johanni Almer — De feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Summa hujus tituli,	£155	2	6

Clerico, valecto, & vibrellatoribus ordinac. domini regis.

Willelmo Archebald — Clerico ordinacionum domini regis, de feodo suo, ad 8d. per diem, per annum	-	-	12 3 4
Ricardo Smythe — Valetto ordinacionum regis, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per ann.	-	-	9 2 6
Thome Greves — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Ricardo Fawconer — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Eidem Ricardo — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, pro vadijs unius hominis	-	-	9 2 6
Rogero Anglois — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Roberto Fyfsheer — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Blasio Billarde — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum.	-	-	9 2 6
Winardo Godfrey — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
Willelmo Ivey — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum	-	-	9 2 6
			Henrico

	£.	s.	d.
Henrico Cromer — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum -	9	2	6
Pais Reynold — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum -	9	2	6
Euelmo Lucryand — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum -	9	2	6
Johanni Wyftowe — Vibrellatori, de feodo suo, ad 6d. per diem, per annum -	9	2	6

Summa hujus tituli, £130 15 10

Theſaurario Anglie, baronibus ac alijs officiarijs  
& miniſtris de Scaccario domini regis.

Thôme duci Norff. — Domino theſaurario Anglie, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	365	0	0
Willelmo Hody milit. — Capitali baroni in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	100	0	0
Barthō. Weſteby — Secundar. baroni in Scac- cario, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	46	13	4
Willelmo Bollyng. — Tercio baroni in Scac- cario, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	46	13	4
Johanni Aleyn — 4to baroni in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	46	13	4
Thome Lovell milit. — Cancellar. regis in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	26	13	4
Roberto Blagge — Remem. ex parte regis in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	55	17	4
Edmundo Denny — Remem. ex parte the- ſaur. regis in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum -	64	2	6
Thome Darnalle — Clerico magni rotuli in Saccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	47	19	7
Riegnaldo Fillole — Contra rotulatori magni rotuli in Saccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	13	14	7
Quinque auditoribus in Scaccario, cuilibet eorum ad 10l. per annum, in toto per ann.	50	0	0
Edmundo Wylley — Oppoſitori forinſeco in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	16	13	4
Willelmo Atwode — Clerico extractarum in Scaccario, de feodo ſuo, per annum	15	0	0
	Roberto		



	£.	s.	d.		
Roberto Bristolle — Clerico ad placita in Scaccario, de feodo suo, per annum	5	0	0		
Ricardo Blacwall — Marefcallo in Scaccario, de feodo suo, per annum	5	0	0		
Thome Sacheverell — Summonitori in Scaccario, de feodo suo, per annum	4	0	0		
Willelmo Fermer — Clerico ad tall. jungend. in Scaccario, de feodo suo, per annum	5	0	0		
Johanni Newporte — Alteri clerico ad tall. jungend. in Scaccario, de feodo suo, per annum	5	0	0		
Johanni Majer & Johann Copwood	}	Clericis fecundar. ex parte remem. regis in Scaccario, de feodis suis cuilibet eorum, ad 4l. per annum	8	0	0
Johanni Castell & Johann Dodde		Clericis fecundarijs ex parte rem. thef. de feodis suis inter fe, per annum	9	0	0
Thome Caundifshe & Johann Pette	}	Clericis fecundar. sub clerico magni rotuli in Scaccario cuilibet eorum, ad 5l. per ann. in toto inter fe	10	0	0
Hostiario de Scaccario — Pro brevibus regis portand. ad divers. loca Anglie, pro feodis dietis suis, ac pro cera & alijs necessarijs per ipsos empt. & provif. per annum		32	14	0	

Summa hujus tituli, £979 14 3½

Camerarijs, subthesaurarijs, & alijs officiarijs & ministris de recepta Scaccarij regis.

Sampfoni Norton mil. — Unicamerar. recepte Scaccarij regis, de feodo suo, per annum	52	3	4
Johanni Cutte mil. — Subthes. Anglie, de feodo suo, per annum	173	6	8
Johanni Daunce — Uni numeratorum recepte, de feodo suo, per annum	31	13	4
Johanni			

	£.	s.	d.
Johanni Hafilwode — Alteri numeratorum recepte, de feodo suo, per annum	31	13	4
Johanni Lewis — De feodo suo, per annum	28	6	8
Roberto Blacwall — De feodo suo, per annum	17	10	0
Johanni Milletti — De feodo suo, per annum	10	0	0
Hugoni Nayler — De feodo suo, per annum	10	0	0
Ricardo Barley — De feodo suo, per annum	6	0	0
Thome Goldeſburgh — De feodo suo, per annum	6	0	0
Hugoni Denys — Hoſtiar. de receptis pro feodis dietis ſuis, cera, & alijs neceſſarijs per ipſum empt. & proviſ. per annum	26	4	0½
Henrico Pemberton — De feodo ſuo, per ann.	5	0	0
Willelmo Gilbert — Portatori bage cum ro- tulis & alijs mémorandis, de feodo ſuo, per annum	6	6	8
Eidem Willelmo — Super proviſione perga- meni pro officio theſ. & camerar. per annum	4	0	0
Quatuor nuncijs de recepta — Pro vadijs cu- juſlibet eorum, ad 4½d. per diem inter ſe, in toto per annum	27	7	6

Summa hujus tituli, £ 435 11 6½

Summa totalis de omnibus & ſin-  
gulis feodis & annuitatibus ſu-  
pradiſtis ſolutis ad receptam  
ſcaccarij illuſtriſſimi domini  
Henrici nuper regis Anglie ſep-  
timi, pro uno anno integro finito  
ad feſtum ſancti Michaelis Ar-  
changelī anno 24to predicti  
nuper regis

£ 4,286 1 6½

Totalis ſoluc. in promptis denarijs &  
aſſignac. in talijs ad receptam pre-  
dictam per mandatum dicti illuſ-  
triſſimi nuper regis ſuper expenſis  
hoſpicij ſui per tempus predictum

12,759 9 11

Totalis ſoluc. in promptis denarijs &  
aſſign. talijs ad receptam predictam  
per mandatum dicti illuſtriſſimi

nuper

	£.	s.	d.
nuper regis super expensis & provisione garderobe sue per tempus supradictum			
	1,715	19	11
Totalis assignac. in talijs ad receptam predictam per mandatum dicti illustrissimi nuper regis pro expensis ambassatorum per tempus predictum	2,000	0	0
Totalis assignac. in talijs ad receptam predictam per mandatum dicti illustrissimi nuper regis pro manutentione & salva custodia Este & Middlemarch. versus Scociam pro expensis ducis Ebor. per tempus predictum	1,000	0	0
Totalis assignac. in talijs ad receptam predictam per mandatum dicti illustrissimi nuper regis & per eundem nuper regem ratione divers. forisfactur. servientibus suis dat nomine regardi per tempus predictum	403	6	8
Totalis assignac. in talijs ad receptam predictam per mandatum dicti illustrissimi nuper regis pro expensis operationum suarum per tempus supradictum	333	6	8
Summa totalis omnium & singulorum solucionum & assignacionum predict. per illustrissimum principem famose memorie dominum Henricum nuper regem Anglie Septimum pro diversis & separabilibus causis diversis personis conc. a festo sancti Michis Archangeli anno regni regie sue majestatis 23to usque festum sancti Michis Archi. proxime sequentem anno 24to. ejusdem nuper regis pro uno anno integro	£ 22,498	4	8½



## NUMBER V.

*Extracts from a MS. Book in the Remembrancer's Office, almost every Page signed by K. Henry VII.*

13th Hen. VII.

ITEM, to a woman for three apples, 12d.

Item, for two pair of bellows, 10d.

Item, for the King's losse at tennis, 12d.

Item, for losse of balls there, 3d.

N. B. The King's Sunday's offering seems constantly to have been, 6s. 8d.

To the preacher of the day, 20s.

Item, for three sackbuthes wages, 6 li.

Item, for three stryngmynstrels wages, 5 li.

Item, for offering St. George's day, 30s.

John Send. nonick Rebeck, 40s. per month.

Item, for the feryboate of Rochester, 53s. 4d.

14th Hen. VII.

Item, a rewarde given for apples by Thomas Foteman homeward, 20d.

Item, to a strange taberer, in reward, 66s. 8d.

Item, to a strange tumbler, in reward, 20s.

Item, for heling of a feke maid, 6s. 8d.—

N. B. This charge occurs frequently, and was perhaps the piece of gold given by the King in touching for the evil. — Q. If there was any such piece of coin?

20th July. Item, to the mayor of Rochester towards the bridge there, 100s.

Item, for a stryngmynstrell for one moneth's wages of August last passed, 15s.

Item, for finding three hares, 6s. 8d. — N. B.

This occurs frequently.

Item, to a piper at Huntingdon, 2s.

Item, for apples presented by a woman, 4d.

Item, for breaking of hegges at Wiscombe, 20d.

Item, to my Lord Prince's organ-player for a qrt. wages ending at Michell., 10s.

Item, for three dozen of leder gloves, 12s.

Item, to the yeoman of the King's chamber for their months wages of November last passed, 67l. 8s. 8d.

Item, for the wages of the seke yeomen, 60s.

Item, to a tumbuler at my Lord Bathe's, 20s.

Item, to the pleyers of London, in reward, 10s.

Item, to the tabouretts and a tumbuler, 20s.

Item, to my Lord Dudley's servant for bringing up a money-maker, 13s. 4d.

Item, to a Scotch fole, in reward, 13s. 4d.

Item, to Sir Thomas Brandon for a horse, 4l.

Item, for another horse, 4l.

Item, for a third horse, 66s. 8d.

Item, to a Ducheman for a cage, 4l.

Item, to Master Barnard the blind poëte, 100s.

To William Est for digging of the conduyt at Wodestock, p lis. 20l.

To the abbot of Reading for lede bought for Wodestock, 16l.

For the carriage of the same, 18s.

Item, to Jakes Haute for the conduyt at Wodestock upon a bill, 10l. 12s. 10d.

Item, to a man and woman for strawburyes, 8s. 4d.

Item, to the Bishop of Bangor's cheefes at Lantony, 6s. 8d. — N. B. This frequently.

Item, for a woman for a red roffe, 2s.

For the hyre of a cart from London to Wodestock, 10s.

*Extracts from a MS. in the Remembrancer's Office.*

9th Hen. VII.

Item, to Robert Forst for appaules and cakes, 6s. 8d.

Item, to Cart for writing of a booke, 6s. 8d.

Item, to one that presented two cakes and a cheefe, 13s. 4d.

Item, to Sir Robert Curson's servent for an horse, 40s.

Item, to Danyell riding to Shene and Thistleworth, 2s.

Item,

- Item, for a pair of trussling cofres boughte, 10s.  
 10th Dec. Item, to a fellow with a berde, a spye, in reward, 20s.  
 Item, to two monkes, speyes, in reward, 40s.  
 Item, payed for two pleyes in the hall, 26s. 8d.  
 Item, to the King's pleyers, for a rewarde, 100s.  
 Item, to him that brought the pnofticacon, 6s. 8d.  
 Item, to the King to play at cardes, 100s.  
 Item, to John Ibye, a spye, in reward, 13s. 4d.  
 Item, to one who brought the King a lyon, 53s. 4d.  
 Item, to a spye that dwelleth in the west countrey, 20s.  
 For the King at tables, chefs, glassies, &c. 56s. 8d.  
 Item, to the players that begged by the way, 6s. 8d.  
 Item, to a littell feloo of Shaftesburye, 20s.  
 Item, to Pechie the sole, in rewarde, 6s. 8d.  
 Item, lost to my Lord Moring at buttes, 6s. 3d.  
 Item, to Afshbyby for writing of a boke, 3s. 4d.  
 8th June. Item, to Sir Edward Boroughe which the King lost at buttes with his crossebowe, 13s. 4d.  
 10th. Item, to a Spanyarde that played the sole, 40s.  
 29th July. Item, to a woman that broke an heggeze by the way, 12d.  
 5th Aug<sup>st</sup>. Item, to Diego, the Spanish sole, in reward, 20s.  
 2d Octo<sup>r</sup>. Item, to the shippes boates that brought the King's grace to and fro the ship the Swan, 40s.  
 Item, to the mariners of the same Swan, 6l. 13s. 4d.  
 Item, to the mynstrells that played therein, 13s. 4d.  
 Item, to Dego, the Spaynysh foole, in rewarde, 6s. 8d.  
 Item, to a Scot, an espye, in reward, 40s.  
 Item, to one that presented the King with a mule, 20s.  
 Item, to one that bought a lamprey, in reward, 4s.



Item, to Harry Poyning, the King's godson, in reward, 20s.

Item, to the sole the Duk of Lancastre.

Item, to finding one hare, 3s. 4d.

25th May. Item, to Pudefay piper in the bagpipes, 6s. 8d.

N. B. The several items are not following each other, but copied from various places in the book.

T. ASTLE.

THE END OF THE APPENDIX.

# GENERAL INDEX.

---

---

\* \* The Roman Numerals refer to the Volumes, and the Figures to the Page.

---

---

## A.

**ABARIS**, the Hyperborean philosopher, fabulous account of, ii. 70, 71.

**Abbeys**, when exempt from jurisdiction, v. 335—337. See *Monasteries*.

**Aberdeen**, college founded at, xii. 253, 254.

**Academies**. See *Seminaries*.

**Acca**, Bishop of Hexham, notice of, iv. 31.

**Acon**, besieged and taken by Richard I., v. 199, 200.

**Address**, modes of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 318—320. Of the Anglo-Saxons, Welsh, and Danes, rude and unpolished, 343, 344.

**Adrian IV.**, Pope, grants Ireland to Henry II. v. 337. See *Break-spear*, Nicholas.

**Adrian**, the Emperor, rampart of, between South Britain and Caledonia, i. 80. ii. 472, 473.

**Adultery**, how punished by the Anglo-Saxon laws, iii. 420. And by the ancient Germans, iv. 336.

**Æbude**, islands, singular constitution of, i. 311, 312.

**Ælfric**, Archbishop of Canterbury, homilies of, iii. 286, 287. Canons of, 287—289, 290. Death of, 290.

**Ætius**, why unable to assist the Britons, i. 130.

**Agincourt**, battle of, ix. 46—52.

**Agricola**, Julius, governor of Britain, i. 62. Campaigns of, against the Britons, 62—72. Battle between the Romans and Caledonians, 74. Who are totally defeated, 76. Agricola recalled, 77. Forts erected by him, ii. 470, 471.

**Agriculture**, state of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 102, 103. Manures used by them, 104. Agricultural implements and practices, 105, 106. Their agriculture improved by the Romans, 106—108. Gradual progress of, 110—112. State of agriculture among the Britons at the arrival of the Saxons, iv. 100—102. Among the English, 103—109. Practices of the Anglo-Saxon husbandmen, 109, 110. State of agri-

- culture in England from 1066. to 1216., vi. 173, 174. Improvements made in it by the clergy, 174, 175. Implements of husbandry, 175, 176. Operations of husbandry, 176, 177. State of agriculture in Scotland in the same period, 178. English agriculture-not materially improved in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 264. Its operations, however, better performed than in former periods, 267, 268. Treatises on, written in Latin, 270, 271. Wretched state of agricultural labourers in England in the 15th century, x. 170, 171. Changes in agriculture, 171, 172. Complaints against, 172, 173. Wretched state of agriculture in Scotland, 175, 176. Exchanged for pasturage in the 16th century, xii. 258, 259. Consequences thereof, 260, 261. General state of agriculture in England, 262. And in Scotland, 264—266.
- Aids*, on what occasions paid, in feudal times, vi. 8.
- Aidan*, King of Scotland, brief account of, iii. 19, 20.
- Albany*, Duke of, declared Regent of Scotland, ix. 293. His death and character, 300, 301.
- , family of, destruction of, by James I. ix. 312.
- , Alexander Duke of, brother to James II., escapes to France, ix. 385. Marries advantageously, *ib.* His nefarious treaties with Edward IV. 388, 389. His greatness, 393, 394. Infamous treaty with Edward IV. 395—397. Escapes into England, 397. Is defeated at the battle of Lochmaben, 399. His death, 400.
- , John Duke of, chosen Regent of Scotland, xi. 445. Arrives there from France, 447. Convenes a parliament, 448. Executes the laws, 449. Is deceived, 450, 451. A conspiracy against him, 451. Which is detected and frustrated, 452, 453. Rebellion against him, 453, 454. Truce, 455. Animosity of the Queen Regent against him, 456. His propositions, 457. Executes certain offenders, 458. Goes to France, 459. His precautions against disorders, 460. Frustrated, 462. Disorders in consequence of his absence, 464—466. Arrives in Edinburgh, 467. Breaks the English party, 468. Is joined by the Queen-dowager, 469. Prepares for war against the English, 471, 472. Expedition into England, 473. Goes to France and returns with auxiliary forces, 474. Expedition into England, 475. Productive of no advantages to Scotland, 476. Leaves Scotland, 476, 477.
- Alchymy* much studied in England in the 13th century, viii. 203, 204. State of, in the 15th century, x. 126—128.
- Alcuinus*, life of, iv. 33, *et seq.* Letter of, to Charlemagne, 36—40.
- Alderman*, or Anglo-Saxon earl, power and privileges of, iii. 342, 343.
- Assessors to, 345, 346.
- Aldhelm*, literary life and character of, iv. 10—12.
- Alexander the Fierce*, King of Scotland, reign and character of, v. 116.
- Alexander II.* King of Scotland, reign of, v. 267—269. Disputes between him, and Thurstan Archbishop of York, 331. And with Eadmerus, Bishop of St. Andrews, 331, 332. A benefactor to the church of Scotland, 333, 334. Concludes peace with England, vii. 57. Disputes with Henry II., 58. A quarrel prevented, *ib.* Death and character, 59.
- Alexander III.* crowned king of Scotland, vii. 59. Marries the daughter of Henry III., 60. Civil broils, terminated by Henry's interference,



- 60, 61. Visits the English court, 62. Broils renewed and peace restored, 62, 63. Defeats the Norwegian invasion, 64. Assists Henry III. against his revolted barons, 64. Western isles ceded to him, 64. Great tranquillity of his reign, 65. Marries again, 121. Death and character, 121, 122.
- Alfred the Great*; accession of, to the throne, iii. 70. Wars of, with the Danes, 70—72. Forced to relinquish his dominions in the disguise of a peasant, 73, 74. Anecdote of him during his concealment, 74. Collects a few retainers in a secret retreat, 74. Enters the Danish camp, disguised as a harper, 75. iv. 180. Collects an army and defeats them, iii. 75, 76. Humane treatment of them, 76. Defeats Hastings the Dane, 77—79. Death of Alfred, 79, 80. Ecclesiastical laws of, 251, 252. Monasteries rebuilt by him, 252, 253. Literary history of Alfred, iv. 53—55. Invited many learned men to his court, 55, 56. Account of his works, 57, 58. Revival of learning in consequence of his labours, 65. The university of Oxford founded by Alfred, 60. Naval power and foreign trade of England promoted by him, 209. Naval history of his reign, 210, 211. Encouraged voyages of discovery, 212. His discoveries in the east, 218—220. Improved the art of ship-building, 220—222. Greatly increased the naval power of England, 223.
- Alliterative Poetry*, English, of the 14th century, viii. 309.
- Alphabet*, Irish, antiquity of, ii. 59, 60.
- Alpine*, King of Scotland, wars of, with the Picts, iii. 82, 83. Defeated and put to death by them, 84.
- Ambrosius*, slain by the West-Saxons, iii. 8.
- Amerciaments* arbitrarily imposed by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 38.
- Amusements*. See *Diversions*.
- Anatomy* of the Druids, account of, ii. 42—44.
- Ancalites*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 249, 250.
- Angles*, one of the nations from whom the English are descended, account of, iii. 305.
- Anglo-Saxons* neglected maritime affairs, iv. 194—196. Persons of, described, 292—294. Their longevity, 294. Genius, 295. Unfavourably portrayed by their countrymen, 296—298. Their piety tinged with superstition, 298. Their fondness for the monastic life, 299, 300—302. Fond of Pilgrimages, 302—304. Their great veneration for saints and relics, 304—306. Fondness for psalmody, 306, 307. Their love of liberty, 308. Valour, 309, 310. Their valour diminished, after their settlement in Britain, 311, 312. Social dispositions of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, 325, 326. Their credulity, 327—330. Curiosity, 330—334. Hospitality, 334. Chastity and conjugal fidelity, 335, 336. Fondness for their families and relations, 337. The vices of the Anglo-Saxons, 338—342. Remarkable customs of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, 343. Rude and unpolished in their address, 343, 344. Respectful behaviour to the fair sex, 345—347. Marriage ceremonies, 348—350. Mothers nursed their own children, 351. Names and surnames, *ib.* Trial of their children's courage, 352. Methods of education, 353, 354. Rites of sepulture, 354—357. Customs in war, 357, 358. Method of making knights, 359. War song, 360. Re-

- tinues of the great, *ib.* Chariots of their queens, 361. The drefs of the Anglo-Saxons, 376. Their fondnefs for the warm bath, 378. Vain of fine and long hair, 378, 379, 380. Their beards, 381. Different articles of their drefs, 383—386. Distinctions between the drefses of the sexes, 386, 387. Ornaments of gold worn by them, 387. Furs, 388. Diet, 389, 393—397. Diversions, 397—404.
- Anguinum*, or serpent egg of the Druids, marvellous account of, ii. 49, 50.
- Angus*, Douglas, Earl of, marries the Queen-regent of Scotland, xi. 443. Returns to Scotland, 480. The Queen's complaint againft him, 484. Is invested with the custody of James V.'s perfon, 485. Retains the adminiftration, 486, 487. Is fixed in his power, 488. Battle of Melrofs, 489, 490. Is divorced from the Queen, 490. Unites with the Earl of Arran, 492. Battle of Linlithgow bridge, 492, 493. Tranquillity reftored, 495. The King efcape from Falkirk, 496. Angus attempts to prevent the meeting of parliament, 499. But is repulfed, *ib.* Condemned as a traitor and his eftates forfeited, 500. Treats with Henry VIII., *ib.* Retires with his friends into England, 501. Endeavours in vain to procure a reftoration to Scotland, 504.
- Anlaf* heads the Danifh pirates againft Athelftan, iii. 96. His ftratagem to obtain intelligence in Athelftan's camp, 97. iv. 180, 181. Is defeated, iii. 98.
- Anne of Cleves* contracted to Henry VIII., xi. 312. And married, 313. Henry difcontented with her, *ib.* A commiffion to try the marriage, 321, 322. Is divorced, 322, 323. The divorce confirmed by parliament, 324. Communicated to her, 325. Her conduct, in confequence thereof, *ib.*
- Anfelm*, Abbot of Beck, appointed archbifhop of Canterbury, v. 280. Breach between him and William II., 281—283. Leaves England, 284. His reception at Rome and tranfactions there, 285—287. Lives in exile during William's reign, 288, 289. Is recalled by Henry I., 290. Breach between him and Anfelm, 291. Who renders important fervices to the King, 292. Quarrel between them about inveftitures, 293—296. Anfelm goes to Rome by the King's defire, 296. Contents of the Pope's letter to him, 298. Decree of the papal confiftory in his favour and againft his King, 299. Remains abroad, 300, 301. Meeting between the King and Anfelm, 301, 302. Ambaffadors fent by both to Rome, 302. Invitation of the Englifh bifhops to Anfelm, 303. Anfelm returns to England, 304. The difpute compromifed, 305, 306. Quarrel between Anfelm and the Archbifhop elect of York, 307, 308. Death and character of Anfelm, 308, 309. Literary character of, vi. 128—130.
- Antoninus's Itinerary*, notice of, ii. 417. Its account of Britain, with remarks, 417—438.
- Antoninus Pius*, wall erected by, account of, ii. 474—477.
- Arch-Druid*, how elected, i. 139. The fupreme judge in all caufes of appeals, 306. Refidence of, 306, 307. Had the chief direction in matters of learning as well as of religion, 73.
- Archers*, Englifh, excellence of, x. 193, 194.
- Architecture*, ancient Britons, ignorance of, ii. 112, 113. Account of, among them, 114—117. Roman architecture in Britain, 118. Romans



- mans instructed the Britons in architecture, 119, 120. Architecture began to decline in the third century, 121. Was destroyed by the departure of the Romans, 122. State of, during the government of the Saxons, iv. 111. Among the Anglo-Saxons, 112. In Scotland, 113, 121. In Wales, 119, 120. Progress of, in England, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 180—183. Sacred architecture, 184, 185. Civil architecture, 186, 187. Military architecture, 188—191. Famous architects of this period, 191, 192. State of, from 1216. to 1399., viii. 271. Sacred architecture, *ib.* 272. Military architecture of the 15th century, x. 179, 180. Sacred architecture, 180—182. Civil architecture, 182. State of, in the 16th century, xii. 269. Sacred architecture, 269, 270. Civil architecture, 270—272. Military architecture, 273.
- Areteine*, Guido, invented the musical gamut, vi. 248.
- Arithmetic*, of the Druids, account of, ii. 30—32. Arabian, when introduced into Europe, 76, 77. How taught in the 11th century, 83. State of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 106, 107. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 192, 193.
- Aristotle*, supreme authority of, in the schools of the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 186. How obtained, 187. Pernicious learning, 188.
- Arles*, council of, i. 230, 231.
- Armies* of the ancient Britons, account of, ii. Their different kinds of troops, 144. Infantry and their arms, 144, 145. Cavalry, 145. Chariot-fighting, 146—152. Want of union, the great misfortune of the Britons, 152. Standards, &c. of, 153.
- of the Anglo-Saxons, very numerous and why, iv. 143. Constitution of, 144. How governed 143. Manner of drawing them up, and engaging, 144—146.
- of the Anglo-Normans, and in feudal times, vi. 201, 202. Their defensive armour, 203. Infantry, 203, 204. Mercenary troops, 204, 205. Military officers, 205, 206. Standards, 207. Order of battle, 208—210.
- of the English, how raised in the 15th century, x. 188—190. Soldiers, how paid, 190—192. Discipline, 192. Archers, 193. How levied in the 16th century, xii. 282, 285.
- of Scotland, in the 15th century, x. 194, 195.
- Arran*. See *Boyde*.
- Arras*, congress of, ix. 109.
- Arthur*, the British chieftain, notice of, iii. 9.
- , Prince, son of Henry VII. Born, xi. 10. Married to the Princess Catherine, 61. His death, 67.
- , Duke of Brittany, war with France, concerning his guardianship, v. 223. Is supplanted in the English throne by John, 228. Is delivered to John, and afterwards rescued from him, 231. His cause espoused by the King of France, 232. Is taken prisoner by John, 235. And murdered, 236, 237.
- Articuli Cleri*, statute of, viii. 49. Pleaded by the Bishop of Hereford, 50.
- Artillery*, used in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 210, 211. Of the 16th century, xii. 284.
- , field, of the 15th century, x. 198.



- Arts*, history of, in Britain, from the Roman invasion to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 97, *et seq.*
- , importance of, ii. 97. iv. 93. Division of arts into necessary and pleasing, ii. 98. Necessary arts, enumerated, 99—132. Secondary arts, what, 133—157. The pleasing arts, as ancient as the necessary, 158. Imitative arts, universal, 159. State of them among the ancient Britons, 160, *et seq.*
- , history of, in Britain, from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iv. 93, *et seq.* Decline of the arts in Britain accounted for, 94—96. State of the necessary arts in this period, 96—153. State of the fine arts, 154—189. History of, in Britain, from 1066. to 1216., vi. 171, *et seq.* State of the necessary arts in this period, 172—217. State of the pleasing arts, 218—254. History of the arts in Britain, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 263, *et seq.* State of the necessary arts, 263—293. Of the pleasing and fine arts, 294—318. Decline of, in the 15th century, x. 169. History of the necessary arts in Britain, from 1399. to 1485., 170—205. Of the fine and pleasing arts during the same period, 205—232. History of, in the 16th century, xii. 257, *et seq.* State of the necessary and useful arts, 257—287. Of the fine and pleasing arts, 288—301.
- Arundel*, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, convicted of treason and banished, vii. 355. viii. 78. Opposes the Lollards, 76, 77. Procures a law against them, x. 2. And causes several to be burnt, 3—20. Arundel both superstitious and cruel, 5. His ecclesiastical constitutions, 8. His death, 19.
- Askerw*, Mrs. Anne, persecution of, for heresy, xi. 105. Burnt, 106, 107.
- Affer*, life of, iv. 56.
- Assize of arms*, a regulation of Henry II., so called, nature of, v. 169.
- Astrology*, state of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 109, 110—112. From 1216. to 1399, viii. 196.
- Astronomy* of the Druids, account of, ii. 13—16. Mode of computing time, 16—21. Other particulars of Druidical astronomy, 21—23. Their astronomy of the stars, 23—26. Constellations, and the zodiac, 26, 27. Mundane system of the Druids, 27—29. Their astronomical instruments, 29, 30. State of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 108, 109. From 1216. to 1399, viii. 194—196.
- Athelard*, Archbishop of Canterbury, journey of, to Rome, lii. 239. Convenes a council at Cloveshoos, 240.
- Athelstan*, son of Edward the Elder, accession of, iii. 94. Makes Sithric King of Northumberland, 94. Wars against Sithric's sons, 95. Invades Scotland, 96. England invaded by the Scots, *ib.* Defeats the confederates, 97. Convenes a council at Gratanlea, 259, 260. Death of Athelstan, 98.
- Athletic exercises* of the ancient Britons, ii. 371—373.
- Attack and Defence*. See *Fortification*.
- Attacotti*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 274, 275.
- Attendance*, personal, in the king's court, a feudal service, vi. 13.
- Attornies*, in the 15th century, number of limited, x. 74.
- Attrebatii*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 248, 249. ii. 413.

- Auncil weight*, prohibited, x. 26, 27.  
*Auricular confession*, when introduced, iii. 208.  
*Austin*, St., sent to England as a missionary by Pope Gregory, iii. 191. Circumstances that paved the way for the introduction of Christianity, 189—191. His arrival, and success, 191, 192. Consecrated Archbishop of the English, 193. New missionaries sent to him, *ib.* His attempts to subjugate the British churches to his authority, 195. Consecrates bishops, and dies, 196. Is succeeded by Laurentius, 197.  
*Avesbury*, Robert de, the historian, notice of, viii. 241.

## B.

- BACON*, Friar Roger, great sums of money spent by, in making experiments, viii. 179. Various mathematical instruments made by him, 197, 198. His great proficiency in optics, 198, 199. In mechanics, 200, 201. In chymistry, 201, 202. Discovered the art of making gunpowder, 204, 205. Account of his birth and education, 216. Manner in which he studied, 217. His sufferings from the bigotry of ignorant monks, 218. Summary of his discoveries, 219. His writings, 220.  
*Badby*, Thomas, burnt for heresy, x. 8—10.  
*Bainham*, James, burnt for heresy, xii. 33.  
*Baldwin*, Bishop of Worcester, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, v. 406. Dispute between him and the monks of Canterbury, 408—411. The monks victorious, 412. The dispute terminated, 422. Baldwin goes to the Holy Land and dies there, 423, 424.  
*Baliol*, John, one of the competitors for the crown of Scotland, vii. 87. Edward I. determines in his favour, 88. Severe treatment of, by Edward, 88, 89. And indignity offered to him, 89, 90. Defeated by Edward I., to whom he surrenders, 95, 96. Dies in France, 97.  
*Baliol*, Edward, and some English barons invade Scotland, vii. 192, 193. Their successes, 193, 194. Baliol subjects the kingdom of Scotland to Edward III. 195. Is expelled, *ib.* The Scots defeated at Hallidon Hill, 196. Baliol is restored, 197, 198. Cessions made by him to Edward, 198. Is unpopular, 199. Attempt made to expel him, *ib.* Is supported by Edward, 199, 200. Baliol and Edward invade Scotland, 200, 201. Resigns the crown of Scotland to Edward III., 252.  
*Ball*, John, heads an insurrection against Richard II., vii. 307.  
*Banbury*, battle of, ix. 199.  
*Bane*, James, Bishop of St. Andrews, notice of, viii. 81, 82.  
*Bannockburn*, battle of, vii. 142, 143.  
*Barber-surgeons*, reformed by Archbishop Chicheley, x. 21.  
*Barbour*, John, a Scottish poet, account of, viii. 249, 250. Character of his Poetry, with extracts, 310, 311.  
*Bards*, of the ancient Britons, account of, i. 140. ii. 186—188. Were very numerous, 188, 189. Of the Anglo-Saxons, highly respected, iv. 164. Astonishing powers of their poetry, 165, 166. Were poets of nature, not of art, 166, 167. Account of some of them, 168—171.  
*Barnet*, battle of, ix. 218—220.  
*Barons*, English, discontents of, against King John, v. 244. Many of them



- them desert him, 246. Civil war between them and John, 252—254. Are excommunicated by the Pope, 256. Progress of the war, 256, 257. The barons offer the crown to Louis, Prince of France, 257. Further operations of the war, 258—260. Privileges granted to, by the Great Charter, vi. 68—74. Refuse to deliver up the royal castles to Henry III., vii. 6. And are reduced, *ib.* Discontents of the great barons, 11, 12. A supreme council of twenty-four chosen by a parliament at Oxford, 25, 26. They violate the constitution, 27. The twenty-four barons become unpopular, 29. Henry empowered by parliament to resume his authority out of their hands, 31. Dispute between Henry and the barons compromised, 32, 33. Pacification, 33, 34. Another pacification, 35. Disputes between Henry and the barons referred to the King of France, 36. War between Henry and the barons, 36, 37. Battle of Lewes, and the barons victorious, 38, 39. Inquisition into their titles by Edward I., 70. Bold reply of one of them, *ib.* Discontented with Edward II.'s partiality for Gavaston, 130. Effect a change in the constitution, and invest the government in a council of twelve *ordainers*, viii. 131. Seize and execute Gavaston, vii. 136. Peace between Edward and the confederate barons, 136. Are reconciled to the King, 138. Confederate against the Spenfers, 153. Civil war between the barons and Edward, 155. Are defeated by Edward II., 156. Boldly oppose the impositions of Rome, viii. 7—9. Remonstrate against the synod of Merton, 13. Their power gradually destroyed, xii. 147.
- Barra*, Luke de, cruel punishment of, for satirizing Henry I., vi. 233.
- Barry*. See *Giraldus Cambrensis*.
- Barton*, Jane, the holy maid of Kent, pretended prophecies of, xi. 270. Executed for treason, *ib.*
- Basil*, council of, its proceedings, x. 27, 28. Contest between it and Pope Eugenius, iv. 30.
- Baskets*, anciently exported from Britain, ii. 226.
- Battle*, order of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 208—210.
- Battles*, great number of, fought in the 9th century, iv. 148, 149. —, accounts of. See under the names of the places where they were respectively fought.
- Bear-bating*, an amusement of the 16th century, xii. 384.
- Beaton*, James, Archbishop of St. Andrews, xii. 119. Persecutes heresy, 119—123. Death of, 124. —, Cardinal, David, nephew of the above, elected Archbishop of St. Andrews, xii. 124. Cruel persecution of heresy, 124—129. Procures himself to be appointed Regent, 130. But loses his power, 130, 131. Which he recovers, 132. His cruel persecutions, 133—140. Assassinated, 143. His character, 143, 144.
- Beau*, of the 14th century described, viii. 401. Of the 15th century, dress of, x. 309.
- Becket*. See Thomas à.
- Bede*, the venerable, life of, iv. 25—30. Decline of learning after his death, 30, 31. Catalogue (Latin and English) of his works, 421—431.
- Bedford*, John, Duke of, brother to Henry V., left Regent of the kingdom, ix. 42. Appointed Protector, on Henry V.'s death, 76. His letter



- letter to Henry VI., concerning Joan of Arc, 95. Misunderstanding between him and the Duke of Burgundy, 107. His death, 111.
- Belge*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 245—247. ii. 414.
- Benedict*, Abbot of Peterborough, the historian, character of, vi. 143, 144.
- Berengaria*, Princess of Navarre, follows Richard I. to Messina, v. 197. Is married to him at Cyprus, 198.
- Berwick*, recovered from the English by the Scotch, vii. 149. Besieged in vain by the English, 150, 151. Taken by the Scots, and retaken by Edward III., 251. Surprized by the Scots in the reign of Richard II. and recovered, 300, 301.
- Besiality* of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 348, and *notes*.
- Bible*, English, when first translated, xii. 59. 74—77. And followed by other devotional books, 77, 78. The Bible ordered to be kept in churches, 93. Revision of, referred to the Universities, 95. Allowed to certain persons only, 96.
- Bibroci*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 247, 248.
- Bills of exchange*, when first introduced, viii. 343, 344.
- Birth* of children, how managed by the ancient Britons, ii. 326.
- Biscop*, Benedict, restores masonry in England, iv. 114, 115. Introduces the art of glass-making, 116. Imported great numbers of paintings, 157, 158.
- Bishops*, British, at the council of Arles, i. 217. New bishopricks erected, iii. 208—211. Number of English bishops in the 8th century, 223. Anglo-Saxon bishops deposed on various pretences, and Normans put in their fees, v. 272, 273. New bishopricks erected by Henry VIII., xii. 88.
- Blackater*, Walter, Archbishop of Glasgow, persecutes the Lollards, xii. 109.
- Blackness*, pacification of, ix. 410, 411. Copy thereof, x. 327, 328.
- Bladud*, King, fabulous account of an university founded by, ii. 73, 74.
- Bleaching linen*, art of, practised by the ancient Britons, ii. 131.
- Blois*, Peter of, literary life and character of, vi. 146—149. History of a medical case treated by him, 407—409.
- Blore-beath*, battle of, ix. 159.
- Boadicea*, Queen of the Britons, heroic conduct of, i. 54—56. Defeated by the Romans, 57.
- Boats* of the ancient Britons, account of, ii. 262—264.
- Boethius* or *Boyce*, Hector, account of, xii. 243, 244.
- Bogs*, and marshes of ancient Britain, ii. 285. Drained by the Romans, 286.
- Bohemians*, a croisade declared against, x. 26. Negotiations with them, 29.
- Boleyn*, Lady Anne, anecdotes of, xi. 211. Attracts the admiration of Henry VIII., 212. Is married by him, 259. And crowned, 262. Promoted the Reformation, 282. Is sent to the Tower, 283. Her behaviour, 284. Writes a pathetic letter to the King, 284. Means used to procure evidence against her, xi. 285. Her hard treatment, 285, 286. Divorced, 287. Beheaded, 290—292.

- Boniface*, Archbishop of Canterbury, election of, viii. 6. Extends the power of the church to the greatest height, 12. His death, 16.
- Boniface*, Archbishop of Mentz, letter of, to Cuthbert, Archbishop of Canterbury, iii. 223, 224. Literary character of, iv. 40, 41.
- Boniface VIII.* Pope, exactions of, viii. 38. Intolerable pride of, 39. His ambition, 40. His exactions opposed by an act of the English parliament, 41.
- Bonner* or *Bonar*, Edmund, Bishop of London, character of, xii. 91. His cruelty to heretics, 92.
- Books*, scarcity of, in the 7th century, iv. 20, 21. 81, 82. In the 15th century, x. 115, 116.
- Borders*, a sort of slaves, duties of, vi. 5.
- Borne*, Ralph de, Abbot of St. Austins, Canterbury, installation feast of, viii. 438, 439.
- Borfolde*, an Anglo-Saxon magistrate, power and jurisdiction of, iii. 333—336.
- Borthwick*, Sir John, condemned for heresy, but effects his escape, xii. 125, 126.
- Bosworth*, battle of, ix. 286.
- Botany* of the Druids, account of, ii. 46—48.
- Bothwell*, Lord, treaty of, with Henry VIII., xi. 380—382.
- Bottoner*, John, the historian, account of, x. 133.
- Boulogne* taken by Henry VIII., xi. 351. Attempts to retake it, fruitless, 353, 354.
- Bourbon*, Duke of, revolts from Francis I., xi. 163. His military operations in Italy, 193, 194. Is slain at the assault of Rome, 195. His troops take the Pope prisoner, 196.
- Boyde*, Robert, Lord, and Sir Alexander, seize James II. and carry him to Edinburgh, ix. 368—370. Procure an indemnity for their conduct in parliament, 371. Copy of the charter appointing him governor of the kingdom, and of the King's person, x. 326. Elevation of the Boydes, ix. 372. Thomas Boyde, Earl of Arran, sent to negotiate James's marriage with the Princess of Norway, 373. Decline and fall of the Boydes, 374—376. Earl of Arran flees to Denmark, 377, 378. Dies in obscurity, 379.
- Bradwardin*, Thomas, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 57. Death of, 58.
- Bramham Moor*, battle of, ix. 30, 31.
- Bravery* of the English. See *Valour*.
- Breakspear*, Nicholas, early life of, vi. 134, 135. Elected Pope, by the title of Adrian IV., 135, 136.
- Bribery*, frequent among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 339, 340. Bribes taken by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 37. Prevalent in courts of justice in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 383, 384.
- Brigantes*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 276—278. ii. 406—408.
- Brigtric*, King of Wessex, reign of, iii. 55, 56.
- Bristol*, a considerable trading place in the Anglo-Saxon times, iv. 238. And in the Anglo-Norman reigns, vi. 260, 261.
- Britain*, general description of, according to Ptolemy of Alexandria, ii. 378—395. Commentary thereon, 396—416. Antoninus's Itinerary of,



of, with remarks, 417—438. Map and description, according to the Notitia Imperii, 439—453. Map of, according to the Saxon chronicle, with the names of places, in alphabetical order, iv. 405—414. Divided into many small kingdoms when invaded by the Romans, i. 240. Description of these kingdoms, 241, 242, *et seq.* The Danmonii, 242, 243. ii. 415. Durotriges, i. 244. ii. 415. Belgæ, i. 245—247. ii. 414. Bibroci, i. 247, 248. Attrebatii, 248, 249. ii. 413. Anca-lites, i. 249, 250. Regni, 250, 251. ii. 414. Cantii, i. 252—254. ii. 413, 414. Trinobantes, i. 254—257. ii. 411. Cattivelauni, i. 257—259. ii. 410. Dobrini, i. 259—261. ii. 413. Iceni, i. 261—263. ii. 410, 411. Coritani, i. 263, 264. Cornavii, 265, 266. ii. 409, 410. Silures, i. 267—270. ii. 412. Demetæ, i. 270, 271. ii. 412. Or-dovices, i. 271—273. ii. 408. Cangi, i. 273, 274. Attacotti, 274, 275. Parifi, 275. ii. 408. Brigantes, i. 276—278. ii. 406—408. Otodini, i. 278, 279. ii. 405, 406. Gadeni, i. 279, 280. ii. 404, 405. Selgovæ, i. 281. ii. 403. Novantæ, i. 281, 282. ii. 402. Damnii, i. 282, 283. ii. 403, 404. Catycuclani, ii. 410. Mæatæ, i. 283. Countries beyond Antoninus's wall, 283. Epidii, 284. Ceronæ, 285. Carnonacæ, *ib.* Cornavii, *ib.* Mertæ, *ib.* Logi, *ib.* Cantæ, *ib.* Caledonii, 286. Texali, 287. Vacomagi, *ib.* Horesti, *ib.* Ven-nicontes, 288. Scots and Picts, 288—290. Populoufness of Britain, 290, 291. Divided into five provinces by the Romans, 346—349. Climate of Britain, 281—284. Face of the country covered with woods, 284. Bogs and marshes of, 285. Drained by the Romans, 286. Face of the country greatly altered after their departure, iv. 291, 292. Ancient history of Britain, fabulous, i. 1. Cæsar's motives for invading Britain, 2. Cæsar endeavours to get intelligence, 2, 3. Britons send ambassadors to Cæsar, 3. Cæsar embarks his infantry and arrives in Britain, 4. Lands his troops after a vigorous opposition, 4, 5. The Britons make their submissions, and obtain peace, 6, 7. Britons renew the war, 8. Actions between the Romans and Britons, 8—10. Cæsar makes peace with the Britons, and returns to Gaul, 10. Cæsar makes preparation for a second expedition into Britain, 11. Cæsar lands his army in Britain, 12. Two actions between the Romans and Britons 13, 14. Cassibelanus chosen generalissimo of the Britons, 15. Several actions between the Romans and Britons, 16. Defections among the Britons, 17. Cæsar passes the Thames, *ib.* Several British states make peace with Cæsar, 19. Capital of Cassibelanus taken, 20. The Britons make an unsuccessful attempt on the Roman camp, *ib.* Cassibelanus makes his peace with Cæsar, 21. Cæsar returns with his army into Gaul, 22. Remarks on Cæsar's two expeditions into Britain, 23. State of Britain after Cæsar's departure, 25. From A. A. C. 29. to A. D. 12. Augustus, 26—28. Tiberius, 28. Caligula, 28, 29. Claudius sends an army into Britain, 30. The Britons do not make proper preparations, 31. Several actions between the Britons and Romans, 32. A. Plautius retires beyond the Thames, 34. Claudius arrives in Britain, *ib.* Ostorius, governor of Britain, 36. And subdues the Iceni, 37. Quiets a sedition among the Brigantes, 38. War between the Romans and Silures, 38—40. Caractacus taken prisoner to Rome, 41—44. Aulus Didius governor of Britain, 45—47. Vermanianus governor of Britain, 47. Suetonius Paulinus subdues Anglesey, 48.



48. Revolt of the Britons, 49. Who destroy Camalodunum, 51. And take Verulamium and London, 52. Great army of the Britons, 54. Speeches of Boadicea and Suetonius, 55. Britons defeated, 56. Suetonius recalled, 57. Other governors of Britain, 59—61. Campaigns of Agricola against the Britons, 62—72. Preparations of the Caledonians, 72. Speech of Galgacus, 73. Battle between the Romans and Caledonians, 74—76. Agricola recalled, 77. His successors in the government of Britain, 78. Emperor Hadrian arrives in Britain, 78, 79. Different governors, 80—85. Albinus assumes the purple in Britain, 86. Arrival of the Emperor Severus, 87. Who builds his wall in Britain, 89. And dies there, 91. Carausius assumes the purple in Britain, 93. But is slain, 95. Constantius recovers Britain, 98. State of Britain from the reign of Constantine the Great to that of Constantius, 99—103. Severity of Constantius, 103, 104. Incurfions of the Scots, Picts, &c. 105—107. 115, 116. Theodosius, governor of Britain, 107. His wife government, 108—111. Maximus assumes the purple in Britain, 111. His expedition to the continent, 112. Romans withdraw, 119. Send a legion to assist the Britons, 120, 122. Effects of the departure of the Romans from Britain, 367. History of Britain from the final departure of the Romans, to the arrival of the Saxons, 124—128. The Britons apply in vain to the Romans for help, 129. Invite the Saxons into Britain, 130—133. History of Britain (civil and military) from the arrival of the Saxons, to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 1, *et seq.* Arrival of the Saxons, iii. 1. Saxons and Britons defeat the Scots and Picts, 2. Arrival of another army of Saxons, 2. The Saxons resolve to settle in Britain, 3. Various conduct of the Britons on this occasion, 4. War between the Saxons and Britons, *ib.* Arrival of another army of Saxons, 5. Progress of the war between the Saxons and Britons, 6. Kings of Kent, *ib.* Kingdom of Suffex founded by another army of Saxons, 7. Another army of Saxons arrive and found the kingdom of Wessex, 8. Ambrosius and Arthur command the Britons against Cerdic, 8, 9, 10. The kingdoms of the East Angles, East Saxons, and Mercians successively founded, 11. Kingdom of Northumberland founded, 12. The Heptarchy completed, 13. British states, 14. State of Britain at the commencement of the 7th century, 21. Civil and Military History of Britain, from the year 600. to the accession of Egbert, the first English monarch, 21, *et seq.* History of the several British states regulated by the chronology of the West-Saxons, 27. Peace for some years, 44. An universal peace, 46, 47. Civil and Military History of Britain, from the accession of Egbert to that of Edward the Elder, 61—90. From the accession of Ethelred the Unready, to the landing of William, Duke of Normandy, 116. See *Heptarchy, England, Scotland.*

*Britannia prima et secunda*, extent of the Roman provinces of, i. 348.

*Britons*, conquered, disarmed by the Romans, i. 360. Their youth impressed into the Roman service, 360, 361. Ancient Britons were almost naked, and painted their bodies, ii. 123. Were first clothed in skins, 125. Made several kinds of cloth, 127. Were acquainted with the art of dyeing cloth, 128. And of making, bleaching, and washing linen,

- linen, 129—131. Were acquainted with the arts of carpentry, of working metals, and of pottery, 133—140. Persons of the ancient Britons, 287. Greatly resembling those of the Gauls and Germans, 287, 288. Large, tall, and fair, 288. Strong, swift, patient of toil and hunger, 290. Poetical picture of an ancient Briton, 292. Genius of the ancient Britons, 292, 293. Their reigning passions, 293—295. Their courage and contempt of danger, 295, 296. Ferocity, 296, 297. Curiosity, credulity, rashness, and inconstancy, 297, 298. Their good dispositions and virtues, 298, 299, 300. Valour in war, 300—302. Hospitality, 302, 303. Chastity, 303—307. Conjugal fidelity, 207. Frugality, 308. Sincerity, *ib.* Social virtues, 309. Their vices, 310. Fondness for war, *ib.* Robbery, 311. Sloth, 311, 312, 313. Drunkenness, 313, 314, 315. Remarkable customs of the ancient Britons, 316. *et seq.* Their behaviour to the fair sex, 323. Ceremonies of marriage, 323—325. Business of their wives, 325. Birth and education of their children, 326—330. Customs of, in war, 330—332. Rites of Sepulture, 332—335. Their dress in general, 348. Their bed-clothes, 349. Britons fond of finery, 350. Manner of dressing their hair, 351. Change in dress by the Roman conquest, 352. Their diet, 353—359. Their drinks, 361—364. Manner of eating, 365. Diversions of the Britons, 366—375. Remarks on their circumstances, 375, 376. The people of Britain of two kinds, from the fifth to the tenth centuries, *iv.* 288, 289. See *Anglo-Saxons, English, Normans.* Account of their arts, &c. See *Arts, Corn, Commerce, Learning, Manners, &c.*
- Brittany**, dukedom of, succession to, disputed, *vii.* 221. Seized by John de Mountfort, 222. Who forms an alliance with Edward III. *ib.* Brittany adjudged to Charles de Blois, who takes Mountfort prisoner, 223. Dukedom of, awarded to John de Mountfort the son, 270. Annexed to France by Charles V., 302, 303. Expedition of the English into, 303. Change in the Duke of, 304. The English army returns home, 306. State of Brittany at the accession of Henry VII., *xi.* 20, 21. His crooked policy towards, 22—27. English auxiliaries sent there who do nothing, 23. Dukedom annexed to France by the marriage of Charles VIII. to the Duchess Anne, 29.
- , Francis II. Duke of, concludes a peace with Charles VIII. of France, *xi.* 21. His death, 22.
- , Anne, Dutchess of, married by proxy to Maximilian King of the Romans, *xi.* 24. Concludes a disadvantageous treaty with Henry VII. of England, *ib.* Is married by Charles VIII. King of France, 29.
- Bruce**, Robert, forms the design of mounting the throne of Scotland, *vii.* 111. Kills Comyn, Earl of Badenoch, 111, 112. Is crowned King at Scone, 112, 113. Misfortunes of Bruce and his friends, 113, 114. Appears and is forced to retire, 115, 116. Is excommunicated, 116. Defeats the English, 117. Reduces great part of Scotland, 131. His prudent management, 139. Defeats Edward II. and the English at the battle of Bannockburn, 140, 141. Fruitless expedition of, into Ireland, 146. Recovers Berwick, 149. His death, 192.
- , Edward, brother of Robert, expedition of, into Ireland, *vii.* 145.



- Bruce*, David, King of Scotland, defeated and taken prisoner by the English, vii. 239. Liberated, 292. Ransomed, 293. Other events of his reign, 294, 295. His marriage and death, 296. Character of, 296.
- Brunne*, Robert de, character of his metrical chronicle, viii. 303, 304.
- Buckingham*, Duke of, harangue the people in favour of the Duke of Gloucester's claim to the crown, ix. 262. Offers him the crown as a popular tender, 263. Heads an insurrection against Richard III., 272. Is obliged to conceal himself, 273. Taken prisoner and beheaded, 274.
- , Edward Stafford, Duke of, offends Wolfsey, xi. 128. Condemned and beheaded, 140, 141. His character, 141, 142.
- Burgh*. See *Hubert de Burgh*.
- Burgundy*, John, Duke of, makes an alliance with Henry V., ix. 54. Proceedings of his party in France, on the death of Charles VI., 57. The Armagnacs massacred at Paris, 61, 62. Deludes Henry VI., and is reconciled with the Dauphin, 65. Assassinated, 65, 66. Consequences of this assassination, 66, 67.
- , Philip, Duke of, procures the condemnation of the Dauphin for murdering his father, ix. 69. Treaty of marriage and alliance with the Duke of Bedford, protector of England, 80. Discontented with the English, 84. Misunderstanding between him and the Duke of Bedford, 107. Inclined to treat with France, 108. Peace between him and the King of France, 110. Consequences thereof, *ibid.* 111. Marries the sister of Edward IV., 196, 197.
- Burial*, rites of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 332—335. Among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 354—357.

## C.

- CABOT*, Sebastian, discovers Newfoundland, xii. 312, 313.
- Cade*, Jack, account of his insurrection, ix. 139—141. Murders the Lord Say and Seale, 141, 142. Driven out of London, 142. Put to death, *ibid.*
- Cadmon*, an Anglo-Saxon poet, account of, iv. 168—169.
- Caer Leon*, (*Isca Silurum*,) flourishing state of, in the time of the Romans, i. 268, 269.
- Cæsar*, Julius, motives of, for invading Britain, i. 2. Endeavours to get intelligence, 2, 3. Arrives in Britain, 4—6. Makes peace with the Britons, 7. War renewed between him and the Britons, 8—10. Peace restored, 10. Second expedition of, to Britain, 12. Secures his fleet, 15. Passes the Thames and defeats the Britons, 17, 18. With whom he makes peace, 19—21. Returns with his army into Gaul, 22. Remarks of several authors on his expeditions into Britain, 22—24. Cæsar made no changes in the government of Britain, 338. Number of his army in Britain, ii. 458.
- Galais* besieged by Edward III., vii. 239. Surrenders, 240—242. Plot to betray it, discovered and defeated, 244, 245.
- Calcuth*, councils of, iii. 232. Canons passed there, 233.
- Caledonii*, situation of, i. 286.



- Caledonians*, cookery of, ii. 360. See *Scotland*.
- Caligula*, pretended expedition of, to Britain, i. 29.
- Camalodunum*, destroyed by the Britons, i. 51, 52.
- Cambridge University*, founded by Edward the Elder, iv. 69—71. Destroyed by the Danes, 77. History of the University from 1066. to 1216., vi. 158—160. College founded there in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 256. Peter-House, Michael College, University Hall, and King's Hall, 256. Clare and Pembroke Halls, 257. Benet College, Trinity and Gonvil Halls, 258. King's College, x. 151, 152. Plan of its chapel, 181, 182. Queen's College, 152. Catherine Hall, *ib.* Public Schools, 154. Jesus, Christ's, and St. John's Colleges founded, xii. 251. Maudlin College, 252. Trinity College, *ib.*
- Campegius*, Cardinal, commissioned with Wolsey, to try the legality of Henry VIII.'s marriage with Queen Catherine, xi. 217, 218. Arrives in England, 219. Refuses to part with the decretal bull, 220. The Cardinals wait on the Queen, 222. And hold their court, 227, 228. Deceit of the Pope and Cardinals, 229, 230. The King's cause avocated to Rome, 230.
- Cangi*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 273, 274.
- Cannon*, when first used, viii. 291. Made in England, 292. Hand-cannon, *ib.* Of the 15th century, account of, x. 195, 196. Ship guns, 197, 198.
- Cannon-balls*, made of stone, in the 15th century, x. 197.
- Canon Law*, state of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 102, 103. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 189, 190.
- Canons*, married. See *Clergy*.
- Canons of the Northumbrian priests*, iii. 266. Enacted by different Councils. See *Councils*.
- , enacted by Edgar the Peaceable, iii. 276—278.
- Canta*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of. i. 285.
- Canterbury*, disputes about electing an Archbishop of, on Becket's death, v. 396, 397. At Baldwin's death, 424—426. At the death of Hubert, 435—438. Of Langton, viii. 3. Of Edmund, 5. Disputes concerning the primacy. See *Primacy*.
- Cantii*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 252—254. ii. 413, 414.
- Canute*, King of Denmark, wages war with the English, iii. 124—126. Pacification between him and King Edmund, 126. Is crowned King of England, 127. Performs some meritorious acts of justice, 128. Marries Queen Emma, widow of Ethelred, 129. Voyage into Denmark, and return into England, 130. Conquers Norway, 131. Reproves the flattery of his courtiers, 131, 132. Journey to Rome, 132. Expedition to Cumberland, 132. Death, 133. Ecclesiastical laws of, 293, 294.
- Capitation tax*, imposed by Richard II., viii. 169. Rates payable by different classes, 169, 170.
- Caradacus*, brave efforts of, to liberate his country, i. 39. Carried prisoner to Rome, 41. His noble speech to the Emperor, 42, 43.
- Carausius* assumes the purple in Britain, i. 93. Slain, 95.
- Card-playing*, when introduced, x. 322. Price of, 323.

- Carlisle*, see of, founded, v. 318.
- Carnonaca*, kingdom of, situation of, i. 285.
- Carpentry*, art of, its state among the ancient Britons, ii. 133. Improved by the Romans, 134, 135.
- Carts of war*, used in Scotland in the 15th century, x. 196.
- Cassibelanus*, chosen generalissimo of the Britons, i. 15. Several actions between, and the Romans, 16. His capital taken, 19. Makes peace with Cæsar, 21.
- Castles*, Anglo-Saxon, how erected and defended, iv. 151, 152. In what manner attacked, 153.
- , Anglo-Norman, description of, vi. 189—191. How attacked and defended, 215—217. Their construction in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 274, 275.
- Catherine*, Princess of France, courted by Henry V., ix. 64. Married to him, 66. Her coronation, 67, 68. Her marriage after Henry V.'s decease, 113. And death, *ib.*
- , Princess of Arragon, married to Prince Arthur, son of Henry VII., xi. 61. On his death, is contracted to his brother Henry (afterwards Henry VIII.), 68. Scruples of Henry about the legality of his marriage, 204. Of the illegality of which he is convinced, 206. Two legates sent to England to try its validity, 219. They hold their court, 227, 228. The cause avocated to Rome, 230. Further steps taken by Henry VIII. 251—254. Inflexibility of Catherine, 254, 255, 263. Is divorced, 260. The Pope pronounces her marriage good, 265, 266. Her death, and last letter to Henry VIII., 278.
- Cattivelanni*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 257—259. ii. 416.
- Cattle*, anciently exported from Britain, ii. 223.
- Cavalry*, ancient British, account of, ii. 145, 146.
- Ceale-hythe*, council of, iii. 241—244.
- Ceorls*, rank of, in Britain, iii. 324. Their condition and privileges, 324, 325. Were rather interested spectators, than members, of the Wittenagemot, 372.
- Cerdic*, King of Wesssex, defeats the Britons, and extends his kingdom, vi. 8—11.
- Ceremonies*, certain, abolished by Henry VIII. xii. 104.
- Cerones*, kingdom of, situation of, i. 285.
- Chalk*, exported from Britain, ii. 220.
- Chancellor*, power of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 349.
- Chancery*, Court of, powers of, in the reign of Edward I., viii. 115. State of its practice in the 15th century, x. 74, 75.
- Character*, national, whence to be obtained, viii. 362—365.
- of the ancient Britons, delineated, ii. 293—315. Observations on it, 373—375. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 296—347. Of the Danes, 313—344. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 316—350.
- Chariot-fighting* of the ancient Britons, account of, ii. 146. Different kinds of war chariots, 147. i. 18. The Benna described, ii. 147. Petoritum, Currus, and Covinus, 148. Effedum and Rheda, 149. Great number of chariots, and great dexterity of their drivers, 150, 151. Chariot fighting continued long in Britain, 152.



*Chariots of the Anglo-Saxon Queens*, iv. 361.

*Charles*, Dauphin of France, son of John I., assumes the government on his father's captivity, vii. 260. His prudent conduct, 262. Rejects the peace concluded by his father, 263. Succeeds his father by the style of

*Charles V.*, vii. 270. France desolated by marauders, 271. Whom he endeavours to persuade to a croisade, 272. His perfidious conduct, 277. Prepares for war, 278. His successes, 279. A truce concluded, 284. Annexes Brittany to France, 302. Death of, 304.

— *VI.* King of France, negotiations between, and Henry IV. of England, ix. 12, 13. His death, 77.

— *VII.*, King of France, accession of, ix. 78. State of his affairs at his accession, 78, 79. Obtains some successes against the English, 81. Defeated at the battle of Vernueil, 82, 83. Dissensions in his court, 86. Crowned at Rheims, 98. Many places surrender to him, 99. Retreats before the English, 121. Obtains the county of Comerges, 123. Relieves Tartas, *ib.*

— *VIII.*, sends ambassadors to Henry VII. xi. 25, 26. Besieges Rennes, 28. Marries the Dutchess of Brittany, 29. Henry VII. invades France, 30. Concludes a treaty of peace with Charles, 31.

— *V.* (Emperor) succeeds to the Spanish throne, xi. 121. Treaties between him and Henry VIII., 121, 122. His scheme for obtaining money from Henry frustrated, 122, 123. Grants Wolsey a pension, 124. Elected Emperor, 128. Courts Wolsey, 129. Arrives in England and is splendidly entertained, 130—132. War between him and Francis I., 142, 143. Henry mediates a peace, 143, 144. Is visited by Wolsey, 147. Arrives in England, 150. Treaties between him and Henry, 152, 153. Courts Wolsey, 153, 154. His composure on hearing of Francis I.'s captivity at Pavia, 174. His cold reception of the English ambassadors in Spain, 177. Henry writes to him, 179. Perplexity of Charles, 182, 183. Liberates Francis, 184—186. Hypocrisy of Charles on the capture of the Pope, 196. His offers rejected by Henry VIII., 199. Liberates the Pope, 202, 203. War declared against him, 214. Negotiates for a peace, 279, 354.

*Charter* granted by Henry I., abstract of, vi. 56. Of Stephen, 57. Of Henry II., 58.

— (the Great), granted by John, v. 254. Who prepares to recal it, 255. Is condemned by the Pope, 256. Analysis of it, vi. 65. Privileges granted by it, divided into four classes, 65, 66. Privileges to the church, 66—68. Privileges to the barons, 69—74. Privileges granted to towns, &c., 75—78. Privileges granted to all freemen, 78—85. Securities for the execution of the Great Charter, 85. These securities ineffectual, 86. Copy of the Latin text of Magna Carta, 381—393. Translation thereof, 393—406. Confirmed with great solemnity by Henry III., vii. 19, 20. History of the Great Charters, in the reign of Henry III., viii. 87—90. Of Edward I., 122. Copy of the Magna Carta of Henry III. in Latin, viii. 423—430. English translation thereof, 430—438.

*Charta de Foresta*, viii. 88.

*Charter* granted to the clergy, by Edward IV., x. 36



- Chastity* of the ancient Britons, ii. 303, 304—307. Of the Anglo-Saxon women, laws for protecting, iii. 420. Highly valued by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 335. Violations of, by the Anglo-Normans, vi. 347, 348.
- Chaucer*, Geoffrey, life of, viii. 246—248. Character of his works, 248, 249. 312. Poetical commendation of, by Lydgate, x. 215.
- Chemistry*. See *Chymistry*.
- Chicheley*, Henry, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, x. 19. Procures a law against the Lollards, 20. Reforms the barbers, 21. Perfects the Lollards, 29, 30. His death, 31.
- Children*, birth and education of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 326—330. Were nursed by their Anglo-Saxon mothers, iv. 351. Their courage how tried, 352. How educated by the Anglo-Saxons, 353, 354.
- Chivalry*, origin of, vi. 320. Pages or valets the lowest order of, 320, 321. Esquires, 321. Their exercises, 321, 322. Knights, how created, 324—326. Qualities necessary to knighthood, 327. Duties of a knight, *ib.* Benefits produced by it, viii. 379, 380. Revived in England by Edward III., 381, 382. Began to decline in the 15th century, x. 282. But still existed, 283. State of in the 16th century, xii. 353—355.
- Christianity*, when first established in Britain, and by whom, the question stated and examined, i. 183—202. Progress of, gradual, 202. Further progress of, in the third, fourth, and fifth centuries, 210—236. Conversion of the Saxons to, by St. Austin and others, iii. 190. *et seq.* Apostasy of the English from Christianity, and their return to it, 198. 202. Conversion, apostasy, and return to Christianity of the Northumbrians, 199—201. The kingdoms of Wessex and Mercia converted, 202.
- Chronicles*, metrical, account of, viii. 301—309.
- Church*, innovations of its doctrine and ceremonies, in the 13th century, viii. 35—38.
- , *British*, persecution of, in the third century, i. 211. Government, doctrine, and worship of, in the first three centuries, 213, 214. Expences of religion, how defrayed therein, 214, 215. Delivered from persecution, 216. British bishops in the council of Arles, 217. Kindness of Constantine to the Christian clergy, 218, 219. Doctrine and government of the British church, in the fourth century, 220—223. Rights of worship in the 4th century, 224. History of, in the 5th century, iii. 187. Its state in the 7th century, 216. In the 9th century, 253.
- *of England*, state of, at the death of the venerable Bede, iii. 222, 223. The clergy cruelly treated by the Danes, 244—246. Ethelwolf's grant to the church, 246—248. Calamities of the clergy, and their relief, 249, 250. History of, in the reigns of Harold, Hardicanute, and Edward the Confessor, 295. History of, from the reign of William I. to that of John, v. 271—453. Change introduced into her creed, 277. Changes in her polity by William I., 278. Violent disputes between the crown and the church, 335. Privileges granted to the church by Magna Charta, vi. 66—68. Its patrimony invaded by Henry IV., x. 6, 7. 12. Gross abuses in, 20, 21. Reformation of, effected by the state, xii. 1. Changes introduced by Henry VIII., 27, 28.

- Church of Scotland.* See *Scotland, church of.*
- Churches*, when first built with stone, iv. 113. Architecture of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 184—186. Erected by the arts of the clergy, 181—184. List of articles belonging to, viii. 29—31.
- Church-music*, cultivated in England in the 7th century, iv. 188, 189. State of in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 247, 248. Corruptions of, 249, 250. State of in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 316—318. Of the 15th and 16th centuries, xii. 298—300.
- Clarence*, George, Duke of, brother of Edward IV., marries the Earl of Warwick's second daughter, ix. 198. Quarrel between him and Edward, 201. Reconciliation, 202. Collects his forces, 203. Clarence and Warwick revolt, 204. Refused admittance into Calais, 205. Return to England and expel Edward, 210. Joins him, 217. Is discontented, 235. Condemned and executed, 237, 238.
- Chymistry*, first introduced into England in the 13th century, viii. 201—203.
- Cinque Ports*, privileges of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 262, 263.
- Civil law*, when first introduced into Britain, vi. 58. State of, between 1066. and 1216., 104, 105. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 189, 190.
- Clarence*, Thomas, Duke of, son of Henry IV., sent into France, to assist the Armagnacs, ix. 33, 34. Slain at the battle of Baugè, 70.
- Civil and military lists* of the Romans, i. 355.
- Civil war* between John and the barons, v. 252—254, 256—260. Between Henry III. and the barons, vii. 36—39. Between Edward II. and the barons, 134—136. 138. 155—160. Between the houses of York and Lancaster. See *Edward IV.*; *Henry VI.*; *Richard III.*, and *Henry VII.*
- Clarendon*, constitutions of, abstract of, v. 345, 346. vi. 60, 61. Condemned by the Pope, v. 358.
- Claudius*, Emperor, sends an army into Britain, i. 30. Arrives in Britain, 34. Made some changes in its government, 339.
- Claydon*, John, burnt for heresy, x. 22, 23.
- Clement VII.*, Julio de Medici, elected pope, xi. 166. Forms the Italian league against the Emperor, 190. Rome sacked by the Imperialists, 195. The Pope and his Cardinals imprisoned, 196. Hypocrisy of the Emperor on this occasion, *ib.* Is liberated, 202. Sends a commission of two Cardinals to England, to try the validity of Henry VIII.'s marriage, 217, 218. His duplicity, 218. Ambassadors sent to him, 223. Deceives the King again, 223, 224. Falls sick, 224. But recovers, 225. Deceit of the Pope and Cardinals, 229. Henry's cause avocated to Rome, 230.
- Clergy*, English, cruelly treated by the Danes, iii. 244—246. Married clergy, ejected from the monasteries, 272—275. Disputes between the monks and married canons, 278, 279. Increase of, in the 11th century, 297. Exempt from bearing arms, among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 141, 142. Prohibited, ineffectually, by various canons from marrying, v. 275. 315. 317. 400. Submit to King Stephen, 319. Endeavour to reconcile Henry II. and his sons, 406. Were the chief physicians in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 114, 115. Learning at that time chiefly confined to them, 121, 122. Their arts, in promoting the erection of churches,



- churches, 182, 183. Oppressed by Henry III. and the Pope, vii. 24. Make ineffectual resistance, 25. Fleeced by Pope Innocent III., viii. 4. Boldly oppose the Romish impositions, 10. Their encroachments, 18. Remedies against them, 19. Money extorted from them by Edward I., 24. Deny the right of king and parliament to tax them, 25. Are obliged to submit, 26. Exactions of, checked by parliament, 32. Complain of grievances, 46. The Pope's bull on that subject, 47. Their exorbitant power, 61. Their profligacy in the 13th and 14th centuries, 367—370. The laity corrupted by them, 371. Courted by Henry IV., x. 1, 2. Petition of, to parliament, rejected, 34. Great power given them by a charter of Edward IV. 36. And confirmed by Richard III., 39, 40. Their profligacy, 37. Dispute between the seculars and regulars, 38. Their powerful influence in the 15th century, 65. Dissolute manners of, in the 15th century, 298. xii. 2, 3. Their luxury, x. 315. Contest between them and the laity, xi. 120. And among themselves, xii. 12—14. The commons complain of them, 42. Obligated to submit to Henry VIII., 43, 44. Disputes among them respecting reformation, 61—63. Enjoined to preach only certain doctrines, 64, 65. Their vices in the 16th century, xii. 357. Their hospitality, 358, 359.
- Clergy*, Italian, insulted by the English with impunity, viii. 5.
- Climate* of ancient Britain, ii. 281. Coldness of Gaul and warmth of Britain accounted for, 282—284.
- Clocks*, art of making, when first introduced into Britain, viii. 279. First clock, where erected, 280. Curious astronomical clock, made by Richard de Wallingford, 281.
- Clothing*, arts of, uncertain who introduced, ii. 124. Ancient Britons clothed in skins, 125. Clothing arts introduced before the first invasion, 126. Several kinds of cloth made by the Gauls and Britons, 126, 127. Art of dyeing cloth practised by the Britons, 128. As well as the art of making, washing, and bleaching linens, 129—131. Clothing arts in Britain, improved by the Romans, 132. State of the clothing arts in England, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 195—197. State of the clothing manufacture in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 282—285. In the fifteenth century, x. 186. Laws for their encouragement, 187. State of, in the 16th century, xii. 276—280.
- Clovefhoos*, council of, iii. 225—227. Second council held at, 240.
- Coat-armour*, when introduced into England, vi. 329.
- Cobham*, Sir John Oldcastle, Lord, attacked for heresy, x. 13, 14. Henry V. converses with him, 14, 15. His declaration of faith, 15—18. Condemned for heresy, ix. 39. x. 18, 19. Escapes into Wales, ix. 39. x. 19. Charged with raising a commotion against Henry V., ix. 40. Seized and executed, x. 23, 24.
- Coil the Good*, a British author, notice of, ii. 86.
- Coin*, British, history of, from the Roman invasion to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 236, *et seq.*
- , origin of coin, 236. When first introduced into Britain, 237. Gold and silver coins, 239. By whom discovered in Britain, 240. Progress of coining money in Britain, 241. What figures stamped on most ancient coins, 242. Heads of princes, 243. Legends on coins, *ib.* Coins of



of Cunobeline, account of, 244—253. Weight and value of British coins, 254. Quantity of coin in Britain, between the first and second invasion, *ib.* Change in the coin of Britain, 255. Quantity of coin increased, 256. State of coin, after the departure of the Romans to the establishment of the Saxons, *iv.* 245, 246. The first Saxon coins, 246. Distinction between real and nominal money, 247. Names and different kinds of Anglo-Saxon money, 248. Value and weight of the pound, 248—253. Another money pound, 254, 255. The real money pound of the Saxons, 256. Their mercantile pound, 257. Value and weight of the Saxon mark, 258—260. The mark originally brought from Scandinavia, 260, 261. Mercantile mark, 261, 262. Weight and value of the mancus, 262—264. Of the ora, 265. The Anglo Saxon shilling a real coin, 266. Its weight and value, 267. Weight and value of the thrimfa, 268, 269. Of the Anglo-Saxon penny, 269, 270. Of the sceata, 270—272. The Anglo-Saxon penny valuable, 272. Halfings, feorthings, and stycas, 272, 273. Tables of the weights and values of these different coins, 274. Foreign gold coins, current in England, 274, 275. Incrementum paid in the Saxon times, 276. Fineness of the Saxon coins, 277. Art of coining, 277, 278. Description of Edwin's penny, 278. Of Adulf's and Harold's penny, 279. Quantity of money in England, 279—281. Whether the Scots, Picts, and Britons coined money in this period, 282—284. Changes in English money, made by the Conquest, *vi.* 294, 295. Halfpennies and farthings, 296. Sterling money, 297. Standard money, *ib.* Money-mints, 297, 298. Coins of Scotland in the 11th and 12th centuries, the same as those of England, 298. No gold coined in this period, 299. Proportion of gold to silver, 299. Different ways of paying money, 300—302. Comparative value of money, 303. The same nominal sum contained thrice the quantity of silver, 303. Same quantity of silver more valuable, 303, 304. The same quantity of silver five times the value it now is, 304—307. Balance of trade proved to be in favour of Britain, 307, 308. Though much money carried out, much still remained in England, 308—311. Changes in the British coin in the 13th and 14th centuries, *viii.* 345. Gold coin, 345, 346. Method of coining, 347. Mode of conducting royal exchanges, 347, 348. Clipping and counterfeiting the coin prevented, 348. State of the coin of Scotland, 349, 350. State of the English coin in the 15th century, *x.* 262. Weight of coins regulated, 262, 263. Changes introduced by Edward IV. 264. English gold coins in this period, 264, 265. State of the coin of Scotland in the 14th century, 265. Of James I., 265—267. Table of gold coins struck between the reigns of Robert II. and James III., their relative values and fineness, 266, 267. Copper money introduced in the reign of James III., 268. State of English coin in the 15th century, *xii.* 333. Shillings when first coined, 334. Silver coins, 335. Gold coins, 335, 336. State of coin, in Scotland, in the 16th century, *xii.* 338, 339.

*Collet*, Dr. John, Dean of St. Paul's, reads public lectures on St. Paul's Epistles, *xii.* 211. Biographical anecdotes of, 232—234.

*Colonies*, why planted in Britain by the Romans, *i.* 341.

*Colours*, art of preparing, in the 11th and 12th centuries, *vi.* 227, 228.

*Columba*, St., account of, iii. 188.

*Columbanus*, account of, iv. 6, 7.

*Columbus*, Christopher, discoveries of, xii. 310. Sends his brother to England, 313.

*Commerce*, British, History of, from the Roman invasion, to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 195, *et seq.*

———, importance of commercial history, ii. 195. Antiquity of commerce, 195, 196. Gradual increase of, in the way of barter, 196. Commerce, originally confined within the limits of each state, gradually enlarged its circle, 197, 198. Foreign commerce of the Britons with the Phœnicians, 199. Time of the Phœnicians' discovery, not generally known, 200, 201. No evidence that the Phœnicians planted any colonies in Britain, 202. Commodities exported by the Phœnicians, 202—204. Articles imported by them, 204. Phœnicians concealed their commerce with Britain from other nations, 205. Imports and exports of the Greeks, 207. Who concealed their commerce with Britain from other nations, 209. The trade of Britain carried on in a different channel, 210—213. Trade of Britain extended, 215. And more known after the Roman invasion, 216. Limits of British trade at that invasion, *ib.* Intercourse between Britain and the Continent increased, 217. Articles exported,—lime and chalk, 220. Pearls, 221. Corn, 222. Cattle, hides, cheefe, and horses, 223. Dogs, 223—225. Slaves, 225. Baskets, 226. Goods imported into Britain, 227. Imports after the Roman conquest, 227, 228. Balance in favour of Britain, 228. Seats of British trade on the Continent, 229. Trading towns in Britain, 229, 230. Duties on merchandize, where paid, 231. Proportion of such duties, where and how collected, 232. Annual amount thereof, 233. When the wealth and commerce of Britain began to decline, 257. Destroyed by the departure of the Romans, 258. 278. Facilities of commerce, by conveyance of goods, 259—262.

———, history of, from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William, Duke of Normandy, iv. 191, *et seq.* Maritime affairs neglected by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 194—196. Foreign trade revived by Offa, 196, 197. No commercial intercourse between the Anglo-Saxons and Welsh, 199. Commerce between the different states of the heptarchy, 200. Restraints on trade, 201—203. Promoted by the establishment of the English monarchy, 206. Injured by the invasions of the Danes, 207, 208. Naval power and foreign trade of England, restored by Alfred the Great, 209. The English trade, hurt by his death, 223, 224. State of, in the reign of Edward the Elder, 224. Trade promoted by Athelstan, 225, 226. State of trade under Edgar the Peaceable, 226—228. Under Ethelred the Unready, 229—231. In the reign of Canute the Great, 231, 232. The balance of trade in favour of England, 242, 243.

———, History of, from A. D. 1066. to the year 1216., vi. 255—289. Commerce not inconsiderable at the Conquest, 256. Effects of the conquest on English commerce, 257, 258. Internal trade, 258. Account of the chief seats of trade, 259—266. Chief exports, 267—272. Imports, 272—277. By whom the trade was conducted, 278—283. Mercantile regulations, 283—288. History of commerce, from 1216.



- to 1399., viii. 319, *et seq.* Internal commerce loaded with several imposts, 320. Transacted in fairs, *ib.* Foreign trade of England with Italy, 321, 322. With the Mediterranean islands, Spain, and Portugal, 323, 324. With the English provinces in France, 324. With France, 324, 325. With Bretagne, &c. Flanders, and Holland, 325, 326. With Germany and the Hanse Towns, 326. With Prussia, Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, 327. With Iceland, 328. Commerce of Ireland, *ib.* Commerce of Scotland, 329, 330. Imprudent commercial laws, 330, 331. Wise commercial laws, 331, 332. Foreign merchants settled in England, 332—337. The chief seats of trade, 338. Principal exports and imports, 339, 340. Balance of trade in favour of England, 340. Causes of this, 341—343. Commerce of Britain in the 15th century, x. 233, *et seq.* Cause of the obstructions of trade in this period, 234—236. Commercial treaty of Henry IV. with the Hanse Towns, 237. 242. Companies of foreigners settled in England, 238, 240. English factories abroad, 241. Circle of trade enlarged, 246, 247. Exports, 248, 249. Imports, 250. Prohibited goods, 251. Staple towns, 252. Trade profitable to England in this century, 255, 256. Trade of Scotland in the 15th century, 256. Wise laws made by James I. 257. By James II. and III., 258, 259. Exports and imports of Scotland, 260. History of, in England, in the reign of Henry VII. xii. 303, *et seq.* Commercial treaty with France, 304. And other powers, 304—308. 313—315. Commercial laws, 308, 309. Henry VII. attentive to trade, 315. Commerce of Scotland in the reign of James IV. xii. 321. Commercial Laws, 321, 322. Staple of the Scottish trade, 323, 324. Office of conservator of Scots, privileges established, 324, 325. State of English trade in Henry VIII.'s reign, 325. His accession favourable to commerce, 325, 326. The circle of trade enlarged, 326—328. Henry VIII. encouraged trade, 330—333.
- Commons*, House of, when first separately established, viii. 144. Happy effects of this establishment, 145. Gradual union of the knights and commons, 146. Humility of the commons, *ib.* State of, from the accession of Richard II. to the accession of Henry IV., 161—163. Modesty of the house of commons, 163, 164. Pains taken to secure the attendance of its members, 155, 156. Increases in firmness, 157. Vindicates its privileges, 158—160. See *Members of Parliament*.
- Common Law* of the ancient Britons, account of, i. 328—330. State of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 105, 106. Improvements of, in the reign of Henry III., viii. 98. State of, in the reign of Edward I. 119, 120. Of Edward II., 132. Of Edward III., 151. Of Richard II., 167. Its state in the 15th century, x. 74.
- Common Pleas*, court of, settled at Westminster in the reign of Edward I., viii. 114.
- Compacts*, Anglo-Saxon laws concerning, iii. 400, 401.
- Companies*, a body of marauders so called, desolate France, vii. 271, 272. They dethrone Don Pedro King of Castile, 272.
- Compurgation*, ancient British laws concerning, i. 331, 332. Anglo-Saxon law relative to compurgators, vii. 422—424. Compurgators not the same as jurymen, 424, 425.



*Computation of time, Druidical, account of, ii. 16—21.*

*Conan, Duke of Brittany, resigns his territories to Henry II. of England, v. 132.*

*Confession, auricular, when introduced, iii. 208.*

*Conjugal fidelity of the ancient Britons, ii. 307. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 335, 336.*

*Conquest, effects of, on the commerce of England, vi. 256—258.*

*Conrade, Marquis of Montferrat, elected King of Jerusalem, v. 208. Assassinated, 209.*

*Constable of England, extensive power of, x. 72, 73.*

*Constantine the Great, kindness of, to the Christian clergy, i. 218, 219.*

——, King of Scots' reign of, iii. 88.

—— II. reign of, iii. 111.

—— III. reign of, iii. 159, 160.

*Constantius recovers Britain, i. 96. Severity of, 103, 104.*

*Constitution of Clarendon. See Clarendon.*

—— of *Otho*, viii. 6. Of Archbishop Arundel, x. 8.

—— of Great Britain, history of, from its first invasion by the Romans to the arrival of the Saxons, i. 237, *et seq.* Constitution of all the British states not the same, 311.

——, History of the constitution of *England*, from the arrival of the Saxons, to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 299, *et seq.* Changes introduced into it, in the reign of William I., vi. 2—53. Changes introduced in the reigns of William II., Henry I. and II. Stephen, Richard I., and John, 54—86. The ancient constitution of England, not quite destroyed by the conquest, 50—52. Changed in the reign of Edward II. by the confederate barons, vii. 130, 131. History of, from the death of John to the accession of Henry IV., viii. 85—170. History of, from the accession of Henry IV. to the accession of Henry VII., x. 51—108. History of the constitution of England, from 1485. to 1547. xii. 146—169. Attempts to ruin it, by Henry VIII., 165.

—— of Scotland, from the 6th to the 11th centuries, iii. 376—378. In the twelfth century, viii. 101—104. First regulated by Robert Bruce I., viii. 134—136. State of, from 1327. to 1377., 155—158. From 1488. to 1542. xii. 170—196.

*Convocations held in England, x. 38, 39. See Synods.*

*Cookery of the ancient Caledonians, ii. 360. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 394. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 407.*

*Copper-mines of ancient Britain, notice of, ii. 137.*

*Corboyl, William, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, v. 313. The question of primacy determined against him, 316. His death and character, 320.*

*Coritani, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 263, 264.*

*Corn, anciently exported from Britain, ii. 222. Exported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 271. Law relative to its exportation and importation, x. 249, 250.*

—— imported, in times of scarcity, vi. 277, 378.

*Cornairi, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 265, 266. 285. ii. 409, 410.*

*Cornwall,*

- Cornwall*, Richard, Earl of, son of John, quarrels with Henry III., vii. 7. Is reconciled, 8. Refuses the crown of Sicily, 23. Chosen King of the Romans, 25. Fatal consequences of his departure, 26.
- Corruption* of the papal court, delineated, viii. 365, 366. 369, 370. And of the clergy, 367—369. x. 37, 38.
- Corshed*, ordeal of, how conducted, iii. 430, 431.
- Cottars*, a sort of slaves, in the reign of William I., vi. 5.
- Councils* held in England, i. 230, 231. iii. 186, 187. 204. 207, 208. 210, 211. 225—227. 232, 233. 240, 241. 259—262. 265. 291, 292. v. 275. 294. 314. 317. 321. 323. 325. 327, 328. 400. viii. 15. 21. 68. xii. 25. See *Synods*.
- , Scotch, in the ninth century, iii. 256. In the tenth century, 284, 285.
- Count of the Saxon Shore*, powers and office of, i. 362, 363. ii. 278.
- of *Britain*, powers and functions of, i. 364.
- Counterpoint*, where and by whom invented, x. 226, 227.
- County Courts*, jurisdiction of, iii. 349.
- Courtney*, William, Archbishop of Canterbury, proceedings of, against Wickliff, viii. 68—70.
- Courage* of the ancient Britons, ii. 295, 296.
- Courts*, Welsh and Anglo-Saxon, great officers of, iii. 379. Mayor of the palace, 379. Priest of the household, 380. Steward of the household, *ib.* Master of the hawks, 381. Master of the horse, 382. Chamberlain, 383. Chief musician, *ib.* Silentiary, 384. Master of the huntmen, *ib.* Mead-maker, *ib.* Physician, butler, porter, and master cook, 385. Master of the lights, 386. Officers of the Queen's household, *ib.* Fees and immunities of these offices, *ib.* The King's feet bearer, 387.
- of *Justice*. See *Justice*, courts of.
- Cranmer*, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, advice of, to Henry VIII. on his divorce, xi. 233, 234. Procures the opinions of foreign universities in his favour, 251. Made Archbishop, 260. Pronounces a divorce, 261. Visits Henry in his dying moments, 367. Elevated to the primacy, xii. 46. Procures the Bible to be translated, 76, 77. Is in danger from the papists, 99—101. But delivered by the King, 102. Procures prayers to be in English, 102, 103. And the abolition of certain ceremonies, 104.
- Crecy*, battle of, between Edward III. and Philip King of France, vii. 235—238.
- Credulity* of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 327—330. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 342, 343. Of the English in the 15th century, x. 293, 294. In the 16th century, xii. 363—365.
- Creed* in the church of England, change in, v. 277. Articles of, drawn up by order of Henry VIII., 64—66.
- Crema*, John de, papal legate, holds a council at Westminster, v. 314. Dissolute conduct of, 315.
- Crevant*, battle of, ix. 80.
- Cromwell*, Thomas, Earl of Essex, when a private person, defends his master Wolsey in parliament, xi. 240. On his fall is taken into the King's service, 241. Promoted and created Lord Cromwell, 296. Employed to suppress the monasteries, 297. Proposes a marriage for  
Henry



- Henry with Anne of Cleves, 312. Henry discontented, 313. Cromwell imprisoned, 317. Attainted, 318, 319. Beheaded, 320. xii. 90, 91. Account of his ecclesiastical transactions, 53. Vice-gerent of England, 53, 54. Visitation and dissolution of monasteries, 54, 56—58. His injunctions to the clergy, 66, 67.
- Criminals*, protected from sudden violence by the Anglo-Saxon laws, iii. 414, 415.
- Croisades*. See *Crusades*.
- Crofs*, ordeal of, how conducted, iii. 429, 430.
- Crofs-bows* used in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 287.
- Crown*, succession to. See *Succession*. Great power of, in the reign of William I., vi. 32—34. Its great revenues, 34—40. Annual amount of its revenues, 41, 42.
- Cruelty* of the Danes, instances of, iv. 323—325. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 345, 346.
- Crusades*, Richard I. prepares to engage in, v. 189, 191, 192. Events of, 198—205, 207—211. Were in general favourable to the improvement of learning, vi. 120, 121. Crusade declared in 1268., in which Prince Edward, son of Henry III., engages, vii. 51, 52. One declared against the Bohemians, x. 26. Against the Turks, 35, 36.
- Culdees*, character and labours of, iii. 254, 255.
- Culen*, King of Scotland, reign of, iii. 254, 255.
- Cunobeline's* coins, description of, ii. 244. Divided into six classes, 245. Description of the first class, 245, 246. Second class, 246, 247. Third class, 247, 248. Fourth class, 248, 249. Fifth class, 249. Sixth class, 250. Meaning of the word *Tascia* found thereon, 250—252. Observations on the coins of Cunobeline, 253.
- Curiosity* of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 343, 344, 345.
- Curfeu Bell*, origin and design of, vi. 333.
- Customs*, See *Manners* and *Customs*.
- , *Commercial*, See *Duties*.
- Cuthbert*, Archbishop of Canterbury, iii. 223. Letters to, from Boniface, Archbishop of Mentz, 223, 224. Convenes a council at Cloveshoos, 225. Death 228. Quarrels about his body and that of his successor, 228, 229.
- Cyprus*, Isle of, conquered by Richard I., v. 198. Sovereignty of it, conferred by him on Guy de Lusignan, 208.

## D.

- DAMNII**, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 282, 283. v. 403, 404.
- Dancing*, a favourite amusement of the ancient Britons, ii. 368. Their war-dance, 368, 369. Monkish fable of an extraordinary dance, iv. 331—333. Martial dances of the Anglo-Saxons, 398. A favourite amusement of the, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 315.
- Danegeld*, tax of, its origin, iii. 366. Oppressive collection of, 367. When abolished, 368. Revived by William I., v. 14. vi. 36.
- Danes*, first appearance of, on the British coasts, iii. 57, 58. Defeated by



- by Egbert, 64. And by Ethelwolf, 66. Wars of, with Ethered, 68—70. With Alfred, 70—73. Over-run the whole country, 73. Are defeated by Alfred, 76, 77—79. Massacre of, 119. Cruelly treat the English clergy, 244—246. 249. Are converted to Christianity, 250. Their apostasy and recovery, 259. Martial spirit of the Danes, iv. 313. Causes thereof, 314—316. Its properties, 316—318. Their fondness for a violent death, 319—321. And for piratical expeditions, 321, 322. Distinguished for their cruelty, 322—324. Their social dispositions, 325. Credulity, 327—330. Curiosity, 330—334.
- Danmonii*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 242, 243, ii. 415.
- David*, King of Scotland, invades England, v. 90. Defeated at the battle of the Standard, 92. Peace between him and Stephen, 93. His reign and character, 117, 118. A great benefactor to the Scottish church, 334.
- , Prince, son of Robert, iii. Death of, ix. 290, 291.
- Dearths* frequent in the fifteenth century, accounted for, x. 173, 174.
- Death*, violent, partiality of the Danes for, iv. 319, 320. Instances of, 321.
- Deiscal*, a singular mode of address, by the ancient Britons, described, ii. 319, 320.
- Deities* worshipped by the ancient Britons, account of, i. 154—162. Of the ancient Saxons, iii. 175—179.
- De la Pole*, Michael, Earl of Suffolk, a favourite of Richard II., vii. 325. Condemned and degraded, 329, 330.
- , William and Edmund. See *Suffolk*.
- Demetæ*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 270, 271. ii. 412.
- Depopulation* of England, causes of, under Henry IV., x. 277. In the reign of Henry V., 278. Of Henry VI., 279. And of Edward IV., 279, 280.
- , of Scotland in the 15th century, accounted for, x. 280, 281.
- Dermot*, King of Leinster, taken under the protection of Henry II., v. 138. Is reinstated by the aid of English barons, 139, 140. His death, 146.
- Diceto*, Ralph de, the historian, character of, vi. 142.
- Didius*, Aulus, governor of Britain, continues the war with the Britons, i. 45, 46.
- Diet* of the ancient Britons, ii. 353. Whether the Britons were cannibals or not, considered, 354—356. Britons, of the South, had abundant provisions, 356. Their mode of making salt, 357. Milk, 358. Provisions not equally abundant in North Britain, 359. Of the *Welsh*, Scots, and Picts, iv. 390, 391. Their drinks, 391, 392. Of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, 393, 394. Their cookery, 394, 395. Liquors, 395, 396. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 361. Time of dinner and supper, 362. Their provisions, 363. Dishes now unknown, 364. Bread, 365. Drinks, 366. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 404. Intermeats, 407, 408. Drinks, 408—411. Diet of the English in the 15th century, x. 313, 314. Diet in Scotland, 315.

- Of the English in the 16th century, xii. 375, 376. Of the Scots in the same period, 378, 379.
- Dinotbus*, Abbot of Bangor, account of, iv. 19.
- Discoveries* made by the Portuguese, xii. 309. Of Columbus, 310.
- Disguisings* or *maquerades* of the 13th and 14th centuries, account of, viii. 415, 416.
- Dishes*, what sort of, used by the ancient Britons, ii. 365, 366.
- Diversions* and amusements of the ancient Britons, account of, ii. 366—375. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 397—404. Of the Anglo-Normans, martial, vi. 366—372. Rural, 372—376. Domestic, 376—379. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 411—422. In the 15th century, x. 319—323. In the 16th century, xii. 380—385.
- Divination*, Druidical account of, ii. 63—67. Of the heathen Saxons, iii. 182.
- Divinity*. See *School divinity*.
- Divorces*, Anglo-Saxon laws concerning, iii. 397, 398.
- Dobuni*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 259—261. ii. 413.
- Dogs*, anciently exported from Britain, ii. 223—225.
- Donald Baan* usurps the Scottish throne, v. 53. Slain, 54.
- Donald*, Lord of the Isles, defeated at the battle of Harlaw, ix. 294, 295.
- Doomsday Book*, nature of, explained, v. 32, 33.
- Douglas*, Lord James, fruitless attempt of, to surprise Edward III., vii. 183.
- , William, Earl of, in high favour with James II. of Scotland, ix. 335. Proscribes Livingston and Crichton, 336. Greatness of his family, 338. His violent conduct, 341, 342. Visits Rome, 342. Is prosecuted, 342. Returns to Scotland, 343, 344. Obtains protection in England, 345. His disloyal conduct, 345, 346. Is killed by James II., 346. Rage of his family, 347. Their misfortunes, 347, 348.
- , James, Earl of, concludes a treaty with Henry VI. of England, ix. 348. Concludes a pacification with James II. of Scotland, 349, 350. His marriage with the *Fair Maid of Galloway*, 350. Is ruined, 352. Makes inroads into Scotland, and is defeated, 353. His wife married to the Earl of Athol, 354.
- , Archibald, Earl of Angus, surnamed Bell-the-Cat, destroys the favourites of James II., ix. 390, 391. Conspiracy against James II., 407. His rebellion, 408. Seizes his eldest son, 410. See also *Angus*.
- , Gavin, literary anecdote of, xii. 239—242. Character of his poetry, xii. 294—296.
- Dramatic Poetry* of the 16th century, notice of, xii. 298.
- Dress* of the ancient Britons, ii. 341. The plaid, 342—344. Other garments, 345. The tunick, 346. Covering for their heads and feet, 347. Dress of the Druids, 348. Of the women, 348, 349. Their bed-clothes, 349, 350. The Britons fond of finery, 350. Their mode of dressing their hair, 351, 352. Change in their dress by the Roman conquest, 352. State of, from the fifth to the tenth century, iv. 374. Dress of the Scots, Picts, and Welsh, 374, 375. General description of the dress of the *Anglo-Saxons*, 376, 377. More particular account of,



- of, 377. Their fondness for the warm bath, 378. Vain of fine and long hair, 378—380. Their beards, 381, 382. Shirts, tunics, breeches, and belts, 383, 384. Stockings, 384. Shoes, 384, 385. Mantles, 385, 386. Distinctions between the dresses of both sexes, 386, 387. Ornaments of gold, 387, 388. Furs, 388, 389. Dress of the *Anglo-Normans*, vi. 354. Long curled hair, 354, 355. Shaved their beards, 356. Vestments, *ib.* Caps and bonnets, *ib.* Shirts, 357. Doublets, *ib.* Mantles, 358. Rheno, breeches, and stockings, and shoes, 359. Dress of the women, 360. Dress of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 394—396. Regulated by laws, which had little effect, 397, 398. Changes of fashions, 398—400. Long pointed shoes, 400, 401. Dress of the English women, 402, 403. Dress of the Welsh in the 13th and 14th centuries, 403. Of the English in the 15th century, x. 304, 305. Robes of the nobility, 306, 307. Fashions, 307, 308. Long-pointed shoes, *ib.* Dress of a beau of the 15th century, 309. Lady's head-dress, 310. Sumptuary laws for restraining extravagant dress in England, 311. And in Scotland, 312. State of dress in the 16th century, xii. 370, 371. Its fashions, 371, 372. Magnificence, 373. Female dress, 373, 374.
- Drinks* of the ancient Britons, ii. 361. Mead, 362. Ale, 363. Wine, 364. Of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 393, 394. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 366. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 408—411. In the 15th and 16th centuries, xii. 380.
- Druidism*, the religion of the ancient Britons, i. 137. Dignity of the British priests, 137, 138.
- Druids*, derivation of the name of, i. 138. *note.* Their rank and influence, 138, 139. Arch-druid, 139. Three classes of Druids, *ib.* 1st class, Bards, 140. 2d class, *Faids*, *ib.* Third class, 141. Manner of living, 142. Revenues, 143—145. Numbers, 145. *Druidesses*, 146, 147. Twofold doctrines of the Druids, 148. Secret doctrines of, what, and whence derived, 149—153. The gods of the ancient Britons enumerated, 154—162. The worship of four kinds, 162. Hymns of praise and thanksgiving, 163, 164. Prayers and supplications, 165. Offerings, 166. Sacrifices, 167. Human victims, 168, 169. Divination, 170, 171. Times of their worship, 171—174. Places of worship, 174—178. Decline of the Druids, and of their religion, 178—181. Long duration of their superstitions, 181, 182. Their powerful influence in making peace and in declaring war, 300. *note.* The authority of executing the laws in their hands, 302—304. Judicial proceedings before them, 304—307. Druids were the literati of Britain, at the time of the Roman invasion, ii. 3, 4. And had made considerable progress before they were destroyed, 5, 6. From what sources they derived their learning, 6—8. Difficult to give a particular account of their learning, 8, 9. Physiology of the Druids, 9—12. Astronomy of the Druids, 13—16. Computed their time, by nights, months, years, and ages, 16—20. Other particulars of Druidical astronomy, 21—23. Their astronomy of the stars, 23—26. Constellations and the Zodiac, 26, 27. Mundane system of the Druids, 27—29. Astronomical instruments, 29, 30. Arithmetic of the Druids, 30—32. Geometry of the Druids, 33. Their



Their geography, 34, 35. Mechanics, 35—39. Medicine, 40—42. Anatomy, 42—44. Botany, 46—49. Their anguinus, or serpent-egg, 49. Pharmacy of the Druids, 50, 51. Their rhetoric, 52—55. Knowledge of letters among the British Druids, 56—59. Languages cultivated by them, 60—63. Druidical magic and divination, 63—67. Personal history of supposed learned men among the Druids, 67—71. Their seminaries of learning, 72—74. Manner of teaching therein, 75—77. Learning of, not contemptible, 77, 78. Dress of the Druids, 348.

*Drunkennes*, the ancient Britons addicted to, ii. 313—315. And also the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 341, 342.

*Dudley*. See *Empson*.

*Duff*, King of Scotland, reign of, iii. 113.

*Duke*, title of, when introduced, viii. 155.

*Duke of Britain*, power and office of, i. 365, 366.

*Dunbar*, a Scottish poet, notice of, xii. 292—294.

*Duncan*, King of Scotland, reign of, ii. 162. Murdered by Macbeth, 163.

—— II. usurps the throne, but is slain, v. 54, 55.

*Dunstan*, *St.*, early life of, iii. 267. Miracles pretended to be wrought by him, 268. Promoted at court, 269, 270. Banished and recalled, 270, 271. Raised to the see of Canterbury, 271. Ejects the married clergy from the monasteries, 272, 273. Death of, 280. Extravagant character of, 281. Excelled in the metallic arts, iv. 128.

——, *St.*, influence of, over Edred, iii. 100. Is banished by Edwi, for his insolence, 101. Returns and heads a rebellion against him, *ib.* Celebrated for his learning, iv. 72, 73.

*Dunvenald*, King of Scots, reign and character of, iii. 87, 88.

—— II., reign of, iii. 90.

*Durotriges*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 244. ii. 415.

*Duties* on ancient British merchandize, where paid to the Roman government, ii. 231. History of, and in what proportions paid, 232. Annual amount of, levied by the Romans, 233. State of duties on merchandize, in the 15th century, x. 78—80.

*Dyeing*, art of, known to the ancient Britons, ii. 128. Art of dyeing scarlet, when first introduced into Britain, iii. 136.

—— drugs, imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 276, 277.

## E.

*EDMERUS*, Bishop of St. Andrew's, dispute between, and Alexander II., King of Scotland, v. 331—333.

——, the historian, account of, vi. 130, 131.

*East-Anglia*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 11. History of, 39. Its situation described, 309.

*Easter*, disputes about the observance of, between the British and the Roman churches, iii. 203—206.

*East-Saxons*, kingdom of founded, iii. 11. See *Essex*.

- Eating*, manner of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 365. Two meals a-day eaten, 364. Anglo-Saxon mode of sitting at table, iv. 396, 397. Two meals a-day eaten by the Anglo-Normans, vi. 361.
- Ecclesiastical History*. See *Church*, British. *Church of England*. *Scotland*, church of. *Religion*, history of.
- *Laws* of Alfred the Great, iii. 251, 252.
- *Vacancies*, a branch of the royal revenue, vi. 35.
- Edgar* succeeds Edwi in the throne of England, iii. 104. His wife and splendid reign, 104, 105. His death and character, 106. The married canons persecuted by him, 275. Canons enacted by him, 276—278.
- *Atheling*, designed to be raised to the throne after the battle of Hastings, v. 3. Submits to the conqueror, 5. Retires into Scotland, 17. Dies in obscurity, 65.
- King of Scotland, reign and character of, v. 116.
- Edinburgh*, council of, v. 414, 415. Convocation of, x. 46, 47.
- Edmund*, surnamed Ironside, ascends the English throne, iii. 132. War between him and Canute, *ib.* The kingdom divided, *ib.* Death of Edmund, 133.
- , son of Athelstan, accession of, to the throne, iii. 98. Reduces Northumberland and Cumberland, 99. Death of, 100. Is succeeded by
- Edred*, his brother, iii. 100. Who quells the Northumbrian Danes, and receives the homage of Malcolm King of Scotland, 101. His death, 102.
- Education*, system of, among the Druids, ii. 75—77. Of British youth, how conducted, 327—330. Anglo-Saxon methods of, iv. 353, 354. Norman system of, vi. 318—320.
- Edward the Elder*, son of Alfred, his accession to the throne, iii. 90. His title contested by Ethelwald, whom he subdues, 91. Wars against the Northumbrians and Danes, 91—93. Heroic conduct of his sister Ethelfleda, 93. Fills the vacant sees, and erects new ones, 258. Founded the university of Cambridge, iv. 69—71.
- Edward the Martyr*, his accession to the throne opposed by his mother, iii. 106. Is assassinated by her procurement, 107. Why called a martyr, 107, 108.
- Edward the Confessor*, accession of, to the throne, iii. 137. Enriches the crown, 139. Marries the daughter of Earl Godwin, *ib.* Promotes the Normans, 140. Banishes Earl Godwin and his sons, 141—143. Recalls them, 144. Death of Edward, 152.
- , Prince, son of Henry III., taken prisoner at the battle of Lewes, vii. 39. Makes his escape, 43. Gains the battles of Kenelworth and Evesham, 44—47. Goes on a crusade to the Holy Land, 51, 52.
- I., accession of, to the throne, vii. 65. Coronation, 66. First acts of his government, 66, 67. Disputes with Llewellyn Prince of Wales, 68. Invades Wales, *ib.* Peace concluded, 69. Severely punishes the Jews, 69, 70. Conquers Wales, 71. Effects thereof, 72. Edward spends three years in France, 73. Consequences of his absence, 74, 75. Long peace between England and Scotland terminated, 76. Cause of this rupture, *ib.* Marriage between Prince Edward



and the infant Queen of Scotland negotiated, 78. But frustrated by her death, 79. Fatal consequences of her death, 80. Edward chosen judge in the dispute about the crown of Scotland, 80, 81. His artful conduct, 81. Claims the superiority of Scotland, on what grounds, 82, 83. His superiority acknowledged, 84. Demands and obtains the Scottish royal castles, 85. Determines the claims of the competitors to the Scottish crown, in favour of John Baliol, 88. Severity and indignity offered to him by Edward, 88, 89. War with France, 90. Edward deceived by the King of France, 91. And prepares for war, 92, 93. Delays his invasion of France, to conquer Scotland, 93. War with Scotland, and great advantages gained, 94, 95. King John surrenders, 96. Severity of Edward to the Scots, 97. Quarrels with the constable and marshal of England, 98. His moderation, 99. Invades France, and concludes a truce, 99, 100. Invades Scotland, 102. And gains the battle of Falkirk, 103, 104. Proceedings of Edward after the battle, 104. His marriage and peace with France, 105. Invades Scotland, 106. Answer of Edward and his parliament to the Pope, who claimed the superiority of Scotland, 107. Again invades Scotland, and the English are defeated at Rosslin, 108. Peace between France and England, *ib.* Scottish nobility submit to Edward, 109. Takes Stirling castle and puts Sir William Wallace to death, 110. His plan for governing Scotland, 110, 111. Invades that country, 113. —115. Death of Edward I., 117. His character as a sovereign, 118, 119. And issue, 119. Character of Edward as a legislator, viii. 104, 105.

*Edward*, Prince, son of Edward I., marriage of, to the infant Queen of Scotland negotiated, vii. 78, 79. Negotiations terminated by her death, 79. Is knighted by his father, 116.

— II., accession of, to the throne, vii. 122. His advantages, *ib.* Marches into Scotland, *ib.* Recalls Gavaston, 123. And returns to England, *ib.* His liberality to Gavaston, 124. His marriage and coronation, 126. Holds a parliament, 127. Recalls Gavaston from Ireland, 128. Dismisses him, 130. Resolves to prosecute the war with Scotland, 131. Invades Scotland, 132. Banishes and recalls Gavaston, 133. Edward and Gavaston retire, 134. Peace between him and the confederated barons, 136, 137. Visits France with his Queen, 138. And is reconciled to the barons, 138, 139. Invades Scotland, 140. And is totally defeated at the battle of Bannockburn, 142, 143. Unhappy state of England at this time, 144. Lancastrian party predominant, 145, 146. Edward's intended expedition into Scotland disappointed, 146. The Pope's mediation between England and Scotland unsuccessful, 147. Dissensions between the royal and Lancastrian parties, 147, 148. The Lancastrian party prevails, 148, 149. Intended invasion of Scotland frustrated, 149. Edward's journey into France, 152. Civil war between Edward and the barons, 156. Defeats and takes Lancaster prisoner, 157, 158. Who is executed, 159. Edward's imprudent use of his victory, 159, 160. Fruitless expedition into Scotland, 160. Long truce between Scotland and England, 161. Edward summoned to the French court, 162. Sends his Queen to France, who concludes a treaty, 164. Surrenders his foreign dominions to his son, and sends him into France, 165.



165. Edward's unsuccessful efforts to recover his Queen and his son, 167. England invaded by his Queen, 168. Edward leaves London, and flees into Wales, 170. His son, the Prince of Wales, declared Regent, 171. Edward II. deposed, 172—174. Commissioners sent to him, 174. Cruel treatment of Edward, 175. Cruelly murdered, 176, 177. Character of Edward II., 177. His issue, 178.

*Edward*, Prince, son of Edward II., has his father's foreign dominions surrendered to him, and is sent into France, vii. 165. Is contracted to Philippa of Hainault, 167. Is proclaimed regent, 171.

---

— III., accession and coronation of, vii. 179. Regency appointed by Parliament, *ib.* Pardons the Londoners, 180. England invaded by the Scots, *ib.* Edward's expedition to the north, 181. Endeavours to find out and surprize the Scots, 182. The Scots attempt to surprize him, but in vain, 183. Peace between England and Scotland, 184. Royal marriages, 185. Edward's voyage to France, 186. Edward assumes the government himself, 190. Wife measures adopted by him, 191, 192. Marches into the north, 194. Consults his parliament, 195. England invaded by the Scots, 196. Edward besieges Berwick, *ib.* Defeats the Scotch at Hallidon-hill, 197. And restores Baliol, 198. Cessions made to him by Baliol, *ib.* Whom he supports, 199, 200. Edward and Baliol invade Scotland, 200. Resolves to assert his claim to the crown of France, 202. Foundations of his claim stated, 202—204. Reason of his asserting his claim, 205, 206. His preparations for invading France, 207, 208. Embarks for France, but finds his allies backward, 209. Invades France, 210. Returns to England, 211. Obtains a victory at sea, 213. Fruits of this victory, 214. Ill success of Edward's arms, 214. Besieges Tournay, 214, 215. His challenge to the King of France, 215. Truce concluded, disadvantageous for Edward, 216. Negotiations for peace, 217. Quarrels with Archbishop Stratford, 218. Progress and termination of the quarrel, 219, 220. Edward's allies desert him, 220, 221. Expedition into Brittany, 224, 225. A truce concluded, but ill observed, 226—228. Ineffectual conferences for a peace, 226, 227. Preparations for war with France, 228, 229. Edward's designs in Flanders disappointed, 230. Prepares a fleet and army to assist the Earl of Derby in Gascony, 231. Invades Normandy, 231, 232. His progress, 233, 234. Battle of Crecy between Edward and Philip de Valois, 234—237. The French totally defeated, 237, 238. Success of the English in Guienne, 238. Besieges and captures Calais, 238—242. Summons a parliament, 243. Defeats a plot to betray Calais, to the French, 244. Generous action of Edward, 245. Returns to England, 245, 246. Obtains a naval victory over Spanish pirates, 246. Negotiations for peace with France unsuccessful, 248, 249. Expedition of Edward and his son the Black Prince into France, 250. Retakes Berwick from the Scotch, 251. The crown of Scotland resigned to Edward by Baliol, 252. The French defeated by his son at the battle of Poitiers, 255—258. Edward's expedition into France, 264. Besieges Rheims and Paris in vain, 264, 265. Peace between Edward and John King of France, 265, 266. Liberates the King of France from captivity, 266, 267. Cedes the conquered countries to the Prince of Wales, 268. Edward resumes the arms of France, 278. War with France,

- France, 278, 279. The English defeated, 281. Edward attempts to relieve Thours, 282. Sends the Duke of Lancaster into France, 283, 284. Convenes a parliament, 287. Death of Edward III. 287, 288. His character, 288, 289. And issue, 289—291.
- Edward*, Prince of Wales, surnamed the Black Prince, born, vii. 189. His brave conduct at the battle of Crecy, 237. His noble behaviour afterwards, 238. Excursions of, in France, 252, 253. Refuses to surrender to John King of France, 254. Order of his army, 254, 255. Battle of Poitiers, 255, 256. Defeats the French, and takes their King prisoner, 256—258. Arrives in England with his prisoners, 259. Triumphant entry into London, 259, 260. The conquered countries ceded to him by his father, 268. His mild government of them, *ib.* Undertakes to restore Don Pedro King of Castile, 273. Marches an army into Spain, *ib.* Gains the battle of Najara, 274. Fatal consequences of the Spanish expedition, 275. Perfidious conduct of the French to him, 277. War with France, 278. Takes Limoges, 279. Resigns his command and arrives in England, 280. His death and character, 285, 286.
- , Prince of Wales, son of Henry VI., birth of, ix. 149. Married to Anne daughter of the Earl of Warwick, 208. Is cruelly murdered, 222.
- , IV., (and see *York*, Edward, Duke of, accession of,) to the throne, ix. 172. Marches to the north, 176. Defeats the Lancastrians at the battle of Tanton, 176—178. Executes the most distinguished of them, 178. Crowned, *ib.* Negotiates with Scotland against Henry VI., 179. Convenes a parliament, 180. Rewards his friends and punishes his adversaries, 181. Queen Margaret invades England, 184. Edward's fears and precautions, 185. The Lancastrians defeated at the battles of Hedgeley Moor and Hexham, 185, 186. Executions, 187. Marries Elizabeth Woodville privately, 188. Declares his marriage, *ib.* Bestows liberal favours on her relations, 189. She is crowned, 190. His sister married to the Duke of Burgundy, 196, 197. Rupture between Edward and his brother Clarence, 201. Reconciliation, 202. Insurrection against him suppressed, 203, 204. Clarence and Warwick revolt against him, 204. Edward is expelled, 210. Returns to England, 214. Marches and assumes the name of king, 215. Is joined by his brother Clarence, 216. Marches to London, 217, 218. Defeats the Lancastrians at the battles of Barnet, 219. And of Tewkesbury, 221—223. Rewards his friends and punishes his enemies, 224. His disquiets, 225. Concludes several treaties with continental powers, 226. Prepares for an expedition into France, 227. Demands the crown of France, 228. Disappointed by his allies, 229. Truce with France, 230. His ministers corrupted by the French King, 231. Returns to England, 232. Indulges his passions, 233. Attempts to get the Earl of Richmond into his hands, *ib.* Causes his brother Clarence to be condemned and executed, 237, 238. Gives way to excesses, 238. Breach between Edward and the King of France, 239. Forms an alliance with Burgundy, 240. Breach and war with Scotland, 240, 241. Peace with Scotland, 241. Death of Edward, 243. His issue, 243, 244. Character, 244, 245.



- Edward V.* born, ix. 212. Proclaimed King, 246. State of parties, *ib.* Disputes in his council, 247, 248. End of his reign, 256. Story of his murder and of that of the Duke of York, 268.
- , Prince, son of Henry VIII., born, xi. 304.
- Edwi*, successor to Edred King of England, iii. 102. Marries Elgiva, *ib.* For which the clergy instigate his subjects to revolt, 103. His Death, 104.
- Edwin* recovers the kingdom of Northumberland, of which he had unjustly been dispossessed, iii. 24, 25. Escapes assassination, 26. War between him and Penda King of Mercia, 27. Slain in battle, 28.
- Edwin and Marcar* conduct the remains of the English army to London, after the battle of Hastings, v. 3. Revolt against William I., 15. Make their submission, 16. Revolt again, and are suppressed, 21. Death of Edwin, 22.
- Egbert*, first monarch of England, iii. 61. State of England at his accession, and his conquests, 61, 62. Establishment of the English monarchy, 63. Wiglaf, King of Mercia, restored, and made tributary by Egbert, 63, 64. Defeats the Danes, 64, 65.
- , Archbishop of York, notice of, iii. 223. 231. Literary character of, iv. 31, 32. Catalogue of his library, 32. *note.*
- Eleanor*, heiress of Guienne, divorced by Louis VII. King of France, is married by Henry II. of England, v. 112. Joins a confederacy against her husband, 132. Encourages her son's conspiracy against him, 146—148. Is apprehended in her flight, and confined, 148, 149. Released by Richard I., 190. Successfully negotiates for his deliverance, 213—215.
- , Queen of Edward I., death of, vii. 80.
- Eleanora*, Princess of Brittany, imprisoned by King John, v. 237.
- , daughter of the Count de Provence, married to Henry III., vii. 13. Consequences thereof, 13, 14.
- Election Laws* of the 15th century, x. 55.
- Elfric*, the grammarian, life of, iv. 74.
- Elfrida*, Queen-dowager, opposes the accession of Edward the Martyr, iii. 106. Procures his assassination, 107.
- Elgiva*, wife of Edwi King of England, disfigured by the clergy, iii. 103. And murdered by them, 102.
- Elizabeth*, Princess, daughter of Edward IV. Married by Henry VII., xi. 8. Is crowned, 19. Her death, 69.
- Elmharn*, Thomas de, the historian, notice of, x. 132.
- Eloquence* of the Druids, account of, ii. 52—55. State of, in Britain after the Roman conquest, 80—82.
- Elphinston*, William, Bishop of Aberdeen, character of, xii. 111. Founds an university there, 111, 112. 253, 254.
- Embroidery*, art of, cultivated in England from the fifth to the tenth centuries, iv. 133—135. Improved in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 200, 201.
- Empson*, Sir Richard, and Dudley Edmond, instruments of Henry VII.'s rapacity, imprisoned, xi. 79. Trials of, 82, 83. Committed to the Tower, 84.
- England.* See *Britain*, and the several kingdoms that formed the Saxon heptarchy. See also its sovereigns under their respective names. When erected



- erected into one monarchy, iii. 63. When first divided into dioceses and parishes, 200, 201. Political divisions of, by Alfred the Great, 316, 317. Divided into tithings, hundreds, &c. 331—339. Civil and military history, from the landing of William Duke of Normandy, to the death of King John, v. 1—269. Wretched state of the country, in the year 1140, 98, 99. And in 1147., 110. Invaded by the Scotch, 153, 154. Privileges granted to the cities, towns, &c. of England by the Great Charter, vi. 75—78. History of England, from the death of John to the accession of Henry IV. vii. 1. *et seq.* From the accession of Henry IV. to that of Henry VII. ix. 1. *et seq.* England the best governed state in Europe, in the 15th century, x. 89, 90. Its depopulation in the 15th century accounted for, x. 277—280.
- English*, Gilbert, a physician of the 13th century, notice of, viii. 207.
- English* nation, from what nations descended, iii. 303—305. vi. 7. Great changes introduced among the English by the Norman invasion, 8, 9, *et seq.* Ill treatment and contempt of, by the Normans, 317. 345—347. 349, 350. State of, in the reign of Richard II., vii. 306. Numerous insurrections of, 306—316. Manners of, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 359, *et seq.* Remarks on the sudden changes in manners, &c., 360, 361. Their virtues, 374—382. Vices and foibles, 382—388. Language, 388—394. Drefs, 394—403. Cookery and diet, 404—411. Diversions, 411—422. Miserable state of the common people, in this period, 386—388. Manners of, in the 15th century, x. 275, *et seq.* Their virtues during this period, 286—291. Vices and foibles, 291—298. Were bad negotiators, 295. Their drefs in the 15th century, 304—311. Diet, 313, 314. 316—318. Diversions, 319—323. Mode of living in great families, 314—316. Manners and spirit of the English in the 16th century, xii. 348—353. Virtues and vices of the English character, 356—365. Singular customs, 365, 366. Language in the same period, 368, 369. Drefs, 370—374. Diet and manner of living, 375—378. Liquors, 380. Diversions, 380—385.
- Engraving*, state of the art of, in the 16th century, xii. 291.
- Ensham*, council of, iii. 291.
- Entertainments*, how conducted in the 15th century, x. 317.
- Epidii*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 284.
- Erasmus* introduced the Greek language into England, xii. 204. Biographical anecdotes of, 220—224. His character, 224, 225.
- Escheats and forfeitures*, a branch of the royal revenue, vi. 34.
- Esquires*, in chivalry, their duties and exercises, vi. 321, 322.
- Essex*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 11. History of, 39. Converted to Christianity, by Mellitus, 197. Their apostacy, 198. And return, 202. Its situation described, 308.
- Estates*, tax imposed on, by the Romans, in what case, i. 355, 356.
- Eth*, King of Scots, reign of, iii. 89.
- Ethelbert*, King of Kent, laws of, translated, iv. 415—420.
- Ethelwald*, St., Bishop of Winchester, cruel treatment of the married clergy by, iii. 273. Death of, 280.
- Ethelfred*, King of Northumberland, reign of, iii. 23, 24. Slain in battle by Edwin, 25.
- Ethelred*, the Unready, ascends the English throne, iii. 116. Bribes the Danes to withhold thir ravages, 117, 118. Marries Emma, Princess

- of Normandy, and procures a massacre of the Danes in England, 117.  
 War with the King of Denmark, 118. Miseries of the English, 119.  
 Misconduct and unhappy reign of Ethelred, 123, 124. Death, 125.  
*Ethelwolf*, King of England, accession and wars of, iii. 65, 66. Journey to Rome, 66. 248. Return, and death, 67. Divides his territories, *ib.*  
 His grants to the church, 246—249.  
*Ethered*, King of England, turbulent reign of, iii. 68—70.  
*Ethics*, state of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 100. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 179, 180.  
*Eugenius IV.*, Pope, contest between him and the council of Basil, x. 30, 31. Sends a rose to Henry VI., 32, 33.  
*Evesham*, battle of, vii. 46. Consequences thereof, 47, 48.  
*Evidence*, ancient British law of, i. 331. Anglo-Saxon law of, iii. 421—427.  
*Excommunication*, form of, viii. 37.  
*Exeter Castle*, account of the siege of, by King Stephen, vi. 216, 217.  
 ——— city, a considerable trading place in the 11th century, vi. 262.  
*Exports* from ancient Britain, account of, ii. 202—204. 208. 218—227.  
 British, from the 5th to the 10th centuries, iv. 236—240. In the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 267—272. In the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 339, 340. In the 15th century, x. 248, 249.  
 ——— of Scotland, in the 15th century, x. 260.

## F.

- FABIAN*, John, the historian, account of, x. 134.  
*Factories*, English, abroad, account of, in the 15th century, x. 241.  
*Fairs*, when instituted, iv. 203—206. Foreign fairs frequented by English merchants in the 15th century, x. 252, 253.  
*Faids*, or prophets of the ancient Britons, account of, i. 140, 141.  
*Falkirk*, battle of, vii. 104. Proceedings of Edward I. after it, 104, 105.  
*Families*, fondness for, cherished by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 337, 338.  
 Mode of living in the great English families of the 15th century, x. 316—318.  
*Famines* in England, in the 11th and 12th centuries, causes of, vi. 180.  
 Terrible one in 1316., vii. 144, 145. viii. 388. Account of destructive famines, in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 265, 266. In the 15th century, accounted for, x. 173, 174.  
*Farms* of counties, &c. let by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 39, 40.  
*Feasting*, a favourite delight of the ancient Britons, ii. 366, 367.  
*Feasts*, extravagant, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 405, 406. Table of provisions, &c. at the installation feast of Ralph de Borne, Prior of St. Austin's, Canterbury, 438, 439. Table of provisions at the installation of Nevill, Archbishop of York, x. 332, 333. In the 15th century, account of, 318, 319.  
*Ferdinand*, King of Spain, inveigles Henry VIII. into a treaty against France, xi. 89, 90. His perfidy, 91. 97. 105. Treacherously conquers the kingdom of Navarre, 93, 94. His death, 121.  
*Fergus*, the first King of Scotland, iii. 16. Extent of his territories, 17. List of his successors, 18.



- Ferocity* of the ancient Britons, ii. 296. Of the English, in the 15th century, x. 295, 296.
- Ferrand of Corduba*, a literary prodigy of the 15th century, account of, x. 120.
- Festivals*, kept by the heathen Saxons, account of, iii. 183, 184.
- Feudal system*, not altogether unknown in England before the Conquest, vi. 9. The Conquest, a favourable opportunity for establishing it, 10. Feudal grants made by William I., 11, 12. Nature of the feudal services required by him, 12—18. Subinfeudation, 18, 19. Introduction of the feudal system into Scotland, 21.
- Field sports* of the Anglo-Saxons, account of, iv. 400, 401. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 418, 419.
- Fine arts*. See *Music, Painting, Poetry, Sculpture*.
- Fire-arms*, slow progress of, in Europe, accounted for, viii. 287, 288. When introduced, 289—291. Of the 15th century, account of, x. 195—197. Of the 16th century, xii. 283, 284.
- Fisher*, John, Bishop of Rochester, refuses to take the oath of succession to the crown, xi. 271. Is imprisoned, 272. And beheaded, 274.
- Fisheries*, English, state of in the 15th century, x. 253, 254. —, Scottish, state of, in the 15th century, x. 261.
- Fishing* taught the South Saxons by Wilfred, iv. 98, 99.
- Fitz-Osborne*, William, raises tumults in London, v. 221. Is seized and put to death, 222.
- Flavia Cafariensis*, Roman province of, extent of, i. 347.
- Flemings*, settled in England in the 11th century, vi. 261.
- Flodden Field*, battle of, account of, xi. 444—447.
- Forces*, Roman, in Britain, dissertation on, ii. 454, *et seq.* Constitution, number, and equipments of a legion, 454—456. Auxiliary troops, 457. Number of Cæsar's army, 458. Account of the legions stationed in Britain, 458.—462. Of the cohorts of auxiliary foot, stationed there, 463—467. Roman legionaries, how rewarded, 468.
- Foreman*, Andrew, Bishop of Moray, appointed Bishop and Papal Legate, xii. 113, 114. His difficult situation in Scotland, 115. Elected Archbishop of St. Andrew's, 116. Character of, 117.
- Forrest*, Dean Thomas, burnt for heresy, xii. 126—128.
- Fortescue*, Sir John, account of, x. 136, 137. Notice of his legal writings, 137—139.
- Fortifications*, of the ancient Britons, ii. 156. Art of fortification among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 149. Attack and defence of strong places, among the Anglo-Normans, vi. 215—217. Mode of attacking forts in the 15th century, x. 198, 199.
- France*, war with, by William II., v. 47, 48. See the different reigns under the names of their respective sovereigns.
- Francis I.*, King of France, accession of, xi. 113. Concludes a treaty of peace with Henry VIII., 113, 114. 126. Interview proposed between him and Henry, 127, 128. Courts Wolsey, 129. First interview with Henry, 135. Second interview, 137. Splendid entertainments, 138. Anecdote of Francis and Henry, 138, *note*. War between Charles V. and Francis, 142, 143. Henry mediates a peace, 143, 144. Hostilities



- ties between France and England, 151. War against France, 152. France invaded, 156. Perilous situation of France, 160. Intrepidity of Francis, 161. Duke of Bourbon revolts against him, 162, 163. Military operations, 164. 166—168. Henry's animosity relaxes, 168. Francis's army weakened, 171. Battle of Pavia, 171, 172. Francis taken prisoner, 173. Consternation of the French, *ib.* Sang froid of the Emperor on this occasion, 174. Treaties between Henry VIII. and France, 177—179. Distress of Francis during his confinement, 181, 182. Is liberated, 184—186. Writes to the King of England, 186. Ambassadors sent to Francis, 187. Convenes an assembly of the notables, 189. Joins the Italian league against the Emperor, 190. Francis vindicates himself, 191. Treaty of peace and friendship between Francis and Henry VIII., 338, 339. War with Henry, 343. Frustrated in his attempts to retake Boulogne, 353. Further military operations, 355, 356. Peace with Henry, 358, 359.
- Frea*, a Saxon deity, account of, iii. 176, 177.
- Free cities*, erected by the Romans i. 342.
- Free-Masons*, fraternity of, when established in England, viii. 273, 274.
- Freemen*, Anglo-Saxon, all were warriors, iv. 139—141. Privileges granted to, by the Great Charter, vi. 78—85.
- Frilaxin* or freedmen, in ancient Britain, state of, iii. 323, 324.
- Frith*, John, burnt for heresy, xii. 34, 35.
- Frugality* of the ancient Britons, ii. 308.
- Furriers'* art, state of, in the 9th and 10th centuries, iv. 136.
- Furs*, imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 276.

## G.

- GADDESSEN**, John de, an English physician of the 13th century, notice of, viii. 207—209.
- Gadeni*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 279, 280. ii. 404, 405.
- Gagates*, or jeat-stone, exported from Britain, ii. 219. Description of, 220.
- Gallantry*, romantic spirit of, cultivated in feudal times, vi. 323, 324. Of the Anglo-Normans, 337, 338. Of the English, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 377—379.
- Gambling*, a favourite diversion of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 377, 378.
- Game-laws* of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 402.
- Games*, domestic, of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 403. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 413, 414. Games of chance, 422. Certain games prohibited in the 15th century, x. 321, 322. Domestic games of the 16th century, xii. 384, 385.
- Gaming*, Anglo-Norman laws against, vi. 378, 379.
- Gamut*, the, invented in the 11th century, vi. 248, 249.
- Gardening*, state of, among the ancient Britons, ii. 109, 110. State of, at the arrival of the Saxons, iv. 110, 111. State of gardening in England from 1066. to 1216., vi. 178—180. State of, in the 13th century, viii. 268, 269. State of gardening in England, in the 15th century, x. 176,

- x. 176, 177. In Scotland, during the same period, 177, 178. State of gardening in Britain in the 16th century, xii. 266—268.
- Gaul*, ports of, where British goods were landed, ii. 212.
- Gaunt*, John of. See *Lancaster*.
- Gavaston*, Piers de, a corruptor of Prince Edward, banished, vii. 116. Recalled, 123. Liberality of Edward II. to him, 124. His misconduct, 125. Indignation of the nobility against him, 126, 127. Is made Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 128. Recalled, 128, 129. Misconduct of Edward and Gavaston, 129. Sent into Scotland, 133. Banished, *ib.* and recalled, *ib.* Is besieged in Scarborough castle, and taken prisoner, 135. Executed, 136.
- Generosity* of the Anglo-Normans, anecdotes of, vi. 340, 341. Of the English and Scotch, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 374, 375.
- Genius* of the ancient Britons, ii. 292, 293. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 294, 295.
- Geoffrey*, third son of Henry II., joins the conspiracy against his father, v. 148. Is reconciled to him, 159. Knighted with great splendour, 167. His death, 178. Birth of a posthumous son, Arthur, who succeeds to his Dukedom of Brittany, 180. See *Arthur*.
- Geography* of the Druids, account of, ii. 34, 35. State of, in England in the 13th century, viii. 193, 194. Few discoveries of unknown countries made in this period, 357, 358.
- Geometry* of the Druids, account of, ii. 33, 34. State of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 107, 108. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 191.
- Gerbert*, life of, iv. 75. Introduces the Arabian numeral figures and arithmetic into Europe, 76. Elevated to the pontificate, 77.
- Germanus*, Bishop of Auxerre, disputes in Britain against the Pelagians, i. 229—231. Pretended miracles of, 233. Returns to Gaul, 233. His second expedition into Britain, 234—236.
- Germany*, ancient, boundaries and extent of, iii. 302. Original seats of the German nations which came into Britain, 303. Nations from whom the English are descended, *ib.*
- Gervase of Canterbury*, the historian, notice of, vi. 142.
- Gildas*, account of, iv. 5, 6.
- Gilding*, art of, regulated by law in the 15th century, x. 184, 185.
- Giraldus Cambrensis*, or Girald Barry, life of, and character of his writings, vi. 149—154.
- Glasgow*, university of, when founded, x. 161. Commenced, 162. College of Arts, 163. Confirmed by James II., *ib.* Privileges of, 164. Ill endowed, 165. Lord Hamilton a great benefactor to it, 166, 167.
- Glass-making*, art of, when introduced into England, iv. 116.
- Glass*, painting on, when introduced into England, iv. 161. Greatly improved in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 300.
- Glendour*, Owen, rebels in Wales against Henry IV., ix. 11, 12. Obtains some successes, 13. Defeats and takes prisoner Sir Edward Mortimer, 14. Eludes Henry, 15. Obtains further successes, 29. His troops dispersed, 31, 32. Dies in retirement, 32.
- Gloucester*, Robert of. See *Robert*.
- , Robert, Earl of, takes a conditional oath of fealty to Stephen,



- v. 88. Escapes being seized by Stephen, 89, 90. Heads a confederacy against him, 91. Takes him prisoner at the battle of Lincoln, 101, 102. Is himself taken prisoner, 106. And exchanged for Stephen, 107. His death, 110.
- Gloucester*, Gilbert, Earl of, takes Henry III. prisoner, at the battle of Lewes, vii. 39. Promotes Prince Edward's escape, 43. Rebels against Henry III., 49. Enters London, *ib.* Pacification between them, 50.
- , Thomas, of Woodstock, Duke of, uncle to Richard II., appointed one of the Commission of Regency, vii. 331. His proceedings, 331, 332. The Duke and his partisans take arms, 335. Presented to Richard, 336. Their arbitrary proceedings, 337. Destroys his favourites, 338—342. Dismissed from the Regency by Richard II., 345. Parliamentary grant to, 349. Seized and imprisoned, 353. Dies at Calais, 355. His estates forfeited, 355. Reputed to have been murdered, 356.
- , Humphrey, Duke of, brother of Henry V., appointed Protector, in the absence of the Duke of Bedford from England, ix. 76. Marries Jaqueline of Hainault, 84. Involved in an expensive war on her account, 87. His marriage annulled, *ib.* Impeaches the Cardinal of Winchester, 125. His violent death, 131.
- , Richard, Duke of, conduct of, on the death of his brother Edward IV., ix. 248. His views, *ib.* Imprisons the Earl of Rivers, and others, 249. Comforts King Edward V., 250. Declared Protector, 252. His popularity, *ib.* Proclamations, 253. When he formed his plot of mounting the throne, 256. Grounds of his claim to the crown, 258, 559. His schemes, 260. Speech at Guildhall, 262. The crown offered to him, 263., and accepted, 263, 264. See *Richard III.*
- Godwin*, Earl of Kent, rise of, iii. 130. Places Edward the Confessor on the throne, 138. Who marries his daughter Edgitha, 139, 140. The Earl and his sons banished, 141—143. And his estates confiscated, 144. Is recalled and restored, 144, 145. Death of, 146.
- Gold-mines* of ancient Britain, notice of, ii. 139. Gold exported from, by the Romans, 219. Gold, by whom discovered in Britain, 240. Imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 274.
- Gordon*, Lady Catherine, married to Perkin Warbeck, xi. 47. Is delivered up to Henry VII., and treated with kindness by him, 56.
- Gourdon*, Bertrame de, wounds Richard I., v. 225. Is taken prisoner, *ib.* Noble reply of, 226. Is put to death, *ib.*
- Government* of Great Britain, history of, from its invasion by the Romans to the arrival of the Saxons, i. 237, *et seq.*
- , the first form of, patriarchal, i. 239. Succeeded by the monarchical, 239, 240. Government of the ancient British states, 292—294, 367, 368. Rules of succession to the throne in the ancient British states, 294—296. Law of Tanistry, 296. Prerogatives of British monarchs, 297. Commanded the forces of their states in time of war, 298—300. Their authority diminished in times of peace, 301.
- , civil and military, of the Romans in Britain, i. 338, *et seq.* They excelled in the arts of government, 338. Policy of the Romans, 340. Planted colonies, 341. Made free cities, 342. Powers of the presidents



- presidents of Roman provinces, 343. Imperial procurator, 344. Established their law in Britain, 345, 346. Which they divided into provinces, 346—351. Imposed what taxes, 351. The land-tax, 352. Tax, called Scriptura, 353. Tax on mines, 354. Civil and military lists, 355. Poll-tax, 356. Various other taxes, 357, 358. Amount of the Roman revenues in Britain, 359. See *Constitution*.
- Gower*, John, the poet, account of, viii. 244—246. Character of his poetry, 313. Poetical commendations of, by James I. of Scotland and Occleve, x. 214, 215.
- Grahame*, Patrick, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, promotion and death of, x. 48, 49.
- Grain*, how preserved by the antient Britons, ii. 105, 106. Their mode of preserving, improved by the Romans, 107. Occasionally very cheap in the 15th century, x. 174.
- Grammar*, state of, in England between the years 1066. and 1216., vi. 89—93. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 173, 174.
- Gratanlea*, council of, iii. 259. Canons of, 260—262.
- Greek-fire*, used in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 286. Nature of, vi. 213, 214.
- Greek language* neglected in England in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 174. Not cultivated in the 15th century, x. 118, 119. Introduced in the 16th century, xii. 203—205.
- Greeks*, were acquainted with Britain, ii. 206. Their imports and exports, 207, 208. Excelled in navigation and ship-building, 209. Concealed their British commerce from other nations, 209, 210.
- Gregory*, St., sends Austin and other missionaries to convert the Saxons, iii. 190—192. Sends other missionaries, 193. His model for governing the Church of England, 194, 195.
- VII., Pope, extravagant claims of, rejected, v. 276.
- the Great, King of Scots, reign of, iii. 89.
- Grimbald*, life of, iv. 56.
- Grime*, King of Scotland, reign of, iii. 160.
- Grocyn*, William, delivers popular lectures on the New Testament at St. Paul's, xii. 211. Biographical anecdotes of, xii. 229, 230.
- Grosstead*, or Grouthead, Robert, Bishop of Lincoln, boldly and successfully opposes the exactions of Innocent IV., viii. 10. His spirited remonstrance to the Pope, 11, 12. 213, 214. Account of his life, 211, 212. His death and character, 214, 215.
- Gulielmus Neubrigenfis*, or William Little, the historian, account of, vi. 141, 142.
- Gunpowder* first discovered by Roger Bacon, viii. 204. Again discovered by Schwartz, 289.
- Gypsies*, first appearance of, in England, xii. 149. Ordered to quit the realm, 149, 150. Unsuccessful attempt to remove them from Scotland, 174.

H.

**HABHAM**, council of, iii. 292.

*Hamilton*, Patrick, burnt for heresy, in Scotland, xii. 119, 120.

*Hanvill*, John, character of his Latin poetry, vi. 236, 237.

*Hardicanute*, accession of, to the English throne, iii. 135. Orders Worcester to be destroyed, 136. Death of, 137.

*Harfleur*, besieged and taken by Henry V. of England, ix. 43, 44.

*Harold*, surnamed Harefoot, ascends the English throne, iii. 133. His cruelty, 134. Death, 135.

——, son of Earl Godwin, ambition of, iii. 148. Voyage of, into Normandy, 148, 149. Successful expedition into Wales, 150. Marries the sister of Earls Edwin and Morcar, 151. His accession to the throne, 152. And endeavours to preserve the crown, 153. Attempts to dethrone him defeated, 154. Landing of William Duke of Normandy, 155. Harold marches from the north to Hastings, v. 2. Battle of Hastings, 3. Harold slain, and his army defeated, 4. A charter of his, with a literal translation, iv. 371, 372. His two sons invade England and are defeated, v. 17, 18.

*Harp*, ancient British, notice of, ii. 193, 194. The most favourite musical instrument, iv. 183.

*Hastings*, the Dane, invades England, and is defeated by Alfred, iii. 77—79.

*Hastings*, battle of, v. 4, 5.

*Hastings*, Lord, beheaded by order of Richard III., ix. 254.

*Hatfield*, council of, iii. 210, 211.

*Harves*, Stephen, character of his poetry, xii. 292.

*Hawking*, a favourite sport of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 401. And of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 373, 374.

*Hedgeley-Moor*, battle of, ix. 185.

*Hemmingford*, Walter, the historian, notice of, viii. 241.

*Hengist* and *Horsa*, Saxons, and brothers, arrive in Britain with an army of Saxons, iii. 1, 2. Death of *Horsa*, 4. *Hengist* founds the kingdom of Kent, 5. His successors, 6, 7.

*Henry* of Huntingdon, the historian, life and character of, vi. 139—141.

Character of his Latin poetry, 235.

*Henry*, Prince, son of William I., besieged in Mount St. Michael, by his two brothers, v. 43, 44. Usurps the crown, 55. And is crowned King, v. 56.

—— I., popular measures of, v. 5, 6. England invaded by Robert, Duke of Normandy, 57. Peace between them, 59. Robert relinquishes his pretensions to the crown, *ib.* Henry ruins the barons of his brother's party, 60. Visits Normandy, and returns to England, 61. Expedition into Normandy, 62. Which he conquers, 63. Imprisons his brother Robert, 64. Spends two years in Normandy, 66. Five years of tranquillity, 67. Endeavours to get his brother's son into his hands, 68. Confederacy against him, 69. Which is defeated, 70, 71. His son, Prince William, drowned in returning from Normandy,



mandy, 72—74. Henry's second marriage, 75. Another confederacy against him defeated, 76. His daughter declared heir to Henry, 77. His death, 78. And character, 79, 80. Narrative of the dispute between Henry and Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury, relative to investitures, 293—303. The dispute compromised, 305, 306.

*Henry*, Prince, grandson of Henry I., is knighted by the King of Scotland, v. III. Obtains Normandy, Anjou, &c. *ib.* Marries Eleanor, heiress of Guienne, 112. Invades England, and makes peace with Stephen, 112—114.

— II., coronation of, v. 119. First measures of his government, wife and vigorous, 119, 120. Voyage into Normandy, 121. Returns to England, 122. Expedition into Wales, 123. Voyage to the Continent, and return, 124, 125. Expedition against Thoulouse, 126. Abandoned, 127. Prosecutes a vigorous war in France, 127, 128. Treaty of peace, 128. The war renewed, *ib.* Treaty of peace, 129. Interview with the King of France, 130. Henry returns to England, *ib.* His disputes with Thomas Becket, 131. 342, *et seq.* (And see *Thomas Becket.*) Voyages to Normandy, and return, 131, 132. Duke of Brittany resigns his dominions to Henry, 132. Imposes a tax on the English for relieving the Christians in Palestine, 133. War with France and truce, 133. Henry suppresses rebellions in Poitou, &c., 133, 134. Peace with France, 135. Crowns his son, Prince Henry, King, 135, 136. Takes Dermot, King of Leinster, under his protection, 137, 138. Issues proclamations against the expeditions of some English barons into Ireland, 141. Obtains a grant of Ireland from the Pope, 337. Henry undertakes an expedition thither, 141, 142. And conquers the country, 143. Returns to England, and voyage to Normandy, 143, 144. Conspiracy against him by his sons, 145—148. Wise conduct of Henry. War between Henry and the King of France, 149—151. Events of this war in Britain, 152—154. Arrival of Henry and visit to the tomb of Thomas Becket, 154. Negotiation of his ambassadors at Rome successful, 393. Accommodation between Henry and the court of Rome, 394, 395. Henry returns to Normandy, and raises the siege of Rouen, 157. Concludes an honourable peace, 158. His great lenity, 159. And kind treatment of his sons, 160. Seemingly perfect reconciliation between them, 160, 161. He sends his three sons to Poitou, 163. Pardons the Earl of Chester, and Leicester, 164. Holds a great council, at Marlborough, *ib.* Determines disputes between the Kings of Castile and Navarre, 165. Holds a parliament at Oxford, *ib.* Voyage to Normandy, and interview with the King of France, &c., 166. Returns to England, knights his son Geoffrey, 167. Punishes several sheriffs, *ib.* Determines disputes between the royal family of France, 168—170. His assize of arms, 169. Kindness to the Duke of Saxony, his son-in-law, 170. Prevents a rupture with his eldest son, 171. Rupture in the Royal family of England, 171, 172. Henry's grief, for the loss of his eldest son, 173. Further disputes between him and his sons, 174. Expedition against Wales, 174. Is invited to go to the Holy Land, 175, 176. Grants Huntingdon to the King of Scotland, and sends his son, Prince John, into Ireland, 176. Goes into Normandy, and reduces his son Richard to obedience, 176, 177. Holds a conference with the King of France, relative to the expedition to Palestine, 177. Returns to



to England, 178. War with France, 179. Concluded by a truce, 180. Takes the cross, 181. Returns to England and makes preparation for a crusade, 182. War breaks out on the Continent, in which Henry engages, 183. Conferences between the King of France and Henry, 183. Who is forsaken by his son Prince Richard, 184. And by John, 185. Death of Henry, *ib.* His character, 185—187. Amendment of the law in this reign, vi. 59.

*Henry*, Prince, son of Henry II., crowned King of England, v. 136. Conspires against his father, 146. His undutiful conduct to him, 147. Flees to France, 148. War in France, 148, 149. Peace restored, 158. Henry apparently reconciled to his father, 159—162. The King and nobility of Scotland do homage to Prince Henry, 162. Goes to France, 163. His suspicious conduct there, 164. His death, 172, 173.

— III., succeeds King John when a minor, and is crowned, vii. 2. Military transactions, 3. Peace between him and Prince Louis, 4. Declared of age, 5. War with France concluded by a truce, 6, 7. Assumes the government, 7. Quarrel between him and his brother, Prince Richard Earl of Cornwall, 7, 8. Unsuccessful expedition of Henry to the Continent, 8, 9. Discontents of the great barons, 11, 12. Marries Eleanor, Princess of Provence, and its consequences, 13, 14. Henry unpopular, *ib.* Unsuccessful expedition to France, 16. Holds, *ib.* Involves himself deeply in debt by his extravagance to his uterine brothers, 16, 17. Quarrels with the Earl of Leicester, 18. Confirms the Great Charter with much solemnity, 19, 20. Successful expedition into Gascony, 20, 21. Henry endeavours to deceive his parliament, 21, 22. Returns to England, 22. Accepts the crown of Sicily for his second son, 22, 23. Convenes a parliament, 23. Henry and the Pope oppress the clergy, who resist, 24, 25. Convenes another parliament, 27. Which abridges his authority, 28—30. Endeavours to regain his authority, 31. Dispute between Henry and the barons compromised, 32, 33. Pacification, 34. Another pacification, 35. Dispute between Henry and his barons, referred to the King of France, 36. War between Henry and his barons, 36, 37. Battle of Lewes, Henry defeated and taken prisoner, 38, 39. The *Mise*, or treaty of Lewes, 39. Violated by Leicester, 40. Battles of Kenelworth and Evesham, 44—46. Consequences of the latter, 47. Pacification with the Earl of Gloucester, 50. Death and character of Henry III., 52—56. His children, 56. The Great Charter, granted by him, in Latin, viii. 423—430. In English, 430—438.

— IV. (See *Hereford* and *Lancaster*,) accession of, vii. 366—368. His coronation ix. 2. Perplexities and dangers, 2—4. Makes the parliament an instrument of fixing him on the throne, 4, 5. Rewards his friends, 5, 6. Courts the clergy and people, 6. Sends ambassadors to France and Scotland, *ib.* Conspiracy against him, 7. Discovered and defeated, 8. Conspirators punished, 9. Henry in danger of losing his French dominions, 10. Expedition into Scotland and return, 11. Revolt of Owen Glendour, 12. Negotiations with France, *ib.* Marries his daughter, 13. War with Wales, 13—15. The Scots defeated, 16. Henry forbids the ransoming of prisoners, 16, 17. Conspiracy

of the Earl of Northumberland and others against him, 17. They take arms, 18. Battle of Shrewsbury, 19. The Earl of Northumberland disbands his army, 20. Is pardoned, 21. Henry's dangers and deliverances, 21, 22. Suppresses a rebellion of the Archbishop of York and others, 22—24. Ill successes in Wales, 26, 27. The war in Wales prosecuted by his son, 29. Henry almost taken by pirates, *ib.* Battle of Bramham-Moor, 30. Transactions in the North, 31. Reduction of the Welsh, 31, 32. Transactions on the Continent, 32—34. Henry's expedition into France, 34. Death of Henry, 34, 35. His unhappiness, 35. His character, 35, 36.

*Henry V.*, accession of, to the English throne, ix. 36. His youthful frolics, 37. Change of conduct, 38. Determines to claim the crown of France, 40. That claim not well-founded, 41. Prepares for war, 42. Besieges and takes Harfleur, 43. Garrisons it, and returns to England, 44. Dangerous situation of his army, 45, 46. Their march from Harfleur to Agincourt, 46, 47. How the English spent the night before the battle, 48. And the French, *ib.* Orders of battle, 49, 50. The battle of Agincourt gained by Henry, 51, 52. Return in triumph to England, 53. Alliance with the Duke of Burgundy, 54. Truce with France, 55. Second invasion of France, 56. Military operations of the English, 58. Wise policy of Henry, 59. Negotiations, 61. Rouen surrendered to him, 62, 63. His interview with the French court, 63, 64. Perplexed situation, 65. Treaties of Arras and Troyes, 67. Henry's marriage, 68. Takes Melun, *ib.* His entry into Paris, 69. Further operations in France, 70. Takes Meaux, 71. His sickness, 72. Death, 73. Character, 74.

— *VI.*, accession of, to the throne, ix. 75. A protector and council appointed, 76. State of English affairs in France, 77. The French swear fealty to him, 79. Military operations in France, 80. English defeated, 81. Victory over the French, at the battle of Vernueil, 82, 83. Discord between the English and their allies, 83, 84. Between the English ministers, 85. Siege of Orleans, 88, 89. Raised, 94. French defeated at the battle of Herrings, 90, 91. The English defeated at the battle of Patay, 97, 98. Henry crowned at London and Paris, 101, 102. Military operations in France, 106. The English discontented, 107. Divisions in the English councils, in consequence of the Duke of Bedford's death, 111. Successes of the English in Normandy, under the Duke of York, 113. Negotiations for peace, fruitless, 116. Harfleur retaken from the French, 119. Military operations in France, 120, 121. 124. Henry's marriage, 128. Character of his Queen, 129. Her violent proceedings, 129, 132. Duke of York aspires to the crown, 133. Normandy lost to England, 135, 136. Insurrections in England, 137. 139—142. Civil wars between the Duke of York and Henry VI., 152. First battle of St. Alban's, and the royal forces defeated, 152—154. England invaded by the French, 157. Apparent coalition of parties, *ib.* Riot in London, 158. Yorkists defeated at the battle of Blore-heath, 159, 160. Henry defeated at the battle of Northampton, 161. Claims of Henry and the Duke of York to the crown discussed by parliament, 165, 166. Distracted state of England, 166. England invaded by Queen Margaret, 167. Royal party



party triumphant at the battle of Wakefield, 168, 169. Defeated at the battle of Mortimer's Cross, 169, 170. Henry's Queen victorious at the battle of St. Alban's, 170. She recovers her husband, 171. Henry dethroned by parliament, 173. Royal party defeated at the battle of Towton, 177, 178. Henry flees into Scotland, 178. His cause desperate, 182. Defeated at the battles of Sedgely Moor and Hexham, 185. Secreted in the county of Lancaster, 186. Henry VI. taken prisoner, and conducted to London, with every mark of disgrace, 191, 192. Distress of the Lancastrians, 133. Plan for restoring him, 207. Henry restored, 211. His forces defeated at the battle of Barnet, 218, 219. And again at Tewkesbury, 222. Death of Henry VI., 223. His character, 174. Was no usurper, 175.

*Henry VII.*, accession of, xi. 1. Defects of his title, 2. Imprisons the Earl of Warwick, 3. Joy at his accession, *ib.* Enters London, 4. Promises to marry the Lady Elizabeth, *ib.* His coronation, *ib.* Attainders of his partisans reversed by parliament, 5. Settlement of the crown on him, 5, 6. Attaints the friends of Richard III., 6, 7. Issues a general pardon, 7. Marries the Lady Elizabeth, 8. Prolongs the truces with France and Scotland, *ib.* Suppresses an insurrection, 9. Prince Arthur born, 10. Henry's hatred of the Yorkists and its effects, 10, 11. Lambert Simnel personates the Earl of Warwick in Ireland, 12. And is proclaimed King, *ib.* Henry alarmed, 13. Confines the Queen-dowager, 14. Exhibits the Earl of Warwick in London, 14, 15. Simnel is crowned, 15. Advances into Yorkshire, and is defeated at the battle of Stoke, 16. Henry punishes the delinquents, 17. His motives for convening a parliament, 17, 18. His Queen crowned, 19. Truce with France, 20. His policy with regard to Brittany, 22. Sends some English troops to Brittany, 23. Threatens war with France, 25. His ungenerous behaviour to the Bretons, 27. Henry prepares for war with France, 28. Invades France, 29. Makes peace, 31, 32. Is unpopular at home, 33. His throne shaken by the appearance of a new pretender to the crown, 34. See *Warbeck*. Difficulty of discovering the truth, 34—36. Henry endeavours to prove the death of the Duke of York, 63. And to discover Warbeck, 37, 38. Orders Sir William Stanley to be beheaded, 39. Receives a pecuniary grant from his parliament, for a war with Scotland, 49. Suppresses an insurrection in Cornwall, 50, 51. England invaded by the Scots, 52. Truce between Henry and the Scots, 53. Suppresses Warbeck, 55—57. Causes him to be executed, 58. And also the Earl of Warwick, 59. Goes to Calais, to avoid the pestilence in England, 60. Contracts his sister to the King of Scotland, 61. And his son Arthur to Catherine of Arragon, who is soon after married to him, 61, 62. Henry's mean arts of getting money, 62—66. His arts of saving money, 66. Death of Prince Arthur, 67. Contracts Arthur's widow to his second son, 68—70. Loses his Queen, 69. Concludes a treaty of marriage with Margaret, Duchess dowager of Savoy, 73. Contracts his daughter Mary to Charles Prince of Castile, 73, 74. Prepares for death, 74. His last will, 74—76. Death, 76. And character, 76—78. His accession favourable to trade, xii. 303, 304. Promoted colonies, 318. Account



of his treasures, 319, 320. Curious extracts from an account book of his, 467—470.

*Henry VIII.*, accession of, to the throne, xi. 78. His wife measures, 78, 79. Marries the Princess Catherine, his brother's widow, 79, 80. Punishes informers, 81. His coronation, *ib.* Death of his grandmother, 82. Confirms treaties with France, Spain, and Scotland, *ib.* Convenes a parliament, 85, 86. Concludes a treaty with Louis XII., 86. Birth of a son, who died soon after, 87. Snares laid for Henry by his father-in-law and the Pope, 88. Joins the league against France, 90. Perfidy of Ferdinand, 91. Sends an expedition into Spain, which Ferdinand employs for his own benefit, 93, 94. Parliament grants Henry pecuniary supplies, 95. Confederacy against France, 96. Perfidy of the confederates, 97. Henry prepares for a war with Scotland, 98. Sends an expedition into France, 99. Gains the battle of Spurs, and captures Tiruenne, 100. Takes Tournay, 101. Lives splendidly there, and enters into a new confederacy against the King of France, 101, 102. Returns to England, 103. His success unprofitable, 103, 104. Perfidy of the Pope and his other confederates, 104, 105. Concludes a treaty of peace and marriage with the King of France, 106, —109. His sister Mary married to Louis XII., 110. Convenes a parliament, 110—112. Concludes treaties with Francis I., 113. A treaty with the Emperor Maximilian, which produces no advantage, 118. Convenes a parliament, which refuses him supplies, 119. Birth of the Princess Mary, 121. Joins another league against France, 122. Treaty with Francis I. of peace, and marriage, 126. Henry courted by Francis I. 129. Receives a visit from the Emperor Charles V. 131, 132. Henry and his court proceed to Guisnes, 132. Splendour of the English court, 133. First interview of Henry with Francis, 135. Second interview, 137. Splendid tilts and tournaments, &c. mutually given, 137, 138. Henry has an interview with the Emperor, 139. Returns to England, 140. Mediates peace between the Emperor and the King of France, 143, 144. Publishes a treatise against Luther, and obtains a new title from the Pope, 145. Congress at Calais, 146. Visited by the Emperor, whom he splendidly entertains, 150. Hostilities between France and England, 151. Henry declares war against France, 151, 152. Treaties between Henry and the Emperor, 152, 153. Maritime expedition to the coast of France, 154. Obtains loans and benevolences from his subjects, 155. Invades France, 156. Convenes a parliament, and endeavours to obtain a subsidy, but in vain, 157—160. Gets a grant from the clergy, 160. Military operations in France, 164. 166—168. Henry changes his disposition towards Francis, 170. Sends an embassy to Spain, 174. Which is coldly received, 177. Concludes peace with France, 178. Henry writes to the Emperor, 179. Receives a letter from Francis I. announcing his liberation from captivity, 186. Sends ambassadors to him, 187. Treaty with Francis, 192. Sends Wolsey on an embassy into France, 198. Rejects the Emperor's offers, 199. Treaties with France, 200. Entertains scruples relative to the legality of his marriage with Catherine, 204, 205. Is fully convinced of its illegality, 206, 207. Discloses his intentions of a divorce, 207, 208. Sends his secretary to Rome, 208. Who applies

applies to the Pope, 209. Negotiations concerning this affair, 210. Falls in love with Anne Boleyn, 211, 212. Sends an embassy to Rome, 212, 213. Declares war against Charles V., 214. Negotiation of his ambassadors with the Pope, 216. Obtains bulls for determining the question of divorce, 217, 218. Cardinal Campegius arrives in England, 219. Refusal of Campegius and the Pope to deliver the decretal bull, 220. Henry's speech on this occasion, 221. He sends another embassy to the Pope, 223. Who deceives him, 223, 224. Epistolary correspondence with Rome, 225, 226. Further proceedings of the legates relative to the divorce, 228, 229. Henry deceived by them, 229, 230. His cause avocated to Rome, 230, 231. Becomes discontented with his great favourite Wolsey, 231. And is in great perplexity, 232. Adopts Cranmer's advice, and lays the question of the legality of his marriage before the universities of Europe, 233, 234. Their decrees, 251. Fall of Wolsey, 234—250. Henry applies to the Pope, 252. Lays the decrees of the universities before parliament, 253. Circulates books on the divorce among his subjects, 254. Cultivates alliances with France and the protestant princes of Germany, 255. Humbles the clergy, 255, 256. Treaty and interview with Francis I., 257—258. Objects of that interview, 258. Marries Anne Boleyn, 259. Sentence of divorce declared, 260, 261. Which is reversed by the Pope, 262. Sends an embassy to Francis, 263. Who attempts to prevail on the Pope to alter his decree, 265. The Pope pronounces Henry's first marriage good, 265, 266. Reflections on this business, 267, 268. Separation of England from Rome, 268, 269. Henry proclaims himself supreme head of the English church, 272. And assumes that title, 273. His precautions against the machinations of the Pope, 276, 277. His little sensibility on Queen Catherine's death, 278. Negotiations with Charles V., 279. Fruitless, 280. Monasteries dissolved by parliament, *ib.* Negotiations with the protestant princes of Germany, 281. Sends Queen Anne Boleyn to the Tower, 282. Is divorced from her, 289. Causes her to be beheaded, 290, 291. Marries Jane Seymour, 293. Is reconciled to his daughter the Princess Mary, 293, 294. Flattered by parliament, 294. Act of succession, 295, 296. Insurrection in Lancashire suppressed, 296, 297. And another in Yorkshire, 298. Suppressed by negotiation, 300, 301. Insurrection in Cumberland, suppressed, 302, 303. Prince Edward born, 304. The Queen dies, 304, 305. Negotiation with the protestant princes continued, 305, 306. Papal bulls fulminated in vain, against him, 306, 307. Convenes a parliament which passes the statute of the six articles, 309, 310. Numerous attainders and executions, 311. Prepares against invasion, 311, 312. Marries the Lady Anne of Cleves, 312. But is discontented, 313. Convenes a parliament, and obtains a subsidy, 315. Dissolves the order of knights of St. John of Jerusalem in England, 316. Commission to try his marriage, 321. Is divorced from the Lady Anne, 322—324. The sentence confirmed by parliament, 324. Marries the Lady Catherine Howard, 325. Treaty with France, 327. Goes on a progress to the north, but the King of Scotland does not meet him, 327, 328. Information against the Queen, who is convicted



- of dissolute behaviour, and beheaded, 328—334. War with Scotland, 336. Treaty with the Emperor against France, *ib.* Obtains a subsidy, 339, 340. Negotiates a treaty of marriage with the Scots, for his son and the Princess Mary of Scotland, 337, 341, 342. Marries Lady Catherine Parr, 342, 343. War with France, 343. Breach with Scotland, 345, 346. Settles the succession, 347. Invades Scotland, 348. Treaty with the Earl of Lennox, 349, 350. Takes Boulogne, 351. Has recourse to a benevolence, 354. The French make descents on England, but are repulsed, 355. Obtains further grants from parliament, 357. Military operations in France, 358. Peace with Francis I., 358, 359. The Queen in danger, 360, 361. Imprisons the Duke of Norfolk, and the Earl of Surry, 361, 362. Causes the Earl of Surry to be beheaded, 363. And the Duke of Norfolk to be attainted, 364. Makes his last will, 365, 366. His death, 367. Marriages, 367, 368. View of his character and acquirements, 368—372. Account of his work against Luther, xii. 21, 22. Ecclesiastical events of his reign. — Henry resolves to break with the Pope, 37. His plans supported by parliament, 38—40. Declared supreme head of the church, 40, 41. Annats given to him, 41. Breach between Rome and England, 47, 48. Precautions of Henry, to reconcile his subjects to his changes in the church, 49—52. Dislikes the monks, 55. Totally abolishes the monasteries, 67—71. Abolishes many holidays, 74. Removes images from the churches, 78—80. Account of his book, intitled “The necessary Erudition of a Christian Man,” 86—88. Of Henry’s Primer, 98, 99. Attempts to ruin the constitution, 163, 164. His great power, 164—168. Perverted the law, 169. His government sanguinary, 170. Encouraged commerce, 330—333. Copy of the receipts of his exchequer, 454—466.
- Henry VI.* Emperor of Germany, gets possession of Richard I., v. 211. Negotiations with, for his deliverance, 213, 214. Henry meanly accuses Richard to the diet, 214. Treaty for Richard’s deliverance concluded, 215, 216.
- Heptarchy*, Saxon, gradual formation of, iii. 5—12. The heptarchy completed, 13. Subdivisions of the several kingdoms of which the heptarchy consisted, 311. See *East Anglia*, *Essex*, *Kent*, *Mercia*, *Northumberland*, *Suffex*, *Wessex*.
- Heraclius* patriarch of Jerusalem, visits England, v. 175. Endeavours to excite Henry II. to an expedition into the Holy Land, 175, 176. Who declines to comply with his intreaties, 407.
- Hercla*, Andrew de, executed for treason against Edward, ii. 161.
- Hereford*, Henry Duke of, quarrels with the Duke of Norfolk, vii. 358. Their duel prohibited, 359. Banished for ten years, *ib.* Succeeds to his father in the dukedom of Lancaster, 360. See *Lancaster*.
- Heresy*, some persons condemned and punished for, in the reign of Henry II., v. 338. Several persons burnt for, in the reign of Henry VIII., xii. 31—36. 91. 105—107. Persecutions in Scotland, 124—128. 133—140.
- Heriot*, what, in the Anglo-Saxon law, vi. 9.
- Heriford*, council of, iii. 207, 208.



- Hexham*, battle of, ix. 185, 186.
- Holidays*, many abolished by Henry VIII., xii. 74.
- Homage*, how performed in feudal times, vi. 13.
- Honorius*, Archbishop of Canterbury, divides England into dioceses and parishes, iii. 200, 201.
- Honour*, point of, highly regarded by the Anglo-Normans, vi. 337.
- Horesti*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 287.
- Horses*, exported from England, in the reign of Athelstan, iv. 239. In the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 269. Breed of, regulated by parliament in the 16th century, xii. 268, 269.
- Hospitality* of the ancient Britons, ii. 302, 303. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 334, 335. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 376, 377. In the 15th century, x. 287—290. Of the clergy, in the 16th century, xii. 358, 359.
- Houses* of the ancient Britons, account of, ii. 114.
- Hoveden*, Roger, the historian, character of, vi. 141.
- Howard*, Lady Catherine, married by Henry VIII., xi. 325. Information against her for incontinence, 328. The Queen detested, 329. Sent to the tower, 330, 331. Attainted and beheaded, 332—334. Curious clauses in the bill for attainting her, 334.
- Howel Dha*, King of Wales, wife reign of, iii. 108, 109.
- Hubert*, Bishop of Salisbury, chosen primate, v. 426. Disputes with the monks of Canterbury, about the erection of a new church at Lambeth, 428—430. Obligated to submit, 431. His death, 435.
- Hubert de Burgh*, high justiciary, chosen joint regent with Peter de Roches, Bishop of Winchester, vii. 4. Conduct of the new regents, 5. Procures Henry III. to be declared of age, *ib.* Reduces the refractory barons, 6. His fall, 9. 10. Retires from public affairs, 11.
- Hugo*, Cardinal, legate in England, rapacity of, v. 401.
- Human victims*, sacrificed by the ancient Britons, i. 168, 169. And by the Saxons, iii. 381.
- Hume*, Alexander, Lord, procures the Duke of Albany to be chosen regent of Scotland, xi. 445. Conspires against him, 451. Flees to England, 452. Is imprisoned, 453. Remarks on his conduct, 453, 454. Is released, and rebels again, 454, 455. Comprehended in a truce, on what terms, 455. Executed, 459.
- Hundredary*, an Anglo-Saxon magistrate, powers of, iii. 339. Jurisdiction of the hundred-court, 340.
- Hunne*, Richard, prosecuted for non-payment of a mortuary, xii. 14. Sues the priest for a premonition, 14. Is murdered, 15. Burnt for heresy, after death, 15, 16. His effects restored to his children, 16.
- Hunting*, origin of, ii. 99. Pursued by the ancient Britons, 99, 100. A favourite diversion of theirs, 369. iv. 96. Instruments in hunting, ii. 370, 371. A favourite amusement of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 400. And of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 373. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 418. Hunting in Scotland in the 16th century, xii. 381, 382.
- Huntington*. See *Henry of Huntington*.

## I.

- ICENI**, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief towns in, i. 261—263.  
ii. 410, 411.
- Ignorance**, prevalent throughout England in the 15th century, x. 111.  
Causes thereof, wars, 112. Learning neither valued nor rewarded,  
112—114. Schism in the church, 114. The scarcity of books, 115,  
116. General prevalence of, in the 16th century, before the Reforma-  
tion, xii. 198, 200.
- Illuminations** of books in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 226, 227. In  
the 15th century, x. 213, 214.
- Images** of the Saxon deities, iii. 183. Of the saints, removed from the  
churches, xii. 78—80.
- Image-worship**, controversy concerning, in the eighth century, iii. 233—  
236.
- Imitative arts**, universal, ii. 159.
- Imports** into antient Britain before the Roman conquest, account of, ii.  
204, 205. 208. After the Roman conquest, 227, 228. During the  
time of the Saxons, iv. 240, 241. Nature of, in the 11th and 12th  
centuries, vi. 272—278. In the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 339,  
340. In the 15th century, x. 250, 251.
- Ina**, King of Wessex, reign of, iii. 41—44. Retires into a monastery, 44.
- Increment**, what, in payments of money, vi. 300.
- Infantry**, ancient British, and their arms, account of, ii. 144, 145.
- Ingulph**, Abbot of Croyland, account of his life and writings, vi. 123—  
125.
- Innocent III.** threatens John with excommunication, v. 240. Deposes  
him, 245. Is reconciled to him, 246. Commands the King of France  
to desist from his intended invasion of England, 247. Condemns the  
Great Charter, 256. And excommunicates the barons, 257. His au-  
dacious conduct towards Richard I., 430, 431. Bestows the revenues  
of the see of St. David's, on Giraldus Cambrensis, 431. Imposes a tax  
on all the clergy of the English church, for a croisade, 432. Publishes  
a croisade, 433, 434. His violent conduct in the election of an arch-  
bishop of Canterbury, 437, 438. Consecrates Langton archbishop,  
at Rome, 439. Reply to a letter of King John, 440. Lays the  
kingdom under an interdict, 441. And excommunicates John, 442.  
Deposes him, and excommunicates all his adherents, 444. Commits  
the execution of his sentence to the King of France, 445. Who pre-  
pares to invade England, but is obliged to desist, 445, 446. Neglects  
the interest of his tools, 446. Takes off the interdict, 448. Suspends  
the primate, 449. Convenes a council at Rome, 449, 450. Changes  
produced by King John's subjection to the Pope, viii. 1. Innocent  
friendly to Henry III., 2. His scheme for getting money, 3, 4.
- **IV.**, Pope, his exactions opposed by the barons and English  
clergy, viii. 7—10. Bold remonstrance of the Bishop of Lincoln to,  
10—12. Enormous exactions of, 14, 15. His oppressions of the  
English church, 17, 18.
- Insurrections**, various, against Richard II., account of, vii. 306—316.  
Against



- Against Henry VI. ix. 137. 139—142. Against Henry VII., suppressed, xi. 9. Against Henry VIII. suppressed, xi. 292—303.
- Intemperance* in eating and drinking, of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 341, 342.
- Interest* for money, prohibited to Christians in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 280. Exorbitant, taken by Jews, 280. High rates of interest, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 350, 351. Rate of interest, fixed in the reign of Henry VIII., 337.
- Inulf*, King of Scotland, reign of, iii. 112, 113. Defeated and slain by the Danes, 113.
- Investitures*, extravagant declaration of the Pope concerning, v. 287, 288. 292, 293. Dispute between Henry I. and Archbishop Anselm, concerning them, 293—298. Papal decree against the King's right of granting them, 299, 300. Further proceedings concerning them, 301—303. The dispute compromised, 305, 306.
- Iron*, red hot, ordeal of, iii. 434. This ordeal not dangerous, 435—437.
- Iron-mines* of antient Britain, notice of, ii. 138. Iron exported from, by the Romans, 218.
- Ireland*, divided into five kingdoms, v. 138. Expedition of English barons into, 139, 140. Proclamation of Henry II. against them, 141. Henry's expedition thither, 141, 142. Its conquest completed, 143.
- Isabella*, Queen of Edward II., sent to France and makes a treaty, vii. 164. She refuses to return to England, 166. Her intrigue with Mortimer, *ib.* She invades England, 168. Publishes a manifesto and is joined by many, 169. Deposes her husband, 173. And procures him to be murdered, 176. Confined to her house, by Edward III., 191.
- Isca Silurum*. See *Caer Leon*.
- Istep*, Simon, elected archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 58. His constitutions, 58, 59. Death of, 62.

## J.

- JAMES**, Prince, son of Robert III., seized by the English, and imprisoned, ix. 293. Is acknowledged king, *ib.*
- I., King of Scotland, ill-treated during his captivity, ix. 296, 297. Duke of Albany appointed regent, 293. Ineffectual negotiations for his deliverance, 297. Treaty between Henry V. and James, 298. Hostilities on the borders, 299. Scots assist the French, *ib.* Henry V. attempts to detach the Scots from their French alliance, 301, 302. Treaty for his deliverance, 303—304. His captivity acknowledged to be illegal, 305. List of hostages delivered for fulfilment of the treaty, 306, 308. King James married, 307. Rigour of the English council, 309. Truce with England, *ib.* King James arrives in Scotland, 309, 310. Crowned, 310. State of his affairs, *ib.* Holds a parliament, 311. Discontents at the tax levied, *ib.* James destroys the Albany family, 310. The youngest son of the Duke of Albany raises an insurrection against him, 312. Holds a parliament, and makes wise laws, 313. Keeps his court at Inverness, 314. And suppresses the marauding chieftains, *ib.* Imprisons and liberates the Earl of Ross, *ib.*
- Treaty



Treaty with France, 315. Has an interview with the Cardinal Bishop of Winchester, 316. Suppresses two insurrections, 317. Two sons born to him, *ib.* Truce with England, 318. His wife policy, 318, 319. Resumes the earldoms of March, 319, 320. And of Strathmore, 320. His daughter Margaret married to the Dauphin, 322. Action at Pepperdin, *ib.* James besieges Roxburgh, 322. Is murdered, 324. Character of James I., 324, 325. His assassins punished, 326. His issue, *ib.* Improved the laws of his kingdom, x. 94, 95. A lover of literature, and general scholar, 139—141. His poetical commendation of Chaucer and Gower, x. 214, 215. Account of his poetical works with specimens, 216—223. Improved the secular music of Scotland, 231, 232.

James II., King of Scotland, accession of, ix. 327. Administration formed during his minority, *ib.* Truce with England, 327, 328. Confusions arise, 328. The King brought to Stirling, *ib.* Council at Stirling, 329. Reconciliation between the Governor and Chancellor of Scotland, 330. Deplorable state of Scotland, 331. The Queen-mother confined, 332. James II. carried off from Stirling, 332, 333. Livingston and Crichton reconciled, 333. Earl of Douglas killed, 334. Young Earl of Douglas in favour, 335. Livingston and Crichton proscribed, 336. Lord Crichton restored, 337. Death of the Queen-mother, 338. Greatness of the Douglasses, 338, 339. James II. married, 339. Scotland invaded by the English, who are defeated, 340. Truces, 341. Violence of the Earl of Douglas, 342. Visits Rome, *ib.* Is prosecuted, 343. Returns to Scotland, 343, 344. Obtains a protection in England, 344. Disloyal conduct of the Earl of Douglas, 345. James kills him, 346. Rage of the Douglas family, 347. They conclude a treaty with England, 348. Marriage of the Earl of Douglas, 350. James besieges the castle of Abercorn, 351. Douglas ruined, 351, 352. James defeats the Earl of Douglas, 353. Convenes a parliament, 353, 354. Rebellion and invasion of Donald, Lord of the Isles, suppressed, 355. Letters between James and the English court, 356. Holds parliaments, 356, 357. Truce between England and Scotland prolonged, 357, 358. Is accidentally killed at the siege of Roxburgh, 359. His character, 359, 360. And issue, 360. Roxburgh taken, *ib.* Improved the laws of Scotland, x. 95, 96.

— III., accession of, to the throne of Scotland, ix. 361. Council of Regency appointed, *ib.* Transactions of Henry VI. in Scotland, 362. Negotiations with Edward IV., 363. Rebellion in Scotland, 364. Incurfion into England, 365. Long truce with England, 366. Duke of Albany, the King's brother, taken and released, *ib.* Long truce with England, 367, 368. The King taken from Linlithgow by the Boydes, 369, 370. Sanctions their conduct in a parliament, 371. James contracted to Margaret, Princess of Norway, 373. And married, 378. Negotiations with England, 380. Breach of the truce between England and Scotland, 384. James's progress impeded by a stratagem, 385. Prepares for war with Edward IV., 386. His favourites hanged, 390, 391. Progress of the English arms, 392. Loses his Queen Margaret, 397. Truce with England, 400, 401. The Humes and Hepburns disaffected towards James, 402. Recovers

Dunbar

Dunbar castle from the English, 402, 403. Truce and treaty with Henry VII., 403, 404. Conspiracy against him, 407. Rebellion, 408. James retreats to the North, 409. His eldest son delivered to the rebels, 410. Pacification of Blackness, 410, 411. Negotiations with Henry VIII., 412. Marches to Stirling, 413. Battle of Stirling, James defeated and slain, *ib.* His character, 414—416. His death concealed for some time, xi. 374.

James IV., accession and coronation of, xi. 374. His father's opponents acquitted in parliament, 376, 377. Insurrection, 377. Peace restored, 378. Wise regulations of his parliament, for extinguishing differences, 379, 380. Truce with England renewed, 384, 385. Disregards the offers of Henry VIII., 387. Receives Perkin Warbeck, 45, 46. His conduct accounted for, 388. Truce between the two kingdoms, 389. Skirmish at Norham, 390. Marriage proposed between him and the Princess Margaret, daughter of Henry VII., 391, 392. Treaty of marriage and of peace concluded, 393, 394. Preliminaries of marriage settled, 396. The marriage celebrated, 397, 398. Wise laws of his parliament, 399. Long peace with England, 400. Supports the Duke of Guelders, and prevents him from being invaded, 401. Interposes in behalf of the King of Denmark, 404. Policy of France and Scotland, 405. Punishes some Dutch pirates, 407. Goes on a pilgrimage to the shrine of St. Dulhacks, 409. Receives a legate from Rome, *ib.* Disputes with Portugal, 410. Treaty of peace confirmed with Henry VIII., 411. Sea-fight between his ships and the English fleet, 412. Complains to the English court, 413. Greatly provoked by Henry, 414. Concludes a treaty of alliance with France, 416. Embassy sent to him by Henry VIII., 417. James sends an embassy to Denmark, 418. James chosen knight to the Queen of France, 420. Apprehensive of war with England, 422. Sends an army and a fleet to France, 424. Sends a letter of complaint to Henry VIII., 426. Reply thereto, 427. Stratagem employed to dissuade him from war with England, 428. Invades England, and takes some castles, 429. Opposed by the Earl of Surry, 430. Defiance, 431. Advice of the Scots nobility to him, 431, 432. Encamp at Flodden, 432. Whence he is attempted to be dislodged by a stratagem, 433. March of the English, 434. The two armies in presence, *ib.* The battle of Flodden, 435, 436. Great loss of the Scots, and death of King James, 437. Who is buried at Sheen, 438, 439. Character of James IV., 439, 440. His issue, 440, 441.

— V., King of Scotland, accession of, xi. 441. State of Scotland at this period, 441, 442. His mother appointed regent, 442. Peace with England, 444. Duke of Albany chosen governor, 444—446. Deplorable state of his kingdom, 446. The Duke of Albany arrives, 447. Conspiracy, 451, 452. Rebellion, 453, 454. Truce, 455. The Duke of Albany, Governor of Scotland, goes to France, 460. His wife precautions to prevent mischief frustrated, 462. Truce with England prolonged, *ib.* Disorders in Scotland, *ib.* Skirmishes in Edinburgh, 463. Consequences thereof, 464. The Duke of Albany returns, 465. The English party broken, 466. Letter from Henry VIII. to the Scots parliament, and their reply, 469, 470. Preparations



- tions for war, 471, 472. Expedition into England and truce, 473. Albany goes to France, 474. Hostility renewed, *ib.* Albany returns, *ib.* Expedition into England, 475, 476. Albany leaves Scotland, 477. Correspondence with England, 478. Queen-dowager assumes the regency, 479. James V. declared to be of age by the Scottish parliament, 480. Embassy to England, and treaty of marriage proposed with the Princess of England, 481. Animosity of parties, 482—484. James wishes to be set at liberty, 487. A fruitless attempt made to deliver him, 488. Battle of Melrose, 489, 490. And of Linlithgow bridge, 492—494. Scotland in a state of anarchy, 494, 495. Tranquillity restored, 495, 496. Escape of James from Falkirk, 496. Attempt to retake him frustrated, 497, 498. Three years of peace, 503, 504. Treaty of peace with England, 504. James resolves to marry, 505. Sends an embassy to France, 506. Embassy to James from England, 507. And from Rome, 508. James visits the isles, 509, 510. Confines certain chieftains, 510. Visits France, 511. And marries the Princess Magdalene, 512. Returns to Scotland, 513. Death of his Queen, *ib.* Executions, 514. Marries the Princess Mary of Lorraine, 515. Embassy from England, 517. Interview proposed between James and Henry VIII., 519. But prevented, 521, 522. War with England, 523. Negotiations, 524. Manifesto of Henry against James, 525, 526. Scotland invaded, 526. Invades England, 528. His army in confusion, and dispersed, 529. Death of James, 530. Rigorously enforced the laws, xii. 172, 173.
- Jaqueline*, heiress of Hainault, deserts her husband, and is married to the Duke of Gloucester, ix. 84. Civil war between her and her subjects, 87. Her second marriage annulled, *ib.*
- Jeat-stone*, exported from Britain, ii. 219. Description of, 220.
- Jews*, slaughter of, at the coronation of Richard I., v. 189. Massacred in different parts of the kingdom, 193. vi. 266. Oppressive pecuniary impositions on them by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 40, 41. 279, 280. Great numbers of, settled in England, 266, 278. Lending money thrown into their hands, 280. Their cruelty to their debtors, 281. Severely punished by Edward I., vii. 69, 70. Banished out of England, 76.
- Joan of Arc*, surnamed the *Maid of Orleans*, account of, previously to her public life, ix. 92. Is received at the French court as divinely commissioned to deliver France, 93. Enters Orleans, 94. Causes the English to raise its siege, 94, 95. Her subsequent history, 95. And bold achievements, 96. Is ennobled, 100. Her trial, 103, 104. Sentenced to be burnt, 105. Her execution, 105, 106.
- John*, Prince, son of Henry II., joins the confederates against his father, v. 148. Is reconciled to him, 159. And kindly treated, 160. Is sent into Ireland, 177. Causes of his ill success there, 177, 178. Abandons his father, and deserts to his enemies, 185. Favours conferred on him by Richard I., 191. His conspiracy with the King of France against Richard defeated, 212. 216. Is pardoned by Richard, 218. His accession to the throne, 228. Is crowned, 230. War with France, *ib.* Prince Arthur delivered to him, and afterwards rescued, 231. Peace with France, and John's return to England, 231. Marries, 232. Receives



- ceives the homage of the King of Scotland, *ib.* Expedition to Guienne, 233. Takes Prince Arthur prisoner, 235. And murders him, 236. Brings his sister Eleanor to England, 237. His foreign dominions invaded by the King of France, *ib.* And almost all reduced by him, 238. John's oppressive government, 238, 239. His unsuccessful expedition to the Continent and return, 239. Quarrels with the Pope, 240. Leads an expedition against Scotland, and peace made, 241. John's government unpopular, 242. Reduces Ireland to his sway, 242, 243. Extorts money from the monks and nuns, 243. Expedition into Wales, *ib.* Discontents of the barons, 244. John deposed by the Pope, and deserted by many of his barons, 245. Preparations made in France for invading England, 246. John's preparations against the invaders, 247. Is reconciled to the Pope, and becomes his vassal, 248. The papal legate commands the King of France to desist from his intended invasion of England, 249. Engagement between the English and French fleets, 250. John's intended expedition to Normandy prevented this year, 251. His unsuccessful expedition to the Continent and return, 251, 252. Civil war between John and his barons, 253. John grants the Great Charter, 254. Is discontented with it, and prepares to recall it, 255. The Pope condemns it, and excommunicates the barons, 256. John takes Rochester castle, 256. Further progress of the civil war, *ib.* The barons offer the crown to Prince Louis of France, 257. Who lands with his army, takes Rochester castle, and enters London, 258. John in great distress, *ib.* Illness and death of John, 259, 260. Examination of his character, 260, 261. His issue, 262.
- John of Gaunt.* See *Lancaster.*
- *of Salisbury*, the historian, life and character of, vi. 144—146. Character of his Latin poetry, 235.
- *I.*, King of France, succeeds Philip de Valois, vii. 247. Fruitless negotiations for peace, 248. State of France in his reign, 249. Is defeated and taken prisoner by Edward the Black Prince, at the battle of Poitiers, 255—258. Brought to England, 259. Deplorable state of France, in consequence of his capture, 260—262. Liberated by the treaty of Bretigny, 266. Returns to England, and dies there, 270. France desolated by adventurers after his death, 270—272.
- Joseph of Arimathea*, fictitious account of his preaching the gospel in Britain, i. 198—200.
- *of Exeter*, character of his Latin poetry, vi. 237—239.
- Judges* tried and punished for misdemeanours by Edward I., viii. 118. Their salaries in the 15th century, x. 70, 71. Venality of, accounted for, 72.
- Judicial combat*, trial by, introduced by the Normans, vi. 45. Judicial combat in a criminal cause, 46. In a civil cause, 47. Desperate one in Scotland, in the reign of Robert III., vii. 373.
- Judicial proceedings* of the antient Britons, how conducted, i. 304—307.
- Jugglers* of the 14th century, account of, viii. 421, 422.
- Julius II.*, Pope, character of, xi. 88. His scheme against France, 89. His perfidy, 104, 105.
- Jury*, trial by, when introduced, vi. 48. Favoured by Henry ii. 62.

- Jutes*, one of the nations from whom the English are descended, iii. 303.  
 Account of, 303, 304.
- Justice*, courts of, among the Anglo-Saxons, account of, iii. 340, *et seq.*  
 Hundred court, 340. Burgemote court, 341. Trithing court, 341, 342. Shiregemote, 347, 348. County courts, 349. The wittenagemote, 368—376.
- , courts of, in the Norman reigns, vi. 22, *et seq.* Baron's court, 22. County court, 23, 24. Ecclesiastical courts, 25. King's court, *ib.* Divisions of the King's court, 27. Its jurisdiction and splendour, 27, 28.
- , courts of judicature, in the reign of Edward I., viii. 113, 114. Common Pleas, 114. King's Bench, *ib.* Chancery, 115. Exchequer, 116. These courts sometimes removed, *ib.* State of the courts in the reign of Edward II., 130, 131.
- , Scottish courts of, in the 15th century, x. 103. Court of session 104. Of justiciary, 104, 105. Of chamberlain, 105. Of the four boroughs, 105, 106. In the 16th century, xii. 179. Justice-aires, 179, 180. Daily council, 181, 182. College of justice, 183—186. Nobile officium, 176, 177.
- , ill-administered in England, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 383, 384. Corrupt administration of, in the 15th century, x. 71, 72.
- Justices*, itinerant, institution of, vi. 61, 62.
- of assize, functions of, viii. 116.
- of trail baston, powers and duties of, viii. 117.
- of the peace, instituted by Edward I. viii. 118.

## K.

- KENELWORTH*, battle of, vii. 45, 46.
- Kennedy*, James, Bishop of St. Andrew's, death and character of, ix. 368. Reformed the Scottish church, x. 46.
- Kenneth*, accession of, to the throne of Scotland, iii. 84. Expedient of, to persuade his subjects to a war with the Picts, 85. Defeats them, 86.
- II., reign of, iii. 114. Defeats the Danes, 114, 115. Death of, 115.
- Kent*, kingdom of, when founded, iii. 5. Succession of its kings, 6, 7. History of, 39. Situation of this kingdom, 307, 308.
- Kilwarby*, Robert, Archbishop of Canterbury, election of, viii. 16. Created a cardinal, and resigns his see, 19, 20.
- Kingdoms*, antient, account of, into which Britain was divided, when invaded by the Romans, i. 240—291. ii. 402—415. Government thereof. See *Government*.
- Kings*, antient British, rules of their succession to the throne, i. 294—296. Prerogatives of, 297. Commanded their armies in war, 298—301. Authority of, diminished in times of peace, 301. Revenues of, 307.
- , Anglo-Saxon, origin of, iii. 350, 351. Rules of their succession, 351. The crown hereditary, but not strictly, 352. Hereditary after the establishment of the monarchy, 354. Duties of Anglo-Saxon kings, 355. To administer justice, *ib.* Executed this part of their office by



- deputy, 356. Commanded the army in time of war, 357. Their prerogatives, 358. Had no power to make laws or impose taxes, 359. Assembled the Wittenagemots, *ib.* Had not the sole power of peace and war, 360. Exercised military discipline, 360, 361. Had not the power of pardoning, 361. And of nominating magistrates, *ib.* Could not alienate the crown lands, *ib.* Their ecclesiastical authority, 362. Did not bestow nominal titles, 363. Coined money, *ib.* Their revenues, 363—368.
- Kings, English*, exercised a dispensing power with regard to the laws, in the 15th century, x. 85, 86. Their prerogatives. See *Prerogatives*. Offices in their gift, 88, 89. Distinction between a king *de facto* and a king *de jure*, when first recognized, 89.
- King's Bench*, court of, when first erected, viii. 114, 115.
- *College Chapel*, Cambridge, plan of, according to its founder's will, x. 181, 182.
- Knapwell*, Richard, a dominican friar, censured for heresy, viii. 22—24.
- Knights*, how created by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 359. And by the Anglo-Normans, vi. 324—326. Their qualifications and duties, 327.
- *Templars* prosecuted, viii. 42—44. Their order dissolved, 45.
- *of St. John of Jerusalem*, order of, dissolved in England, xi. 316.

## L.

- L****ABOUR**, division of, in the 15th century, x. 185, 186. Wretched condition of labourers in agriculture, 170, 271.
- Laggan* or rocking-stones of the Druids in Cornwall, account of, ii. 37—39.
- Lambert*, burnt for heresy, xii. 71—73.
- Lamberton*, William, Bishop of St. Andrew's, account of, viii. 79—81.
- Lambeth*, synod of, vii. 14.
- , council of, viii. 21.
- Lancaster*, Thomas Earl of, heads a confederacy against the Spencers, vii. 154. And procure their banishment, 155. Civil war between Edward II. and the barons, 155, 156. Lancaster defeated and taken prisoner, 157, 158. And executed, 159.
- , John of Gaunt, Duke of, son of Edward III., vii. 290. His expedition into France, 283. A second expedition, 300. Quarrel between him and the Earl of Northumberland, 315. His proposal to carry the war into Spain, rejected by parliament, 316. Ravages Scotland, 322. Is accused to parliament, 322, 323. Intention to bring him to trial frustrated, 324. His expedition into Spain, 326. His progress there, 330. Frustrated in his attempts to conquer Castile, 333. His transactions in France, 344, 345. Returns to England, 346. Created Duke of Aquitaine for life, 348. His death, 360.
- , Henry of Bolingbroke, Duke of Hereford, succeeds his father in the dukedom of Lancaster, vii. 360. Lands in England, 361. Agreement between him and the Duke of York, 362. Bristol castle, surrendered to him, *ib.* Imprisons Richard II., 363. Procures



- cures him to sign a resignation, *ib.* Deposes Richard, 366. And steps into the throne, *ib.* His speeches on this occasion, 367, 368. See *Henry IV.*
- Land*, low value of, in the 15th century, x. 175.
- Land-carriage* of the antient Britons, account of, ii. 259, 260.
- Land Tax*, imposed by the Romans, i. 352.
- Landells*, William, Bishop of St. Andrew's, notice of, viii. 82.
- Lanfranc*, Archbishop of Canterbury, supports the pretensions of William II. to the throne, v. 38. Disputes the primacy with the Archbishop of York, 273. Dispute determined in Lanfranc's favour, 274. Introduces the doctrine of transubstantiation into the creed of the English church, 277. His death and character, 279. Notice of his literary character and writings, vi. 126—128.
- Langham*, Simon, elected archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 62. Resigns his see, 63.
- Langlande*, Robert, author of *Pierce Plowman's Vision*, account of, and of his poem, viii. 309.
- Langtoft*, Peter, character of his metrical chronicle of England, viii. 303.
- Langton*, Stephen, chosen archbishop of Canterbury, v. 438. Appeals to the Pope against his legate, 447. Is suspended by the Pope, 449. His death, viii. 3.
- Languages*, what, taught by the Druids, ii. 60—63. Latin and Greek taught to the Britons after the Roman conquest, 79, 80. Language of the antient Britons, a dialect of the Celtic, 336—340. Of the Scots and Welsh from the sixth to the tenth century, iv. 361, 362. Of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, 362. Scheme of the languages derived from the Teutonic, 363. The Saxon language, 364. Its antiquity and excellency, 365. Contained many polysyllables, 366. Its affinity with the Greek, *ib.* Changes in the Anglo-Saxon language, 367. Saxon copy of the Lord's prayer with a literal version and remarks, 368—370. Charter of King Harold in Saxon with a literal version, 371—373. Account of the Romance language, 242. The Saxon, the prevalent English language in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 351, 352. Specimen of the Saxon of this period with remarks, 352—354. State of language in England, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 388. Latin, the language of the church, 389. French, of the court and nobility, 389, 390. Anglo-Saxon, of the great body of people, 391. Anglo-Saxon pure, 392. Specimen of, 440—442. The English of this period very different from modern English, 392—394. Different dialects of English, 394. Barbarous Latin of the 15th century, x. 118. Greek, neglected in England, in the same period, 118, 119. Greater changes in the language of the vulgar than of the learned, in the 15th century, 300—302. Different dialects, 302. English spelling unsettled, 302, 303. Language of Scotland, 303. Laws in the French language, 303, 304. Latin language successfully cultivated in the 16th century, xii. 201—203. And Greek successfully introduced, 203—206. State of the English language in the 16th century, 368—370.
- Lapidaries' Art*, state of, in England, in the 13th century, viii. 279.

*Law-University*, founded at Westminster, viii. 261. Studies pursued there, 261, 262.

*Law*, Roman, how long established in Britain, i. 345, 346. First taught there after the Roman conquest, 85.

*Laws*, history of, in Great Britain, before and after its invasion by the Romans, to the arrival of the Saxons, i. 237. *et seq.* Great influence of laws on manners, i. 237, 238.

—, *British*, authority of executing them, in the hands of the Druids, i. 302—304. Progress of laws, 313. Antiquity of British laws, 314. Composed in verse, 315. Never committed to writing, 316. Considered as the commands of the Gods, 316, 317. Law concerning marriage, 318—320. Penal laws respecting men's persons, 321—324. And properties, 324—328. British common law, 328—331. Laws of evidence, 331. Laws of compurgation, 331, 332. Torture, 332. Ordeals, 332—334. Laws of succession, 334—336.

—, *Anglo-Saxon*, history of, from the arrival of the Saxons, to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 388. *et seq.* Origin of written laws among the Anglo-Saxons, &c. 389. Different laws in England, 389, 390. Remarkable singularity in the jurisprudence of the middle ages, 391. The first written laws, short, 392. Matrimonial laws, 393—397. Laws concerning divorces, 397. Authority of husbands, 398. Paternal authority, 399. Laws relating to compacts, 400. Of succession to property, 401. Laws relating to testaments, 402—405. Penal laws, 405—407. Laws against theft, 407—409. Against robbery, 410, 411. Laws against calumny, 412. Laws for preserving the peace, 412, 413. For protecting criminals from sudden violence, 414. Punishments of personal injuries, 415. Wounding, *ib.* Murder, 416—418. Change in the laws against murder, 418, 419. Punishment for violating women, 420. Of several crimes, 421. Laws of evidence, *ib.* Oaths, 422. Compurgators, 422—424. Witnesses, 425. Oaths, how administered, 425—427. Ordeals, 427—437. Laws of Ethelbert, King of Kent, translated, iv. 415—420. Changes introduced in the laws of England by William I. vi. 43. Judicial combats, 44—47. Trials by jury, 48. Similarity of the English and Norman laws, 49. Antient laws of England not quite destroyed by the conquest, 50, 51. Attachment of the English to their antient laws, 52. Great conformity of the laws of England and Scotland at this period, 52—54. Amendment of the laws in the reign of Henry II., 59. Improvement of the laws by Richard I., 63. History of the laws of England from the accession of Henry IV. to that of Henry VII., x. 52—90. History of the laws of Scotland from 1400 to 1488, 90—108. Alteration in the mode of making them, 65, 66. History of, from the accession of Henry VIII. to the accession of Edward VI., xii. 166. See *Common Law*, *Statute Law*.

—, *Scottish*, state of, in the reigns of James IV. and V., xii. 172. *et seq.* Their authority enforced, 172, 173. How made, 177, 178. And executed, 178.

*Lawyers*, professional, origin of, iii. 345. Appointed assessors to the aldermen or Anglo-Saxon earls, 345, 346. Not the same with jurors,



346. State of, in the 15th century, x. 73, 74. Account of eminent lawyers in the 15th century, 135—139.
- Lead mines* of antient Britain, notice of, ii. 137. Lead exported from Britain by the Phœnicians, 202. And by the Romans, 214. Great quantities exported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 271.
- Learning and learned men* of Britain, history of, from the Roman invasion to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 1. *et seq.* Original ignorance of nations, 1—3. A great body of men cultivated learning at the time of the Roman invasion, 3. And had made considerable progress before they were destroyed, 5. Sources from whence the British Druids derived their learning, 6. Account of the different branches of learning, cultivated by the Druids, 7—67. (And see *Druids*.) Personal history of learned men, 67—71. Seminaries of learning among the antient Britons, 72—74. Mode of teaching therein, 75. Learning of the antient Britons, not contemptible, 77. State of learning in England after the Roman conquest, 78. Latin and Greek languages taught, 79. Also eloquence, 80, 81. Philosophy, 82—84. Mathematics and medicine, 84. Laws, 85. Personal history of learned men of this period, 86—91. Seminaries of learning, under the Romans, 92. Decay of learning in Britain, 93—95.
- , history of learning in Britain, from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iv. 1. *et seq.* State of learning from the year 449. to 500., 2, 3. The Saxons, enemies to learning, 4. State of learning among the Anglo-Saxons, *ib.* Among other British nations, 5. Among the Scots, 6. Among the Anglo-Saxons, 8—10. Sciences studied in the seventh century, 13—16. Seminaries of learning, 16—18. Learned Britons and Scots, 18—20. State of learning, in the 8th century, on the continent, 21, 22. In England, 23, 41. Sciences studied in this century, 42, 43. Causes of the low state of literature, 43. State of learning in England in the ninth century, 44—52. History of learning in the reign of Alfred, 53—58. Seminaries of learning, 59—65. Revival of learning, 65. State of learning in the tenth century, 65—68. In England, 69—74. Learning cultivated in the east, 75. State of learning in the eleventh century, 77—80. Difficulties of acquiring learning in this period, 80—82. Method of teaching the sciences, 83—86. State of the different sciences, 87—92. History of learning, from the landing of William I. to the reign of King John, vi. 87. *et seq.* View of the different sciences cultivated, and of the improvements made therein, 88—121. History of learned men from A.D. 1066. to A.D. 1216., 121—154. Seminaries of learning during the same period, 155—169. Causes of the improvement of learning in this period, 118—121. History of learning from the death of King John to the accession of Henry IV., viii. 171. *et seq.* View of the sciences cultivated from A.D. 1216. to A.D. 1399., 172—210. History of learned men during the same period, 211—250. Seminaries of learning during the same period, 251—262. History of learning in Britain from 1399. to 1485., x. 109—128. Of learned men, during the same period, 129—149. Seminaries of learning during the same period, 149—167. Learning neither valued nor rewarded, 112—114. History of learning, from



- from 1485 to 1537., xii. 197. *et seq.* Sciences cultivated in this period, 202—218. Account of learned men, 219—244. Seminaries of learning during the same period, 245—256.
- Leases*, precarious in the sixteenth century, xii. 263, 264.
- Leather*, exported from England in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 270.
- Legacies*, tax imposed on, by the Romans, i. 356.
- Legions*, Roman constitution, number and equipments of, ii. 454—456. Account of those stationed in Britain, 458—462. Legionaries, how rewarded, 468.
- Leicester*. See *Montford*, Simon de.
- Lennox*. See *Stewart*.
- Leopold*, Duke of Austria, meanly seizes Richard I., v. 211. Delivers him up to Henry IV. Emperor of Germany, 211, 212.
- Letters*, how far known to the antient Britons, ii. 56—59.
- Lewellyn*, Prince of Wales, disputes with Edward I., vii. 67. Who invades Wales, 68. Peace between them, and Edward's lenity, 68, 69. War again, 70. And Lewellyn slain in battle, 72. Effects of the conquest, *ib.* See also *Lhewellyn*.
- Lewes*, battle of, vii. 36. Henry III. defeated and taken prisoner, 36, 37. The *Mise* or treaty of Lewis, 37. Violated by the Earl of Leicester, 38.
- Lhewellyn*, Prince of Wales, death of, iii. 157.
- , Gryffyth, adventurous reign of, iii. 158. Is seized and put to death by his subjects, 158, 159.
- Liberty*, love of, cherished by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 308.
- Libraries* of the monasteries, notice of, vi. 119.
- Lily*, William, the grammarian, anecdotes of, xii. 235, 236.
- Linacer*, Dr. Thomas, anecdotes of, xii. 230—232.
- Lincoln*, Battle of, v. 100. vii. 3.
- Lincolnshire*, trading towns of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 265.
- Linen*, art of making, known to the antient Britons, ii. 129, 130. Who were also skilled in washing and bleaching it, 131.
- Linlithgow-Bridge*, battle of, xi. 493.
- Litchfield* erected into an archbishop's see, iii. 231. Reduced to its former state as a bishopric, 237.
- Literature*, revival of, in the 15th century, x. 110. Not yet extended to Britain, and why, 111, 112. Not valued there, 112, 113. Nor rewarded, 113. Bad state of literature prevalent in this period, 117. Specimen of, 325.
- Lithotomy*, when first practised, x. 124.
- Littleton*, Sir Thomas, account of, x. 135, 136.
- Living*, rate of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 307. In the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 352, 353. In the 15th century with proof, 270—274. Expence of living in the 16th century, xii. 339, 340. Manner of living among the English, at the same period, 376—378.
- Logic*, state of, the science of, in England in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 175, 176. Much cultivated at Oxford, 176.
- Logi*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 285.
- Lollards*, great success of their preaching, viii. 72. Their ability, 73. In vain opposed by the clergy, 73, 74. Several tried for heresy, 74. Their

- Their remonstrance to parliament, 75. Expose the vices of the clergy, 76. Many obliged to recant, 76, 77. Commotion of, ix. 39, 40. Persecuted in the reign of Henry IV. by Archbishop Arundel, x. 2—19. By Archbishop Chicheley, 20, 21. General persecution of them, 22—24. Persecuted in the reign of Henry VIII., xii. 19, 20. 26. 30—36. Persecuted in Scotland, 109.
- London*, antient state of, ii. 413. The emporium of British commerce, till the middle of the eighth century, iv. 196. And in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 259, 260. Taken by the Britons, i. 53, 54. The richest trading town of antient Britain, 230. Surrenders to William, Duke of Normandy, v. 7. Admits the Empress Maude, 104. Tumults in, suppressed, 221, 222. Citizens of, murder the Bishop of Exeter, 50.
- , council held at, iii. 265. Canons passed thereat, 265, 266. Regulations of another council, v. 317. In the reign of Stephen, 327. In the reign of Henry III. viii. 15. Against Wickliffe, 68—70.
- , fynods held at, viii. 27, 28. 43.
- Longchamp*, William, Bishop of Ely, appointed chief justiciary of England, v. 200. His tyrannical conduct, 200, 201. Quarrels with Prince John, and Geoffrey Archbishop of York, 201. Conspiracy against him, by which he is expelled, 202. Fruitlessly attempts to recover his power, 206, 207.
- Longevity* of the Anglo-Saxons, instances of, iv. 294, 295.
- Lord's Prayer*, the, in the antient British language, ii. 486. In Welsh, *ib.* Cornish, 487. Erse, *ib.* In the Irish language, 488. Two Saxon versions of it, with remarks, iv. 368—370. In Anglo-Saxon, 431. Franco-Theotisc, *ib.* Cimbric, 432. Belgic, *ib.* Frisic, *ib.* High Dutch, *ib.* Suevian, 433. Swiss, *ib.* Icelandic. *ib.* Norwegian, *ib.* Danish, 434. Swedish, *ib.*
- Lords*, house of, when first separately established, viii. 144. Happy effects of this measure, 145. State of, from the accession of Richard II. to the accession of Henry IV., 159, 160. Number of its members, diminished by the abolition of the monasteries, xii. 151.
- Louis* the Gross, King of France, endeavours to place the son of Robert Duke of Normandy on the English throne, v. 69. The plan defeated, 70. Peace between him and Henry I., 72.
- VII. King of France, divorces Eleanor, heiress of Guienne, v. 112. Affiances his daughter Margaret to Henry, eldest son of Henry II. of England, 128. His anger at the conclusion of the nuptials, 129. Treaty of peace between them, *ib.* Has an interview with Henry II., 130. War between the two Kings, and a truce, 131. The war renewed, 134. Peace restored, 135. Encourages and supports Prince Henry, in a war against Henry II., 150. Events of the war, 150, 151. Besieges Rouen, 157. The siege raised by Henry II., 158. Peace restored, 158, 159. Disputes in his family composed by Henry II., 168, 170. Visits the shrine of Becket, 405.
- , eldest son of Philip, King of France, has the crown of England offered to him by the Barons, v. 257. Lands with his army and takes Rochester, 258. Besieges Dover castle in vain, 259. Becomes unpopular,



- popular, 260. Defeated at the battle of Lincoln, vii. 3. Peace between him and Henry III., 4.
- VIII., war with Henry III., vii. 6. Takes Rochelle, *ib.* Peace between them, 7.
- IX., wars with Henry III., vii. 15. Truce of five years with him, 16.
- XII., league against him by the Pope, Emperor, and Henry VIII., xi. 88—90. Concludes a treaty of peace with him, 107—108. Marries the Princess Mary of England, 110. Dies, *ib.* His character, 111. Canting letter to, from the Pope, 419, 420.
- Lucius*, King of Britain; accounts of his conversion to Christianity, i. 203. By Nennius, 205. And by Jeffrey of Monmouth, 206—208. What little truth there might be in the story of Lucius, 209, 210.
- Lupus*, Bishop of Troyes, disputes in Britain against the Pelagians, i. 229, 231. Returns to Gaul, 233.
- Luther*, Dr. Martin, Henry VIII. writes against, xii. 21. Luther replies, 22. His books prohibited, 23.
- Luxury* of the monks and clergy, in the 15th century, x. 314, 315.
- Lydgate*, Thomas, the poet, account of, x. 224, 225.
- Lynn*, trade of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 264.

M.

- M***ACBETH* murders Duncan, King of Scotland, iii. 163. Acquires possession of the throne, *ib.* His reign, 164. Is defeated and slain 165, 166.
- Maate*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 283.
- Magic*, druidical, account of, ii. 63—67.
- Magistrates*, Anglo-Saxon, account of, from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 331. *et seq.* Slaves incapable of being magistrates, 332. Heads of families, 333. Bors-holder, 333—336. Hundredary, 339. Aldermen of towns, 341. Trithing man, *ib.* Alderman or earl, 342. Shiregerieve, 344. Assessors to the alderman, 345—346. Anglo-Saxon chancellor, 347. Anglo-Saxon cyning or king, 348, 349. Magistrates were appointed by the king, 361.
- Magna-Charta*. See *Charter the Great*.
- Magnificence* of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 330—332.
- Maintenance*, offence of, defined, viii. 167, 168.
- Malcolm I.* King of Scotland, reign of, i. 112.
- II. ascends the throne, ii. 161. Defeats the Danes, *ib.* Fabulous accounts of his liberality, 161, 162.
- III. invades Northumberland, v. 20. Expedition against him by William I. 22. Peace between them, 23. Again invades Northumberland, 31. Slain in an ambush, 53.
- Malmbsbury*. See *William of Malmbsbury*.
- Manners and Customs* of the antient Britons, history of, from the Roman invasion to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 279. *et seq.*



- Manners*, history of, entertaining and useful, ii. 279, 280. But most difficult, 280, 281. History of British manners, from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iv. 287. *et seq.* Of the Anglo-Saxons changed by the Norman invasion, vi. 314. View of the manners of the Normans from the year 1066. to 1216., 314—379. Manners of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 359—422. State of manners in the 15th century, x. 275—323. In the 16th century, xii. 347—385.
- Manures*, what, used by the antient Britons, ii. 104.
- Mapes*, Walter, character of his Latin poetry, vi. 239—241.
- March*, Earl of, revolts against Robert III. King of Scotland, ix. 292. Returns to Scotland, 294. Services rendered by his family, 295, 296. Earldom of, resumed by James I., 319, 320.
- Margaret*, Princess of Norway, contracted to James II. of Scotland, ix. 373. Married to him, 374. Her death and character, 397. — *of Anjou* contracted to Henry VI., ix. 127. Married to him, 129. Her character, *ib.* Becomes odious to the English, 132. Lays a snare for the Duke of York, who escapes, 145, 146. Defeated at the first battle of St. Alban's, 153. Procures the Duke to be deprived of the protectorship, 154. Defeats the Yorkists, 160. Is defeated at Northampton, 163. Retreats into Scotland, whence she invades England, 167. Obtains the battle of Wakefield, 168. Gains the second battle of St. Alban's, and recovers her husband, 170—171. Returns into the north, 172. Defeated at the battle of Towton, 177. Flees into Scotland, 178. Voyage to France and return, 181, 182. Second voyage to France, 183. Invades England, 184. Loses the battles of Hedgely Moor and Hexham, 185, 186. Escapes with her son Prince Edward, 186. Singular adventure of, *ib. note.* Detained on the continent, 214. Lands in England, 220. Loses the battle of Tewkesbury, 222. Taken prisoner and confined in the tower, *ib.*
- , Princess, daughter of Henry VII., married to James IV. of Scotland, xi. 397, 398. On his death, becomes Queen-regent, 442. Writes to Henry VIII., 442, 443. Marries the Earl of Angus, 443. Treaty with England, 444. Margaret goes to the English court, 455. Her animosity against the Duke of Albany, 456. Returns to Scotland, and is coldly received, 460, 461. Her husband returns from France to England, 478. The Queen assumes the regency, 479. Angus returns from England into Scotland, 480. Her complaint against him, 484. Is divorced from him, 490. And marries Henry Stewart, 491. Flies in disguise after the battle of Linlithgow bridge, 494.
- Mariner's Compass* whether known in England in the 12th century, vi. 293. Generally used in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 357.
- Markets*, when instituted, iv. 203—206.
- Marriage*, antient British law concerning, i. 318—320. Marriage ceremonies of the Britons, ii. 323—325. Anglo-Saxon laws, concerning, iii. 393—397. Nuptial ceremonies of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 348—350.

- Marriage* of the secular clergy, prohibited by various canons but ineffectually, v. 275. 315. 317. 400.
- , a source of revenue to the Norman kings, vi. 16.
- Marseilles* considerable trade between and Britain, ii. 211, 212. British goods, how conveyed there, 214.
- Marsbes* of antient Britain, ii. 285. Drained by the Romans, 285.
- Martial spirit* of the Danes, iv. 313. Causes of, 314—316. Its properties, 316—318.
- Martial exercises* of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 398—400.
- Martin V.*, Pope, haughty conduct of, to the English clergy, x. 24, 25.
- Mary*, Princess of England, married to Louis XII. of France, xi. 110. After his death marries the Duke of Suffolk, 112.
- , daughter of Henry VIII. born, xi. 121. Reconciled to her father, on what terms, 293, 294.
- , Queen of Scots, born, xi. 530. Marriage of her projected, with the Prince of Wales, 337, 338. Affairs of Scotland, 343, 344—Breach with Scotland, 345, 346.
- Masonry* restored in England, iv. 114, 115. State of, in Scotland in the ninth and tenth centuries, 121—126.
- Masquerades* of the 13th and 14th centuries, described, viii. 415, 416.
- Masques*, an amusement of the 16th century, xii. 382.
- Mathematical Instruments* invented in the 13th century, account of, viii. 197, 198.
- Mathematics*, state of, in Britain, after the Roman conquest, ii. 84. State of, from the Norman conquest to 1216., vi. 107. *et seq.* From 1216 to 1399, viii. 191. In the fifteenth century, x. 124, 125.
- Matilda*, Queen of William I., coronation of, v. 15. Death and character of, 33, 34.
- , daughter of Henry I. See *Maude*.
- Matrimony*, Anglo-Saxon laws concerning, iii. 393—397.
- Matthew Paris*, the historian, account of, viii. 236—238. List of his works, 239, 240.
- Maude* or Matilda, daughter of Henry I., married to Henry V. Emperor of Germany, v. 66. Is declared heir to Henry I., 77. Is contracted to Geoffrey son of the Earl of Anjou, 78. Arrives in England, and is honourably conducted to Bristol, 92. Is acknowledged queen, 101—103. Her haughty conduct, 104. Is besieged in Winchester castle, 105. And escapes thence, 106. Escapes from Oxford, 107, 108. Dies at Rouen, 133.
- Maxima Casariensis*, Roman province of, extent of, i. 349.
- Maximus* assumes the purple in Britain, i. 111. Expedition of, to the continent, 112. Defeated and put to death, 114.
- Meaux*, besieged and taken by Henry V., ix. 71, 72.
- Mechanics* of the Druids, account of, ii. 35—39. State of, in England, in the 13th century, viii. 200, 201.
- Medicine*, state of, among the Druids, ii. 40—42. State of, in Britain after the Roman conquest, 84—85. State of, in the eleventh century, iv. 88—90. State of, between 1066 and 1216, vi. 112—114. From 1216 to 1399, viii. 205—210. State of, in the 15th century, x. 121.



*Mellitus* converts the East Saxons to Christianity, iii. 197.

*Melrofs*, battle of, xi. 489, 490.

*Members of Parliament*, by whom elected in the 15th century, x. 55, 56.

Qualifications of, 56, 57. Number of, uncertain, 58. Irregularities in their election, 58, 59. Abuses of sheriffs in elections, 59, 60. Redress against them, 60, 61. Members antiently received wages, 61, 62.

*Mepham*, Simon, chosen archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 50. His dispute with the Bishop of Exeter, and death, 51, 52.

*Mercantile Regulations*, of William I., vi. 283. Of Henry II., 284, 285. Of Richard I., 286, 287. Of King John, 288.

*Merchants*, condition of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 278—280. Italians, 282. Barons' merchants, who, 282, 283. Foreign merchants settled in England, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 332. Brotherhood of St. Thomas, 334. x. 240. Italian merchants, viii. 335. Foreign merchants hated by the people, but encouraged by the King and by the barons, 336, 337. Encouraged in the 15th century, x. 238. Notice of the most opulent merchants of the 15th century, 254, 255.

———— of the *Steel-Yard*, viii. 332, 333.

———— of the *Staple*, viii. 333, 334. x. 239.

———— adventurers, account of, xii. 346.

*Mercia*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 11. History of 39. 42. 50—52. 54, 55. The Mercians converted to Christianity, 202, 203. Its situation described, 309.

*Merte*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 285.

*Merton*, synod of, convened to establish ecclesiastical privileges, viii. 12, 13. Held by Archbishop Winchelsey, 29.

*Metals*, imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 277.

————, art of working, known to the antient Britons, ii. 135. What metals were known to them, 136. *et seq.* Tin, 136. Lead and copper, 137. Iron, 138. Gold and silver, 139. State of the metallic arts in Britain, during the government of the Saxons and Danes, iv. 127—131. In Wales, 131, 132. State of the metallic arts in Britain in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 193—195. State of the metallic arts, from 1216. to 1399., viii. 276—279. In the 15th century x. 183. In the 16th century, in England, xii. 273, 274. In Scotland, 275, 276.

*Metaphysics*, state of, in England, between the years 1066. and 1216., vi. 98—100. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 177, 178.

*Metrical Chronicles*, account of, viii. 301—309.

*Military Engines*, in use before fire-arms, viii. 285—286.

———— *Government* of the Romans, i. 360. Disarmed the conquered Britons, *ib.* Impressed the British youth, *ib.* Built forts, 361. Had a standing army, *ib.* Change in their military government, 362. Powers and office of the Count of the Saxon shore, 362, 363. Of the Counts of Britain, 364. Duke of Britain, 365. Number of the Roman troops, 366. On the Roman forces in Britain, ii. 454—469.

———— of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 143—146. Of the Anglo-Normans, and in feudal times, vi. 205, 206.

———— *knowledge* of the British generals, ii. 154. Declined after the Roman conquest, 157.



- Military service*, tenure by, explained, vi. 14.  
 ——— *stratagems* of the antient Britons, ii. 155.  
*Mines*, tax imposed on by the Romans, i. 354, 355.  
*Mining* in England, in the 15th century, x. 183, 184.  
*Minstrels* greatly encouraged in feudal times, vi. 246. Their privileges, viii. 313, 314.  
*Mistletoe* gathered with great ceremony by the Druids, i. 173.  
*Monarch*, no universal one, in Britain, i. 312.  
*Monarchies*, English and Scotch, establishment of, iii. 316. Favourable to trade, iv. 206, 207. England, a limited monarchy in the 15th century, x. 83—85.  
*Monasteries*, fabulous account of, in Britain, i. 227. Where really established, *ib.* Of the 7th century, iii. 214. Rebuilt by Alfred the Great, 252, 253. Fatal effects of their increase, 282, 283. Their increase in the 11th and 12th centuries, one cause of the improvements in learning, vi. 118—120. Smaller ones dissolved by Henry VIII., xi. 280. 297. 310. xii. 54. 56—58. Further visitation of, 67, 68. Totally suppressed, 69, 70. Reflection on this measure, 71.  
*Money*, origin of, ii. 235. See *Coin*.  
 ———, *Living-money* of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 243, 244.  
 ———, immense sums of, carried out of England, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 340—341.  
*Moneyage*, a tax levied by the Anglo-Norman kings, nature of, vi. 39.  
*Monks*, and the *monastic life*, origin of, in Britain, i. 226—228. Several kings become monks, iii. 222. Fondness of the Anglo-Saxons for, iv. 299—302. New orders of monks instituted in the 13th century, viii. 39. Luxury of the monks in the 15th century, x. 314. Their dissolute conduct, xii. 3—5. The monks disliked by Henry VIII., 55.  
*Montfort*, Simon de, Earl of Leicester, marries the sister of Henry III., vii. 14. Quarrels with him, 18. Defeats him at the battle of Lewes, and takes him prisoner, 38, 39. Violates the treaty of Lewes, 40. His avarice and ambition, 40, 41. Effects of his conduct, 41. Becomes unpopular, 42. Is slain at the battle of Evesham, 46. His character, *ib.*  
*Moral philosophy*. See *Ethics*.  
*Morcar*. See *Edwin*.  
*More*, Sir Thomas, prudent conduct of, when Speaker of the house of commons, xi. 158, 159. Resigns his office of chancellor, 257. Refuses to swear to the succession, 272. Beheaded, 275. Witty replies of, *ib.* Biographical and literary anecdotes of, xii. 225—228.  
*Morgan*. See *Pelagius*.  
*Mortimer*, Roger, Earl of Marche, intrigue of, with Queen Isabella of England, vii. 166. Their violent conduct, 172—174. Procures Edward II. to be murdered, 176, 177. Confederacy against him, 185, 186. Procures the Earl of Kent, the King's brother, to be condemned and executed, 187, 188. Is imprisoned, 189, 190. Condemned and executed, 190. His character, 191.  
*Mortimer's Cross*, battle of, ix. 169, 170.  
*Morton*, John, Bishop of Ely, and Archbishop of Canterbury, holds a convocation, xii. 1, 2. Pastoral letter of, 2, 3. Monitory letter to the abbots, &c., concerning the dissolute lives of the monks, 4, 5.

*Mountfort*, John de, claims the dukedom of Brittany, vii. 222. Forms an alliance with Edward III., *ib.* Escapes from Paris, 222, 223. Is taken prisoner by Charles de Blois, to whom Brittany is adjudged, 223. Heroic achievements of his wife Jane, 223, 224. John de Mountfort makes his escape, 230. Death of, *ib.*

——, John de, son of the former, the dukedom of Brittany awarded to him, vii. 270. Change in his politics, 304.

*Murder*, how punished by the Anglo-Saxons laws, iii. 416—418. Change in the laws against, 418, 419. Frequent among the Anglo-Saxons, *ib.* 338.

*Musical* of the antient Britons, ii. 190. And poetry, originally united, 191. Instrumental, 193. The harp, 193, 194. Their music simple and natural, 194. Music and dancing, a favourite diversion, 368.

—— of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 179. Its professors highly esteemed, 180, 181. Universally cultivated, 181, 182. The harp the most admired musical instrument, 183. Other musical instruments, 184, 185. Astonishing effects of music, 186, 187. Church music cultivated in the 7th century, 188, 189.

—— Anglo-Norman, state of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 245, 246. Church music, 247, 248. Its corruption, 249, 250. Civil music, 250. Genius of the music of the different British nations, 251. Counter point, 252. Musical instruments, 252—254. History of, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 313, 314. Musical instruments, 315. Music much admired, 316. Church music, 316—318. Musical characters, or measured song, when invented, viii. 318. State of music in the 15th century, x. 225. *et seq.* Martial music, 225. Church music, *ib.* Studied as a science, by the clergy, 226. And by the laity, 227, 228. Secular music, 229. Much of it lost, 230. Secular music of Scotland improved by James I., 231, 232. Church music of the 16th century, xii. 298—300. Secular music, 300. Musical instruments, 301.

*Mysteries*, or dramatic representations, of the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 419, 420.

## N.

*NAMES* and surnames of the Anglo-Saxons, origin of, iv. 351, 352. *Narbonne*, a great emporium for British goods, ii. 213. How they were conveyed to, 214.

*Nations*, happiness of, dependant more on their manners than on their circumstances, iv. 287.

*Natural philosophy*, state of, in England, between 1066. and 1216., vi. 98—100. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 177, 178.

*Naval power* of the antient Britons, observations on, ii. 262—268. Of England, promoted by Alfred the Great, iv. 222. And by William I., vi. 289. See *Shipping*.

—— victories. See *Victories*.

*Navigation* of the antient Britons, account of, ii. 268, 269. They observed



- served the stars, 270. Their sea-signals, 271. They failed to a considerable distance, 271, 272.
- Navy*, English, state of, in the reign of Henry VIII., xii. 344, 345.
- Neckam*, Alexander, character of his Latin poetry, vi. 239.
- Nevill*, Henry, Archbishop of York, conspires against Henry IV., ix. 22. Is taken prisoner by fraud, 24. And executed, 25.
- , George, Archbishop of York, great feast given by, ix. 192. Bill of fare thereat, x. 332, 333. Attacks made on his family, ix. 193.
- Norfolk*, Duke of, imprisoned, xi. 361, 362. Attainted, 364. His life saved by Henry VIII.'s death, 365.
- Normandy*, William, Duke of, obtains the crown of England, v. 6. See *William I.*, and *Robert*.
- Norman* nobility, different classes of, vi., 7, 8.
- Normans*, name of, whence derived, vi. 315. Origin of, 315, 316. Settled in France and became Frenchmen, 316. Their contempt and ill-treatment of the English, 317, 318. Mode of education, 318—320. Surnames, 328. Their magnificence, 330. Great retinues of the Norman kings and nobles, 331. Were in some things mean and fordid, 332. Virtues of the Anglo-Normans, 333. Their piety, 333, 334. Valour, 335. Sobriety, 336. Gallantry and regard to the point of honour, 337. Wit and humour, 338. Generosity, 339—341. Their foibles and vices, 342. Credulity, 342, 343. Curiosity, 343, 344. Cruelty, 345. Violations of chastity, 347, 348. Unnatural crime, 348. Tyranny and oppression, 349, 350. Their language, 351. Drefs 354—360. Diet, 362—366. Diversions, 366—379.
- Northampton*, battle of, ix. 163.
- Northampton*, John, Lord Mayor of London, causes disturbances there, vii. 322. Tried and condemned to perpetual imprisonment, 323, 324.
- Northumberland*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 12. Ethelfred, King of, extends its boundaries, 13. Loses it and his life, in battle, 26. Edwin his successor, slain, 28. Oswald, King of Northumberland, 29. Ofwi, King of, 32. His successors, 43. 52—54. The Northumbrians converted to Christianity by Paulinus, 199, 200. They apostatize, 200. But return to Christianity, 201. Situation of this kingdom described, 310. Invaded by Malcolm, King of Scotland, v. 21, 31.
- , Henry Percy, Earl of, rewarded by Henry IV. ix. 7. Enters into a conspiracy against him, 17. Takes arms, 18. The battle of Shrewsbury, 19. Northumberland disbands his troops, 20. Is pardoned, 21. Joins another confederacy, 22. Flees into Scotland, 25. And thence into Wales, 28. Defeated and slain at the battle of Bramham Moor, 30, 31.
- , Earl of, killed in an insurrection, xi. 19.
- Norwich*, Bishop of, proposal of, to carry war into Flanders, vii. 318. Is accepted, 319. His expedition, 319, 320. Progress of, 320, 321. Is accused before Parliament and deprived of his temporalities, 321, 322.
- Notitia Imperii*, notice of, ii. 439, 440. Its account of the government of antient Britain, 442—453.
- Nottingham castle*, taken by Richard I., v. 217. A great council held there, 217.



*Novante*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 281, 282.  
ii. 402.

## O.

*OAK*, venerated by the Druids, i. 175—177.

*Occleve*, Thomas, the poet, character of, x. 223.

*Oaths*, frequency of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 422. Ceremonies in administering them, 425, 426. Were weighed as well as numbered, 426, 427.

*Ockham*, William, founder of the sect of Ockhamists, birth and education of, viii. 227, 228. Defends the Emperor against the Pope, 228. Retires to the court of the Emperor Lewis, 229. Obligated to recant, 230.

*Ochter's* voyage of discovery, narrative of, iv. 213—215. Observations on, 215, 216.

*O'Conner*, Roderick, King of Connaught, submits to Henry II., v. 162.

*Odin*, a Saxon deity, account of, iii. 175, 176.

*Odo*, Archbishop of Canterbury, account of, iii. 263. Constitutions of, 264.

—, Bishop of Bayeux, uterine brother of William I., seized and imprisoned by him, v. 33. Conspires against William II., 39. The conspiracy frustrated, and Odo banished into Normandy, 40, 41.

*Offa*, King of Mercia, reign of, iii. 50, 51. Wicked action of, 54. Retires to Rome, 55. Account of his journey to Rome, 237. Erects the monastery of St. Alban's, 236.

*Offices* in the royal gift, in the 15th century, x. 88, 89.

—, hereditary, in Scotland, in the 15th century, x. 106—108.

*Oldcastle*. See *Cobham*.

*Oleron*, laws of, when established, vi. 286.

*Oppression* of the Normans, vi. 349, 350.

*Optics*, state of, in the 13th century, viii. 198—200.

*Ordainers*, council of, appointed by the confederate barons, vii. 130, 131. viii. 133. Ordinances of, confirmed by Edward II., 133.

*Ordeals*, antient British laws concerning. i. 332. Origin of, iii. 427. Different ordeals, 428. Judicial combat, *ib.* Ordeal of the cross, 429. Ordeal of the Confined, 430. Cold water ordeal, 431—433. Hot water ordeal, 433. Ordeal of hot iron, 434. These ordeals, not dangerous, 435—437.

*Ordovices*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 271—273. ii. 408.

*Organs*, when introduced into England, iv. 184, 185.

*Orleans*, siege of, formed by the Earl of Salisbury, ix. 88. Who is killed before it, 89. Siege continued, 89. Proposals for its surrender, rejected, 91. Siege of, raised, 94.

—, Maid of. See *Joan of Arc*.

*Ostorius*, Governor of Britain, i. 36. Subdues the Iceni, 37. Quiets a sedition among the Brigantes, 38. War with the Silures, 38—40. Is unfortunate, 44.

*Oswald*,

- Oswald*, King of Northumberland, slain in battle by Penda, iii. 29, 30.  
 ———, St., Bishop of Worcester, cruel conduct of, towards the married clergy, iii. 272. Death of, 282.  
*Oswi*, King of Northumberland, bravely defends his territories, iii. 31.  
 Defeats and kills Penda, 32.  
*Otho*, Cardinal, constitutions of, viii. 6.  
*Otodini*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 278, 279.  
 ii. 405, 406.  
*Otterbourne*, Thomas, the historian, account of, x. 131.  
*Otterburn*, battle of, vii. 343, 344.  
*Oxford*, Robert de Vere, Earl of, invites Henry VIII. to a splendid entertainment, xi. 65. Is fined by him for his retainers, 65, 66.  
*Oxford*, city of, transactions of, a parliament held there, v. 165.  
 ———, Synod of, viii. 3.  
 ———, University of, founded by Alfred the Great, iv. 60. Account of its endowment, 61, 62. Whether it was a seat of learning prior to the foundation of the University, 62—65. Destroyed by the Danes, 77—79. Re-established by Edward the Confessor, 79, 80. History of the University from 1066. to 1216., vi. 156—158. Colleges founded there in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 253. University Hall, *ib.* Baliol, Merton, Exeter, and Oriel Colleges, 254. Queen's and New Colleges, 255. Great numbers of students at Oxford, 258, 259. Lincoln College founded, x. 150. All-souls' College, 150, 151. Magdalen College, 151. Public schools, 153. Disputes between the Greeks and Trojans, lovers and opponents of Greek literature, xii. 205—207. Brazen-nose College founded, 245. Corpus Christi College founded, 246. Cardinal College, 247—249. College of Henry VIII., 249. Christ's Church, 250.

P.

- PAGEANTS* of the 14th century described, viii. 417. An amusement of the 16th century, xii. 382.  
*Pages*, or valets, in chivalry, their duties and exercises, vi. 320, 321.  
*Paice*, Richard, a reviver of literature, anecdotes of, xii. 236—238.  
*Painting* of the body practised by the antient Britons, ii. 123. 163—165.  
 Of their shields, 166. Painting, in general, of the antient Britons, much improved after the Roman Conquest, 167. State of the art of painting in England in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 220—222. Portrait-painting, 222—224. General state of the art of painting in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 296—300. State of the art in the 15th century, x. 209—211. Portrait painting, 211—213. State of painting in the 16th century, xii. 289—291.  
*Paintings*, great numbers of, imported by the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 157, 158. Paintings executed in England, 159, 160. Painting on glass, 161. vi. 226. Paintings of various kinds in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 225.  
*Pandulf*, the papal legate, accepts the submission of King John, on what terms,



- terms, v. 248. Commands the King of France to desist from invading England, 249. His insolent conduct, when in England, 443, 444.
- Panter*, Patrick, Secretary of James IV., account of, xii. 244, 245.
- Papacy*, encroachments of, on the crown, in the reign of Henry I. and Stephen, v. 293—330. In the reign of Henry II. See *Becket*.
- , schisms in, v. 318. 339. Terminated, 403. In the 15th century, x. 10, 11.
- Paper*, invention of, promoted the improvement of learning, vi. 120.
- Paris*, kingdom of, situation, limits and chief places in, i. 275. ii. 408.
- Paris*, University, history of, from 1066. to 1216., vi. 160, 161.
- Paris*, Mathew, the historian, account of, viii. 236—239. Works, 239, 240.
- Parliament*, English, held at London, by Henry II., v. 120. Trans- actions of one held at Oxford, 165. State of, in the reign of William I., vi. 22. Who were its constituent members, at this period, 23—32.
- , English, constitution of, in the reign of King John, viii. 90, 91. Change in, by the barons, in the reign of Henry III., 92, 93. Another change, 94, 95. Antient constitution of, restored, 105. Earl of Leicester's plan of parliament revived, 106. Variations in the forms of parliaments, 107—109. Great influence of the crown in parliament, 109. Triers of petitions, 110. Only one house of parliament, 111. Method of terminating a session of parliament, 112. Petitions to parliament answered by the King and council, 113. State of, from the accession of Edward II. to the accession of Edward III., 127—129. Not yet divided into two houses, 129. Clergy there, nearly equal to the laity, 130. State of, in the reign of Edward III., 137. Were held very frequently, 138. Distinctions between parliaments and great councils, *ib.* Number of representatives, 139. Divided into three bodies, 140—142. Proctors of the clergy no longer members of parliament, 142. The establishment of the houses of lords and commons, 143, 144. Happy effects of this establishment, 145. Gradual union of the knights and commons, 146. Humility of the commons, *ib.* Singular mistake of parliament, 147. Lawyers excluded from parliament, 148. State of the English parliament, from the accession of Richard II. to the accession of Henry IV., 159—164. Its sessions commonly short, 165, 166. State of, in the 15th century, x. 54—58. Shortness of its sessions, 67. Form of its proceedings from 1485., to 1547., xii. 151—153. Length of its sessions, 153. Unanimity of parliament, 154. Instances of its servility, 160—162.
- of Scotland, constitution of, in the reign of Robert I., similar to that of England, viii. 136, 137. Its constitution in the 15th century, x. 98. The three estates, *ib.* How called, 99. Mode of proceeding, 99, 100. Committees appointed, for what purposes, 100, 101. Lists of the members of such committees, 330. Roll of the Scottish parliament, *ib.* The whole power in the hands of the aristocracy, 101. Sessions of the Scottish parliament, short, 102. Attempt to form two houses, 102, 103. State of, in the reigns of James IV. and V., xii. 177—179.
- Parr*, Lady Catherine, married by King Henry VIII., xi. 343. Her person in danger from him, 359, 361.
- Partridge*, a pretended British sage, account of, ii., 68, 69.



- Passions* prevalent among the antient Britons, ii. 293—295.
- Pasturage*, state of, among the antient Britons, ii. 100—102. At the arrival of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 97, 98.
- Paternal authority*, extent of, under the Anglo-Saxon laws, iii. 399, 400.
- Patriarchal government*, the first established, i. 239. Succeeded by the monarchical, 239, 240.
- Paulinus* converts the Northumbrians to Christianity, iii. 199. They apostatize, 200. And return, 201.
- Payments*, different modes of making, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 300. *Ad scalam*, 300, 301. By weight, 301. By combustion, *ib.*
- Peace*, Anglo-Saxon laws for preserving, iii. 412, 413.
- Pearls*, antiently exported from Britain, ii. 221.
- Peckham*, John, nominated archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 20. His letter to Edward I., 22. Disregarded by him, *ib.* Censures Knapwell for heresy, 22—24.
- Pedro*, Don, King of Castile, dethroned by the *Companies*, vii. 272. Battle of Najara, gained by him, through the assistance of the Black Prince, 274. His perfidious conduct, 275. Is put to death by Henry de Traстамare, 276. His daughter married to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, 280.
- Pelagius*, or Morgan, brief account of, ii. 89—91. Heretical notions of, i. 228, 229. Public disputation between the orthodox and the Pelagians, the latter of whom are defeated, 229, 231.
- Pembroke*, William, Earl of, procures the coronation of Henry III., vii. 2. Is appointed protector, *ib.* His popular measures, *ib.* Military transactions, 3, 4. Death, 4.
- Penal laws* of the antient Britons, i. 321—328. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 405. Their design was to repair the injury committed, 406, 407. Penal laws against theft, &c. 407—421.
- Penance*, curious, antiently imposed in Scotland, iv. 125.
- Penda*, King of Wessex, character of, iii. 27. War between him and Edwin, King of Northumberland, 27, 28. And with Oswald King of Northumberland, 29, 30. With Cenwal, King of Wessex, 30, 31. Is slain in battle with Oswy, King of Northumberland, 32.
- Percy*. See *Northumberland*.
- family, restored to their estates and honours, ix. 201, 202.
- Perjury*, frequent among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 339. Prevalent in the 15th century, x. 291.
- Persecution* of the British church in the 3d century, i. 211. Deliverance from, in the 4th century, 216.
- Persons*, penal laws of the antient Britons concerning, i. 321—324.
- of the antient Britons, ii. 287. Greatly resembling those of the Gauls and Germans, 287. Large, tall, and fair, 288. Poetical picture of, 292. Of the Anglo-Saxons, distinguished for their beauty, iv. 292—294.
- Personal injuries*, how punished by the Anglo-Saxon laws, iii. 415—420.
- Perth*, general assembly of the Scottish church at, x. 44—46. Convocation of, x. 48.
- Pestilence*, terrible, in England, in 1407., ix. 29.
- Petrus Blesensis*. See *Blois*, (Peter of.)
- Pharmacy* of the Druids, account of, ii. 51.

*Philip*, son of Louis VII., crowned King of France, v. 168. Is reconciled to his father, through the mediation of Henry II., 168, 169. Dispute between them, concerning the guardianship of the heiress of Brittany, 179. War between them concluded by a truce, 179, 180. Irritated at the non-consummation of marriage between his sister Adelaide and Prince Richard of England, 181. Takes the cross, *ib.* War between Philip and Henry II., 183, 184. Interview between Philip and Richard I., relative to the crusade, 193. The Kings of England and France arrive at Messina, 194. Transactions at Messina, 195. Sails from Messina, 197. Returns from the Holy Land, 203. Disgraceful conduct of Philip on his return, 206. Intrigues with John, *ib.* Their plans to prevent Richard I.'s return defeated, 212, 216. Richard wages war against Philip, which is suspended by a truce, 219. The war renewed and terminated, 220, 221, 223. War between Philip and John, 230. Terminated by a peace, 231. Philip advocates the cause of Arthur, Duke of Brittany, 234. Invades John's foreign dominions, 237. And reduces almost the whole of them, 238. Truce between them, 241. Prepares to invade England, 246. Is commanded to desist by the Pope, 249. Engagement between the French and English fleets, 250.

— the Fair, King of France, summons Edward I., as Duke of Guienne, to render homage, vii. 90, 91. Makes alliance with the King of Scotland, *ib.* Deceives Edward, 91, 92. Edward invades France, 99, 100. Double alliance between them, and peace concluded, 105.

— *de Valois*, King of France, summons Edward III. to do homage, vii. 186, 187. His claim to the French crown opposed by Edward, 202. Nature of Edward's claims examined, 202—206. Edward invades France, 210. Philip's preparations, 211. Philip's fleet defeated by Edward, 213. Fruits thereof, 214. Philip challenged by Edward, and his reply, 215. Truce concluded, 216. Negotiations for peace, 217. War with Edward, 225. Truce concluded, ill observed, 226—228. War renewed, 229. Battle of Crecy, 234—237. Philip totally defeated, 238. Fruitless attempt to raise the siege of Calais, 240. His death, 247.

—, King of Castile, visits England, xi. 72. Splendidly entertained by Henry VII., *ib.* Concludes a treaty, disadvantageous to his subjects, 72, 73. Delivers up the Duke of Suffolk to Henry VII., 73. Contracts his son Charles, to Mary, daughter of Henry VII., 74.

*Philosophy*, state of, in Britain, after the Roman Conquest, ii. 82—84.

*Phoenicians*, traded with Britain, ii. 199. The time of their discovering Britain, not certainly known, 200. No evidence that they had colonies planted in Britain, 202. Commodities exported by the Phoenicians, 202. Tin, *ib.* Lead, 203. Skins and wool, 204. Articles imported by the Phoenicians, *ib.* Who concealed their trade with Britain from other nations, 205.

*Physicians*, distinction between them and surgeons, vi. 115, 116. The clergy were the chief physicians in the 14th century, 114. The clergy physicians, and some of the laity, in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 206. Physicians' College, when founded, xii. 214.

*Physic*. See *Natural Philosophy*.



- Physiology of the Druids*, account of, ii. 9—12.
- Picts and Scots*, harass the Britons, i. 105, 106. 115, 116. 120. 122. 129. Plunder the country between the walls, 125. Break through Severus's wall, 126. Territory occupied by them, i. 288—290. History of the Picts, iii. 37. 81—89.
- Pierce Plowman's Vision*, account of, viii. 309, 310.
- Piety of the Anglo-Normans*, vi. 333, 334.
- Pilgrimages*, fondness of the Anglo-Saxons for, iv. 302—304.
- Pilgrimage of Grace*, insurrection of, xi. 298, 299. Truce with the insurgents, 299, 300. Negotiation, 300, 301. Pacification, 301, 302. Executions in consequence of it, 303.
- Piratical expeditions*, fondness of the Danes for, iv. 321, 322. Commerce greatly interrupted by pirates, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 337, 338.
- Plague*, destructive, in 1349., viii. 57. In 1360., 62.
- Plantagenet*, Henry. See *Henry II.*
- , Edward. See *Warwick*, Earl of.
- Plautius*, Aulus, Governor of Britain, i. 30. Several actions between, and the Britons, 32, 33. Retires beyond the Thames, 34.
- Pleadings*, legal, when first in the English language, viii. 391.
- Pococke*, Reginald, Bishop of Chichester, tried for heresy, x. 34. Recants and is imprisoned for life, 34, 35.
- Poets*, British, account of, ii. 186—189.
- Poetry*, origin of, ii. 168—170. Of the antient Britons, 168. Various kinds of, 170. Their sacred hymns, 171. Theological, philosophical, and juridical poems, 171, 172. Historical poems, 172, 173. Heroic poems, 173, 174. Satirical poems, 174. War songs of different kinds, 174—176. Elegiac poems, 176, 177. Triumphal songs, 177. Dying songs, 178. Love songs, 179. Festal songs, 180. Beauties of the antient British poetry, 180, 181. Similies, 182. Sublime in sentiment and diction, 183. Versification of, 184. None of the poems of the provincial Britons preserved, 189. Poetry and music, originally united, 191. State of British poetry in the 6th century, iv. 177, 178. Greatly cultivated by the Anglo-Saxons, in the 9th century, iv. 163. Poetry and poets greatly honoured, 163—165. Astonishing powers of poetry, 165, 166. Language of the antient poets, 170, 171. Rules of versification, 171, 172. Rules of the drotquet, or common song, 172—174. Great variety of versification, 174, 175. Examples of, in English, 175. Saxon and Danish poets had great regard to quantities, 176. Used rhymes, 177. Various kinds of poems, 178. State of English poetry in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 228. Imperfect state of the English language, 228, 229. Specimen of English poetry, *ib.* Sunday songs, 229, 230. Hymns, 228. Love songs, 230, 231. Satirical poems, 231, 232. Danger of writing them, 233. Panegyric poems, 233, 234. Elegies, pastoral, &c., 234. Latin poetry, 234—242. Romance poetry, 242—244. Provençal poetry, 244, 245. State of English poetry from 1216. to 1399., viii. 244—251. 300—313. State of poetry in Britain, in the 15th century, x. 214—225. State of poetry in the 16th century, xii. 292—298.
- Poichiers*, battle of, vii. 255—258.



- Pole*, Reginald, Cardinal, lineage of, xi. 307. Excites conspiracies against Henry VIII., 308.
- Poll-tax* imposed on the Britons, by the Romans, i. 356, 357. Capitation tax imposed by Richard II., viii. 169, 170.
- Pope*, power of, increased in the 8th century, iii. 230. Gross corruption of the papal court, viii. 365, 366. 369, 370. Several laws against the papal exactions, passed in the reign of Henry IV., x. 7, 8.
- Population* of antient Britain, i. 290, 291. Of Britain, from the 6th to the 9th century, iii. 317—319. Diminished in the 15th century, and why, x. 277—281.
- Portrait-painting* in England, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 222, 223. Remarkable likeness of some portraits, 224.
- Potter's art*, state of, among the antient Britons, ii. 140.
- Prayers*, when first in English, xii. 102, 103.
- Preaching*, history of, in England, before the 12th century, viii. 182, 183. Postillating, what, 183. Declaring, *ib.* New mode of preaching introduced in the 13th century, 184. Greatly opposed, 185, 186.
- Predial slaves*, condition of, in the reign of William I. vi. 4.
- Premunire*, statute of, passed, viii. 60. A second statute enacted, 74. Repeal of, refused by the English parliament, x. 25.
- Prerogatives* of the English kings, state of, in the reign of Henry III., viii. 99. Of Edward I., 120, 121. Of Edward II., 132, 133. Of Edward III., 152. Of Richard II., 168. In the 15th century, x. 87, 88.
- of the Scottish kings, in the 15th century, x. 93, 97. In the 16th century, xii. 188—190.
- Presidents* of the Roman province, power and office of, i. 343.
- Prices* of commodities, under the Saxon government, iv. 284—286. Of provisions in 1309, viii. 438, 439.
- Priests*, British. See *Druids*.
- , Anglo-Saxon and Danish, iii. 169. Their hierarchy, 170. Power and honours, 171. Their doctrines better known than those of the Druids, 172. Religious principles, 173, 174. Deities worshipped by them, 175—178. Religious worship, 179—184. Differences between their Paganism and that of the Druids, 184.
- Primacy*, dispute about, between the Archbishop of Canterbury and York, v. 273, 274. Determined in favour of Canterbury, 274. Dispute about it again revived, 310, 311. And determined in favour of York, 316.
- Princes of the blood*, privileges of, in antient Britain, iii. 330, 331.
- Printing*, art of, when first invented, x. 200, 201. In England, 201, 202. Eminent printers in England in the 15th century, 203, 204. Printing in Scotland, 204, 205. Progress of printing in the 16th century, xii. 286, 287.
- Prisoners of war*, ransomed for, excessive sums, viii. 292, 293.
- Procurator*, imperial, power and office of, i. 344.
- Property*, law of the antient Britons concerning, i. 324—328. Laws of succession to, 334—336. Anglo-Saxon laws of succession to, iii. 401, 402.
- Provençal poetry*, account of, vi. 244, 245.

- Provisions*, papal, nature of, viii. 33. Opposed by the English parliament, 33, 34. Remonstrance of Edward III., against, 55, 56. Statute of provisors against, 59, 60.
- Provisions*, abundance of, in South Britain, ii. 356. Not so plentiful in North Britain, 359. Table of those at Prior Borne's installation feast, and their prices, viii. 438, 439. Table of, at Archbishop Nevill's installation, x. 332, 333.
- Psalmody*, fondness of the Anglo-Saxons for, iv. 306, 307.
- Ptolemy of Alexandria*, character of his geography, ii. 378, 379. His description of Britain, 380—395. Commentary thereon, 396—416.

Q.

- QUEEN-GOLD**, why payable to the Anglo-Norman Queens, vi. 40.
- Quintain*, an Anglo-Norman diversion, described, vi. 371.

R.

- RADULPHUS**, Bishop of Rochester, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, v. 309. Insolent letter from the Pope concerning, *ib.* Dispute between him and Thurstan Archbishop-elect of York, 310. Prevarication of the Pope, 311. Death and character of Radulphus, 313.
- Ranks*, distinction of, among the antient Britons, ii. 316, 317. History of the different ranks of people in Britain, from the arrival of the Saxons, to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 320—331. No material changes in ranks, in the 15th century, x. 277.
- Ransoms*, exorbitant, paid for prisoners of war, viii. 292, 293.
- Reading*, synod held at, viii. 20.
- Reformation* of the church, attempted by Wickliff. See *Lollards; Wickliff.*
- Regiam Majestatem*, a body of Scottish law, when and by whom composed, viii. 157.
- Reginald*, sub-prior of Canterbury, chosen archbishop, v. 435.
- Regni*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 250, 251. ii. 414.
- Relics*, sale of, in the 8th century, iii. 236. The Anglo-Saxons remarkable for their veneration of relics, iv. 304—306.
- Relief*, a source of revenue in feudal times, nature of, vi. 16, 17.
- Religion*, History of, in South Britain, from the first invasion by the Romans, A. A. C. 55., to the arrival of the Saxons, A. D. 449., i. 135, *et seq.* Importance of religion, 135. Antient Britons famous for, 136. Antiquity of their religion, *ib.* Delineation of it. See *Druidism.*
- , Christian, early planted in Britain, i. 184, 185. Evidences of its early introduction, 186—190. Small number of Christians in Britain before the persecution under Nero, 190. Examination of opinions, who planted Christianity in Britain, 191, *et seq.* St. James, 192. Simon Zelotes, 192—194. St. Paul, 194—197. Aristotobulus, 197. Joseph of Arimathea, 198—200. By missionaries from the east, 201. First planters



planters of Christianity in Britain not certainly known, 202. Cent. 2. Progress of the gospel gradual, *ib.* Conversion of King Lucius, 203. Account thereof, by Nennius, 205. And by Jeffrey of Monmouth, 205—208. But little truth in these narratives, 209. Cent. 3. Further progress of Christianity, 210. Persecution in Britain, 211. Government, doctrine, and worship of the British churches, in the first three centuries, 213. Expences of religion, how defrayed, 214, 215. Cent. 4. Christians delivered from persecution, 216. British bishops in the council of Arles, 217. Kindness of Constantine to the British clergy, 218, 219. Doctrine of the British churches in the fourth century, 220—222. Government of the British church, 223. Rites of worship, 224. Origin of the monastic life in Great Britain, 226—229. Public disputation between the orthodox and the Pelagians, 229—231. Germanus and Lupus return into Gaul, 232. Second expedition of Germanus into Britain, 234. The history of religion in Britain from the arrival of the Saxons to the landing of William Duke of Normandy, iii. 167, *et seq.* History and delineation of the religion of the Heathen Saxons from their arrival in Britain to the coming of Austin for their conversion, with a brief account of the British Christian churches in that period, 168. History of religion in Great Britain of Austin, A. D. 596. to A. D. 700., 169—216. History of religion in Great Britain from the year 700. to 800., 217—238. General state of religion in this century, 238. History of religion from the year 800. to the year 900., 239—257. History of religion from the year 900. to the year 1066., 257—297. State of religion in England in this century, 257, 258. History of, from the landing of William Duke of Normandy, to the death of King John, v. 271—453. History of religion, from the death of John to the accession of Henry IV. viii. 1, *et seq.* Strongly tinged with superstition, during this period, 371, 372. History of religion, from the accession of Henry IV. to the accession of Henry VII., x. 1—50. History of, in England from the accession of Henry VII. to the accession of Edward VI., xii. 1—107. History of, in Scotland. See *Scotland*, church, history of.

*Rents* antiently paid in kind, in England, iv. 105—107.

*Retainers*, laws passed against by Henry VII., xi. 65. Anecdote of him, relative to them, 64—65.

*Retaliation*, law of, established among the antient Britons, i. 322, 323.

*Retinues* of the Anglo-Saxon nobles, iv. 360. Great, of the Anglo-Norman Kings and barons, vi. 331, 332.

*Revenues of the Romans* in Britain, amount of, i. 359—360.

— *of the Anglo-Saxon Kings*, iii. 363. Derived from the crown lands, 364, 365. Fines and amerciaments, 365. Forfeitures, 368.

— *of the Norman Kings*, vi. 15. Derived from reserved rents, *ib.*

Wardship, *ib.* Marriage, 16. Relief, *ib.* Scutage, 17. Great revenues of William I., 34—40. Annual amount of, 41—42. Revenues of Henry III., viii. 100, 101. Of Edward I., 123, 124. Of Edward II., 134. Of Edward III., 153, 154. Richard II., 169, 170. Ordinary revenues of the kings of England, in the 15th century, x. 76—80. Their extraordinary revenues, 80—83. Revenues of Henry VII. and VIII., 168—170.



*Revenues* of the Scottish kings, in the 16th century, xii. 190. Crown lands, 190, 191. Annexations, 192—195.

*Reynolds*, Edward, nominated Archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 48. Extraordinary powers granted to him by the Pope, 48, 49.

*Rhetoric* of the Druids, account of, ii. 52—55. State of its culture in England, from 1066. to 1216., vi. 93—98. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 174, 175.

*Richard*, Prior of Dover, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, v. 398. King consecrated at Rome, returns to England, 399. Holds a council at Westminster, 400. His death and character, 406.

———, Prince, son of Henry II., joins a conspiracy against his father, v. 148. Is reconciled to him, 159. And kindly treated, 160. His violent conduct, 174. Is reduced to obedience, 177. His undutiful behaviour, 180. Takes the cross, 181. Forfakes his father and joins the King of France, 183. Pursues him from place to place, 185. His accession to the throne, 191.

——— I., coronation of, v. 189. First acts of his reign very gracious, 190. Collects money, troops, &c. and embarks for the Holy Land, 191. Interview of, with Philip King of France relative to their expedition, 193. The Kings of England and France winter at Messina, 194. Transactions there, 195, 196. Treaties between Richard and Tancred King of Sicily, 196. Sails from Messina, 197. Conquers Cyprus, and marries the Princess Berengaria, 198. Arrives at Acon, 199. Which he besieges and takes, *ib.* Operations of the war in the Holy Land, 200, 201. Proceedings of the Christian army there, 207. Richard prepares for his return to England, 208. Is unjustly accused of the murder of Conrade, King of Jerusalem, 209. Further proceedings in Palestine, 209, 210. Embarks for England, is shipwrecked and taken prisoner, 211. Is delivered over to the Emperor, 211, 212. Conspiracy of the King of France and Prince John against him, defeated, 212. Richard's undaunted deportment in his captivity, 213. Negotiations for his deliverance, 213, 214. Richard's noble behaviour before the Diet of the German empire, 214. Treaty for his deliverance concluded, and money for his ransom collected, 215. Efforts of the King of France, and Prince John, to prevent his deliverance, 216. Richard arrives in England, *ib.* And takes Nottingham castle, 217. Holds a great council there, *ib.* Is crowned at Winchester, *ib.* Refuses to admit the claim of the King of Scotland to the northern counties, 218. Collects money and raises an army, with which he sails to the continent, *ib.* Pardons Prince John, *ib.* Operations of the war with France suspended by a truce, 219. Richard's employment during the truce, 219, 220. Richard's hostages liberated by the Duke of Austria, 220. War with France renewed, and terminated by a peace, *ib.* Another war with France, terminated by a truce, 223. Richard wounded by Bertram de Gourdon, 225. Dies, 226. Character of King Richard, 227. Improvement of the laws by him, vi. 63. Extract of a provençal poem of his, 245.

——— II., son of Edward the Black Prince, created Prince of Wales, vii. 287. Succeeds Edward III. and is crowned, 297. Unfavourable state of England, 298. Progress of the war with France, 298—300.

- War with Scotland, 300, 301. Parliament convened, 301. Expedition into Brittany, 303. Return of the English army, 303, 304. State of the common people, 306. Insurrection among them, 306. Progress thereof, 308. Insurgents send a message to Richard, *ib.* His answer, *ib.* The insurgents enter London, 309. Richard holds a council in the Tower, 310. The insurgents murder several great men, 310. The King meets them, 310, 311. Their leader Wat Tyler killed, 312. Richard's preference of mind, *ib.* Insurrections in other parts of the kingdom, 313. Richard raises an army, and revokes the charters, 314. Insurgents tried and executed, *ib.* Issues a general pardon, 316. Richard's marriage, *ib.* And unpopular conduct, 317. Schemes for prosecuting the war, 318—320. Truce with France and Scotland, 322, 323. Richard's expedition into Scotland, 324, 325. Bestows presents on his favourites and uncles, 325, 326. Threatened with an invasion from France, 327, 328. Which is prevented, 332. Diffensions between Richard and his parliament, 328, 329. A council of regency appointed, 330. Proceedings of Richard after signing the commission of regency, 331. Holds a consultation at Nottingham, 333. Returns to London, 334. His attendants imprisoned or banished, 337. Destruction of his favourites, 339. Compliment to Richard, *ib.* Others condemned and executed, 340. Grants made by the parliament, 342, 343. Battle of Otterburn, 344. Truce with France, 345. Richard assumes the government, 345, 346. His wife conduct, 346. Holds several parliaments, 347—349. 351. Truce with France prolonged, 349, 350. Marries the daughter of Charles VI. King of France, 352. Holds a parliament at Westminster, 354—356. And at Shrewsbury, 357. Discontents against his government, 359. Expedition of Richard, 361. He is imprisoned, 363. Resigns his crown, 364. Articles of impeachment against him, 363. Richard is deposed, 365, 366. Is murdered, 366. ix. 10. His character, vii. 366, 367.
- Richard III.*, coronation of, ix. 265. First acts of his government, 266. Makes a progress through the country, 267. Is crowned at York, 268. Plots against him, 269—271. He prepares to meet them, 272. Proclamation of, against his opponents, 273. Insurgents are dispersed, 274. The principal of them put to death, 275, 276. Returns to London and holds a parliament, 276. Engages the members to swear to support the succession to his son, 277. Precautions to secure his throne, 278. Loses his queen, and proposes to marry Elizabeth daughter of Edward IV., 279—280. His perplexities, and preparations to meet the Earl of Richmond, 283, 284. Is defeated and slain at the battle of Bosworth, 286. His character, 287, 288. Dissertation on the crimes imputed to him, xii. 395—434.
- , Earl of Cornwall. See *Cornwall*.
- Richmond*, Henry, Earl of, plots formed in his favour, against Richard III., ix. 270, 271. Attempts a landing in England but is obliged to put back by storms, 275. Flees to France, 279. Lands at Milford Haven, 282. His progress, 284, 285. Defeats Richard at the battle of Bosworth, 286. See *Henry VII.*
- , Margaret, Dutchess of, grandmother of Henry VIII. Death of, xi. 82.



- Risby*, John, burnt for heresy, x. 43.
- Rivers*, Antony Woodville, Earl of, literary character of, x. 147. Account of his works, 148. Beheaded, 149.
- Roads and Bridges* in antient Britain, ii. 260.
- Robbery*, the antient Britons addicted to, ii. 311. Anglo-Saxon laws against, iii. 410—412. Prevalence of, in England in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 384—386. In the 15th century, x. 297, 298. In the 16th century, xii. 362.
- Robert of Gloucester*, character of his Metrical Chronicle of England, viii. 301, 302.
- Robert Duke of Normandy*, son of William I., war between him and his father, v. 30. They are reconciled, 30, 31. Robert is sent with an army into the north, 31. Unsuccessful attempt to place him on the throne, 39, 40. Expedition of William into Normandy, 42. Peace between them, 43. Rupture between them, 44. Hostilities commenced, 45. Goes to the Holy Land, and mortgages his dominions to William, 47. Supplanted in his succession to the English crown by Henry I. 55, 56. Invades England, 57, 58. Peace between him and Henry, 59. The barons of his party ruined by Henry, 60. Robert visits England, 61. Steps taken by Henry to weaken Robert, 61, 62. Expedition against Normandy, 62. Which is conquered by Henry, 63. Robert taken prisoner, and confined for life, 64. Anecdote of his generosity, vi. 340, 341.
- Robert I. King of Scotland.* See *Bruce*.
- II. (*Stewart*) reign of, vii. 370. Appoints his second son Governor of Scotland, 371. Death of, *ib.* His marriages and issue, 372.
- III., accession of, vii. 372. His kingdom rent by deadly feuds, 373. Character of, ix. 289, 290. His death, 293.
- Roches*, Peter de. See *Winchester*.
- Rocking-Stones* of the Druids in Cornwall, notice of, ii. 37—39.
- Romance language and poetry* account of, vi. 242—244.
- Romances* and metrical chronicles of the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 300—303. Catalogues of metrical romances, 304—307. Contradicted true history, 307, 308.
- Romans*, first arrival of, in Britain, i. 4. State of Britain under their government, 5—114. Recall their army from Britain, 119. The other Romans leave Britain, 119, 120. Final departure of the Romans, 124. Fruitless application of the Britons to them for assistance, 129. Account of their civil and military government of Britain, 338—366. Effects of their departure from Britain, 367. Dissertation on the Roman forces in Britain, ii. 454, *et seq.*, and see *Forces*.
- Rome*, general council at, v. 403, 404. A second council, held by Pope Innocent III., 449. Which is attended by Scotch bishops, 453.
- Rous*, John, the historian, notice of, x. 133, 134.
- Ruins*, remarkable, at Glenelg, account of, iv. 121—124.
- Rutland*, Earl of, conspires against Henry IV., ix. 7. Betrays his associates, 8, 9. Slain at the battle of Agincourt, when Duke of Rutland, 53.



## S.

**SACRIFICES** of the antient Britons, i. 167. Human victims offered by them, 168, 169. And by the Saxons, iii. 181.

**Sailors**, English, excelled those of other countries, vi. 292. High character of, in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 353, 354.

**Saints**, veneration of the Anglo-Saxons for, iv. 304—306.

**Salic Law**, notice of, vii. 202.

**Salisbury**. See *John* of Salisbury.

——, Thomas Montagu, Earl of, besieges Orleans, ix. 88. Is slain there, 89.

——, Earl of, son of the former, generalship of, at the battle of Bloreheath, ix. 160. Beheaded by Queen Margaret after the battle of Wakefield, 169.

——, Countess of, beheaded, xi. 326.

**Salt**, how made by the antient Britons, ii. 357, 358. Improved method of making it, introduced, in the 15th century, x. 178.

**Sawtre**, Sir William, burnt for heresy, x. 3, 4.

**Saxons**, embassy to, from the Britons, i. 130, 131. Address of the British ambassadors to them, 132. Arrive in Britain, iii. 1. Britons and Saxons defeat the Scots and Picts, 2. Arrival of another army of Saxons, *ib.* Saxons determine to settle in Britain, 3. Various conduct of the Britons on this occasion, 3, 4. War between the Saxons and Britons, 4. Arrival of another army of Saxons, 5. Progress of the war between the Saxons and Britons, 6. Kings of Kent, *ib.* Saxons found the kingdoms of Suffex, 7. Wessex, 8. Of the East Saxons, East Angles, and Mercians, 11. And of Northumberland, 12. The Heptarchy completed, 13. The religion of the Heathen Saxons delineated, 168, *et seq.* Anglo-Saxon and Danish priests, 169. Their hierarchy, 170. Their power and honours, 171. Their doctrines better known than those of the Druids, 172. Their religious principles, 173—175. Deities worshipped by them, 175—178. Rites of worship, 179. Sacrifices, 180. Divination, 180, 181. Their temples, 182. Images, 183. Festivals, *ib.* Differences between the paganism of the Saxons and Danes, and that of the Druids, 184. Original sect of the Saxons, 304. Were enemies to learning, iv. 4. Observations on their language, 365—373.

**Scarcity of Books** in the 15th century, anecdotes of, x. 115—117.

**School Divinity**, nature and design of, vi. 101. Cultivated greatly in England between 1066. and 1216., 101, 102. State of in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 180. Bible doctors, who, 181. Sententiaries, 181, 182. The works of the schoolmen despised in the 15th century, xii. 208—209. And the reputation of school divinity diminished,

211.

**Schools**, Cathedral account of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 162.

163.

——, **Conventual**, account of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 164.

165.

- Schools* in English towns and cities, account of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 166, 167.
- , Jewish, in the 11th and 12th centuries, account of, vi. 168, 169.
- Schwartz*, Barthold, discovered gunpowder, viii. 289.
- Sciences*, studied in England, in the seventh century, iv. 13—16. In the eighth century, 42, 43. In the eleventh century, 83—85. Sciences cultivated from 1066. to 1216., and of the improvements made therein, vi. 88—121. View of, from 1216. to 1399., viii. 172—210. Not increased in the 15th century, x. 117.
- Scot*, John, life and character of, iv. 46, *et seq.* Extracts from his works, with remarks, 50—52.
- Scot*, Michael, a mathematician of the 13th century, account of, viii. 220—221. His studies, 222. His death, 223.
- Scotland*, antient, political divisions of, iii. 314, 315. Establishment of the Scotch monarchy, 316. Feudal system when introduced, vi. 21.
- Scotland and Scots*, territory occupied by the Scots and Picts, i. 288—290. They make incursions into South Britain, 105, 106. 115, 116. 120. 122. 129. Plunder the country between the walls, 125. Break through Severus's wall, 126. Are defeated by the Saxons and Britons, iii. 2. State of the Scots and Picts, in the fifth and sixth centuries, 15, 16. Fergus, King of Scots, 16. Boundaries of his kingdom, 17. His successors, 18. Aidan King of Scots, 19, 20. List of his successors, 34—37. 45, 46. 58—61. A long peace between the Saxons and Scots, 37, 38. History of, in the ninth century, 81—90. In the tenth century, 111—115. History of, from 978. to 1066., 159—166. History of, in the eleventh century, v. 52—54. In the twelfth century, 115—118. 187, 188. In the 13th century, 263—269. vii. 57—65. Dispute about the succession to the Scottish crown, 80. Edward I.'s artful conduct, 81. Assembly convened at Norham, 81, 82. Superiority of Scotland claimed by him, and on what grounds, 82, 83. His superiority acknowledged, 84. He demands and obtains possession of the royal castles, 85. Competitors for the crown of Scotland, 85, 86. Their claims examined, 86, 87. Edward determines in favour of John Baliol, 88. War with Scotland, 93. Great advantages of Edward, 94. Successes of the Scots, 95. Greater victories of Edward, *ib.* Severely treated by him, 97. Revolution in Scotland, by Sir William Wallace, 100—102. The Scots defeated at the battle of Falkirk, 103, 104. Stirling castle taken by the Scots, 105. Edward invades Scotland, 106—108. Nobility of Scotland submit to him, 109. Stirling castle taken, and Sir William Wallace executed, 110. Edward's plan for its government, 110, 111. Robert Bruce forms the design of mounting the throne of Scotland, 111. See *Bruce*. Scotland invaded by an English army, 113—115. History of, from 1327. to 1377., 293—297. Peace between England and Scotland, 184. English laws ineffectually attempted to be introduced by Edward I., viii. 125, 126. Expedition into by Henry IV., ix. 11. The Scots invade England and are defeated, 16. History of Scotland from the year 1399. to the accession of James IV. A. D. 1488., 289—416. Distracted state of the country, in the 14th century, and at the beginning of the 15th century, x. 90—92. Authority of its laws



- laws secured, 92, 93. People oppressed, 94, 95. Patrimony of the Scottish crown, 94. Its depopulation in the 15th century, accounted for, x. 280, 281. History of Scotland during the reign of James IV., xi. 373—441. Of James V., 441—530. State of society in the 16th century, xii. 170, 171. Manners of the Scots in the same period, 367, 368. See its sovereigns under their respective names.
- Scotland*, Church history of the Scots and Picts, in the fifth century, iii. 187, 188. In the seventh century, 216. In the ninth century, 254, 255. State of the Scotch bishops, 255, 256. Ecclesiastical history of, in the tenth century, 284, 285. In the eleventh century, v. 289, 290. In the 12th century, 330—332. 413—420. In the 13th and 14th century, viii. 79—83. Church history of Scotland imperfectly known in the 15th century, x. 42, 43. General assemblies of, convoked at Perth, 44—46. Convocation at Edinburgh, 46, 47. Ecclesiastical history of Scotland from the accession of James IV. to the death of James V., xii. 107—144. Competition for offices, after the battle of Flodden, 112—114.
- , constitution of. See *Constitution*.
- Scotus*, Johannes Duns, birth and education of, viii. 223, 224. Removes to Paris, 225. And thence to Cologne, 225, 226. The founder of the Scottists, 226. Extravagant eulogies of him, *ib.* His writings, 227.
- Scriptorium* or writing chamber of monasteries, notice of, vi. 119, 120.
- Scriptura*, a Roman tax, nature of, i. 353.
- Scrophula*, royal touch for, in high repute in the 13th century, viii. 210.
- Sculpture*, state of, among the antient Britons, ii. 160—162. Among the Pagan Saxons, iv. 154, 155. Among the Anglo-Saxons, after their conversion to Christianity, 155, 156. State of in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 218—220. In the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 294, 295. In the 15th century, x. 206, 207. In the 16th century, xii. 288, 289.
- Scutage* or shield money, on what occasions payable, vi. 17.
- Sea-signals* of the antient Britons, ii. 271.
- Sea-fights*, how conducted, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 211—213.
- Sea*, the dominion of, vigorously maintained in the 15th century, x. 243, 244.
- Seaton*, Alexander, confessor to James IV., charged with heresy, xii. 122. Defends himself, *ib.* Effects his escape, 123.
- Selgova*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 281. ii. 403.
- Seminaries of learning*, among the antient Britons, account of, ii. 72—74. Mode of teaching therein, 75—77. Seminaries established in Britain by the Romans, 92, 93. Of the Britons in the 5th century, iii. 185, 186. Of the English in the 7th century, iv. 16—18. In the 9th century, 59—65. History of the chief seminaries of learning in Great Britain, from 1066. to 1216., vi. 155—169. From 1216. to 1399., viii. 251—262. Seminaries in England in the 15th century, x. 150—154. In Scotland, 154—167. Seminaries in the 16th century, xii. 245—256.
- Sepulture*, rites of, among the antient Britons, ii. 332—335. Among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 354—357.



- Services*, military, required, under the feudal system, vi. 12—14.
- Severus*, Emperor, arrives in Britain, i. 87. Completes the wall of Adrian with stone, 89, 90. ii. 477, 478. Its fortifications, 479. Stationes, what, 479—480. List of, 481. Castella, 481, 482. Complement of troops allowed to, 482—484. His wall broke through, by the Scots and Picts, 485. Severus dies at York, i. 91.
- Seymour*, Lady Jane, married by Henry VIII., xi. 293. Dies after the birth of a son, 304.
- Shaw*, Dr. Ralph, preaches in behalf of Richard III.'s right to the throne, ix. 261.
- Shevez*, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, notice of, x. 49, 50. xii. 108.
- Ship-building* greatly improved by Alfred the Great, iv. 221, 222.
- Shipping*, British, history of, from the Roman invasion to the arrival of the Saxons, ii. 262, *et seq.*
- , antient British boats and ships described, 262—268. British shipping increased after the Roman conquest, 272. Ships of war, 274. A fleet kept by the Romans for protecting their trade, 276. British fleet very formidable under Carausius and Allectus, 276, 277. Shipping of Britain destroyed, after the departure of the Romans, 278.
- , English, state of, in the reign of Edgar the Peaceable, iv. 226—228. In the reign of Ethelred, 229, 230. Of Canute the Great and Harold, 233, 234. In the reign of Edward the Confessor, 234—236. In the reigns of William I. to that of King John, vi. 289, *et seq.* English ships more numerous than in the former period, 289, 290. Description of them, 290, 291. English ships much valued, 291, 292. Decreased in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 354, 355. Causes of this decrease, 356. State of British shipping in the 15th century, x. 274. In the 16th century, xii. 341—345.
- Shipwrecks*, antient cruel law of England concerning, vi. 284. Repealed by Henry I. and II., 284, 285.
- Shiregemote*, court of, its authority and influence, iii. 347—349.
- Shiregerieve* or sheriff, power and authority of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 344.
- Shrewsbury*, battle of, ix. 19, 20.
- , Talbot, Earl of, attempts to recover Guienne, ix. 147. Slain at Castillon, 148.
- Shrines* of saints, made in England in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 296.
- Sicily*, transactions of Richard I. of England and Philip of France, during their wintering there, on their way to the Holy Land, v. 194—197. Is offered by the Pope to Richard Earl of Cornwall, who refuses it, vii. 23. Is accepted by Henry III. for his second son Prince Edmond, *ib.* Difficulties incurred by Henry in consequence, 23, 24.
- Signals*, sea, of the antient Britons, ii. 271.
- Silk manufactures*, state of, in England in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 198—200. In the 15th century, x. 187, 188.
- , considerable quantities of, imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 275.
- Silures*, kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 267—270. ii. 412.

- Silver-mines* of antient Britain, notice of, ii. 139. Silver, by whom discovered in Britain, 240, 241. Exported therefrom, by the Romans, 219.
- Simeon of Durham*, the historian, life and character of, vi. 138.
- Simmel*, Lambert, anecdotes of the early life of, xi. 11. Personates the Earl of Warwick, *ib.* Is removed to Ireland, 12. And proclaimed king, *ib.* Alarm of Henry VII. 13. Simmel assisted with forces by Margaret Duchess of Burgundy, 15. And crowned, *ib.* Passes over to England, and is defeated at the battle of Stoke, 16. Treated with lenity by Henry VII., 17.
- Sincerity* of the antient Britons, ii. 308, 309.
- Six Articles*, statute of, passed, xi. 310, 311. Account of its contents, xii. 82—84. Cruelty of this act, 85. Too cruel to be executed, 86, 87.
- Skins*, the first clothing of the antient Britons, ii. 125. Exported from Britain by the Phœnicians, 204.
- Slaves*, British, antiently exported, ii. 225, 226. iv. 237—239. vi. 267. Different classes of, from the 5th to the 10th centuries, iii. 320—322. Slavery mitigated and diminished, 322, 323. Could not be magistrates, 332. Not allowed to bear arms, iv. 142. Their state and different classes, in the reign of William I., vi. 2—5. How manumitted, 6. Slavery further diminished in the 15th century, x. 52—54. And gradually abolished, xii. 147, 148.
- Sloth*, the antient Britons addicted to, ii. 311—313.
- Smuggling*, singular kind of, in the 8th century, iv. 197, 198.
- Sobriety* of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 336. Declined after their establishment in England, 337.
- Social affections* cherished by the antient Britons, ii. 309.
- Social disposition* of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 325, 326.
- Society*, state of the different classes of, in the reign of William, i. 2—6.
- Socmen*, state of, under the feudal system, vi. 20.
- Somerſet*, Duke of, Governor of Normandy, having lost that province, returns to England, ix. 143. Deprived of the government of Calais, 151.
- Speaker of the House of Commons*, when first appointed, viii. 161.
- Spencers*, the minions of Edward II., conspiracy against, vii. 153. Are banished, 155. Hugh Spencer opposes Edward's going into France, 164. Edward and Hugh Spencer taken and executed, 171, 172.
- Spiceries* of various kinds imported in the eleventh and twelfth centuries, vi. 274.
- St. Alban's*, first battle of, ix. 153. Second battle, 170, 171. Dissolute conduct of the Abbot and Monks of St. Alban's, xii. 45.
- St. Andrew's*, bishopric of, erected into an archbishopric, x. 48, 49.
- University of*, when founded, x. 154, 155. Confirmed by the Pope, 156. Its celebrity, 156, 157. Favoured by James I. 158. not rich, *ib.* St. Salvator's college in, founded, 159—161. A second college founded there, xii. 255, 256.
- St. Aubin*, battle of, xi. 21.
- St. James* did not preach the gospel in Britain, i. 192.
- St. Ninian*, notice of, ii. 87, 88.
- St. Patrick*, the apostle of the Irish, notice of, ii. 88.



- St. Paul* probably preached the gospel in Britain, i. 194—197.
- Stamford*, university at, fabulous account of, ii. 73, 74.
- Standard*, battle of the, v. 92.
- Standards* of the antient Britons, ii. 153. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 207.
- Standing Army*, maintained in Britain, by the Romans, i. 361.
- Standish*, Dr., questions the communities of the clergy, xii. 16. Conferences and disputes, 17, 18. The affair compromised, 19.
- Stanley*, Sir William, beheaded, on a charge of treason against Henry VII., xi. 41.
- Statues*, antient British, few remaining, ii. 162, 163. Beautiful, executed in the 13th century, viii. 295. In the 15th century, x. 247, 248.
- Statute Law*, review of, in the reign of Henry III., viii. 95—98. In the reign of Edward I., 118, 119. Of Edward II., 131, 132. New mode of making laws, introduced in the reign of Edward III., 148. Review of his statutes, 149, 150. Impracticable statutes, 150, 151. Statute law, in the reign of Richard II., 166. From the accession of Henry IV. to that of Henry VII., x. 68, 69.
- Stephen*, Earl of Boulogne, usurps the English crown, v. 82, 83. His coronation, 84, 85. Arts of popularity, 86. Makes peace with David King of Scotland, 87. Earl of Gloucester submits to Stephen, 87. He obtains Normandy, 88. Miscarries in his design to seize the Earl of Gloucester, 89. War with Scotland, 90. Confederacy against Stephen, 91. Battle of the Standard, 92. Stephen quarrels with the bishops, 93, 94. Is summoned before a council of the clergy, 95—97. Disastrous state of England in the year 1140, 99. Stephen taken prisoner at Lincoln, 99, 100. Is confined in the castle of Bristol, 101. Is exchanged with the Earl of Gloucester, 107. Civil wars continued, and misery of England, 109. England invaded by Prince Henry, 112. Treaty between him and Stephen, 113. Death of Stephen, 114. His character, 115. Anecdote of his gallantry and honour, vi. 337, 338.
- Stewart*, John, Earl of Lennox, becomes the confidant of James V., xi. 489, 491. Retires from court, 491. Attempts to rescue the King, 492. Battle of Linlithgow Bridge, 493. Is killed, 494.
- Stewart*, Alexander, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, slain at Flodden, xii. 110.
- Stirling Castle*, besieged and taken by the Scots, vii. 105, 106. Retaken by the English, 109, 110.
- Stoke*, battle of, xi. 16.
- Stone*, cutting for the, when first practised, x. 124.
- Stone-buildings* rare in England in the 8th and 9th centuries, iv. 117—119. And in Wales, 120.
- Stonehenge*, notice of, ii. 117.
- Stratford*, John, Archbishop of Canterbury, quarrels with Edward III., vii. 218. Presumption of the Archbishop, 218, 219. Progress and conclusion of this quarrel, 219, 220. viii. 53, 54. His death, 56.
- Strongbow*, Earl, expedition of, to Ireland, v. 139, 140. Succeeds to the crown of Leinster, 140. Incurs the displeasure of Henry II., 141. To whom he is reconciled, 142. And is received into favour, *ib.*



- Subinfeudation*, nature of, vi. 18, 19.
- Succession to the Crown*, rules of the antient British concerning, i. 294—296. Rules of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 351—354. Among the Scots and Welsh, 354, 355. Succession to the English crown, unsettled, after the death of Edward the Confessor, vi. 54. This circumstance advantageous to the antient English, 55.
- Succession to property*, antient British law of, i. 334—336. Anglo-Saxon Law of, iii. 401, 402.
- Sudbury*, Simon, nominated Archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 65.
- Suetonius Paulinus*, subdues Anglesea, i. 48. Defeats the Britons under Boadicea, 56. Is recalled, 57.
- Suffolk*, William de la Pole, Earl of, succeeds the Earl of Salisbury, in conducting the siege of Orleans, ix. 89. Raises the siege, 95. Contracts Henry VI. to Margaret of Anjou, 127. His conduct approved by parliament, 130. Becomes odious to the people, 132. Tried and banished, 138, 139. His violent death, 139.
- , Edmund de la Pole, Earl of, flees to Flanders, and why, xi. 68. Is persuaded to return to England, *ib.* Flees again to Flanders, 69. Is delivered up to Henry VII., 73.
- Superstitions* introduced in the 7th century, account of, iii. 215. Increase of, in the 11th century, 296, 297. The piety of the Anglo-Saxons tinctured with superstition, iv. 298. The religion of the 13th and 14th centuries tinctured with it, viii. 371—373. And also that of the 15th century, x. 290, 291.
- Surgery* of the Druids, account of, ii. 44—46. State of, in England, in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 210. In the 14th and 15th centuries, x. 122, 123. In the 16th century, xii. 216, 217. Surgeons incorporated by Henry VIII., 215, 216.
- Surnames*, origin of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 351, 352. When introduced among the Anglo-Normans, vi. 328.
- Surry*, Earl of, imprisoned, xi. 361, 362. Beheaded, 364. Character of his poetry, xii. 296, 297.
- Suffex*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 7. History of, 39. Converted to Christianity by Wilfred, 211. Situation of this kingdom, 307.
- Swearing*, a prevalent vice of the English in the 15th century, x. 292, 293.
- Sweating Sickness*, in the 15th and 16th centuries, account of, x. 122.
- Sweyn*, King of Denmark, invades England, iii. 118. Wages war with the English, 120. Inflicts dreadful miseries on them, 121. Death of, and its consequences, 122.
- Sworn Brothers*, in chivalry, who, vi. 322, 323.
- Sylvius Bonus*, a British author, notice of, ii. 84.
- Synods*, held in England, viii. 3. 12. 14. 20. 27. 29. 43. xii. 1. 24. 60, 61.

## T.

**TALBOT.** See *Shrewsbury*.

*Tallages*, levied by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 35, 36.

*Tancred*, King of Sicily, usurps the throne, v. 196. Treaties between Richard I. and Tancred, *ib.*

*Tanistry*.

- Tanistry*, in the Irish customs, explained, i. 296, 297.
- Tapestry* made in England in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 198.  
— considerable quantities of, imported in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 275, 276.
- Tasca*, the word, found on Cunobelin's coins, ii. 250. Its import examined, 250—252.
- Taxes*, imposed on the Britons by the Romans, i. 351. Land tax, 352. Tax called *scriptura*, 353. Tax on mines, 354. Roman civil and military lists, 355. Poll-tax, 356. Various other taxes, 357, 358. Levied by the Anglo-Norman kings, vi. 36, *et seq.*
- Tenures*, Feudal, nature and principles of, explained, vi. 11—19.
- Testaments*, Anglo-Saxon law concerning, iii. 402—405.
- Tevesbury*, battle of, ix. 220—223.
- Theatrical performances*, of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 374. Ecclesiastical plays, called miracles, 374. Secular plays, 375, 376. Mysteries and miracles of the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 419, 420. Moralities, 420. Tragedies and comedies, what, 420, 421. Of the 16th century, xii. 382, 384.
- Texali*, kingdom of, situation, &c. of, i. 287.
- Thanes* or nobles of England, different degrees and privileges of, iii. 325, 326. The Anglo-Saxon thanes the same with the ancient German comites, 326—328. State of the thanes and their lands, 329, 330. Derivation of the term thane, 329, *note.*
- Theft*, Anglo-Saxon law concerning, iii. 407—410. Frequent among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 339. How punishable by law of Richard I., vi. 286.
- Theodore*, Archbishop of Canterbury, iii. 206, 207. Exerciseth his metropolitanical authority, 208. His actions and death, 214. Literary character of, iv. 12, 13.
- Theodosius*, Governor of Britain, i. 107. His great success and wise conduct, 108. Much beloved there, 109—111.
- Theobald*, Abbot of Beck, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, v. 321.
- Thomas Becket*, rise of, v. 340. Elected Archbishop of Canterbury, 341. Disobliges King Henry II., 341. Breach between them, 342. Their opposite views, 342, 343. Promises to obey the constitutions of Charndon, 344, 345. Of which he repents, 346. Attempts to leave England, but is put back, *ib.* Further contumacy of Becket, 347. Tried before the parliament, and convicted, 348. Further proceedings against him, 349, 350. His audacious conduct, 351, 352. Makes his escape out of the kingdom, 353. A splendid embassy sent to the Pope, to procure his deposition, 353, 354. Ill success of the ambassadors at the court of France, 354, 355. Becket's agents admitted to an audience of the Pope, 355. Speeches of the English ambassadors to the Pope, 356. His answer, and their return to England, 357. Becket's reception by the King of France, 357. And by the Pope, 358. Severe measures against Becket and his friends, 359. The conduct of the Pope and Becket offensive to Henry II., 361. Becket excommunicates several persons, and threatens to excommunicate the King, 362, 363. Henry's precautions against the threatened excommunication, 364. Becket, prevented by the King of France from excommunicating Henry, excommunicates his



- his ministers, 365, 366. Letter of the English bishops to Becket, 363, 364. Change in the politics of the court of Rome, 366, 367. Consternation of Becket, 367, 368. He is supported by the King of France, 368. Duplicity of the Pope, 369. Condescension of Henry II., 370. Inflexibility of Becket, 370. The King appeals to Rome, 371. Attempts to reconcile them, unsuccessful, 372—375. Becket excommunicates several persons of high rank, 376. Two nuncios from the Pope fruitlessly endeavour to make peace, 376. Terms of reconciliation mutually proposed, and mutually rejected, 377, 378. Precautions to prevent the sentence of excommunication being published in England, 379. Terms of reconciliation settled in the court of Rome, 379, 380. Reconciliation between Henry and Becket, 381—383. Becket's agents ill received in England, 384. Becket, having sent before him sentences of excommunication and suspension against several bishops, lands in England, 385, 386. Troubles about the excommunicated bishops, 386. Becket's progress from and return to Canterbury, 387. Passionate expressions of the King, 388. Becket killed, 389—391. Delineation of his character, 391. Immediate effects of Becket's death, 392. Canonized, 401. His shrine visited by Henry II., 154, 401. And by Louis VII., King of France, 405. Expensive retinues of Becket, vi. 331, 332.
- Thor*, a Saxon deity, account of, iii. 177.
- Thorp*, William, persecuted for heresy, x. 5, 6.
- Thurstan*, Archbishop of York, disputes with the Archbishop of Canterbury for the primacy, v. 310. Prevarication of the Pope, 311. Obtains a decision in his favour, 316. Disputes between him and the Bishop of Winchester, 328. Appeals to Rome, 329.
- Time*, how computed by the Druids, ii. 16—21.
- Tin mines*, of antient Britain, notice of, ii. 136.
- Tin*, exported from Britain by the Phœnicians, ii. 202. And by the Romans, 218. Great quantities exported in the 11th and 12th centuries. vi. 272.
- Tiptoft*. See *Worcester*.
- Tithings*, institution of, and how governed, iii. 334, 335. Great union among the members of a tithing, 336. Advantages of this institution, 337. Societies formed in imitation of tithings, 337, 338.
- Titus Livius*, the historian of Henry V., notice of, x. 132, 133.
- Tobias*, Bishop of Rochester, Life of, iv. 25.
- Torture*, antient British law concerning, i. 332. Employed in the 15th century, x. 73.
- Tournaments*, origin of, vi. 367. Description of, 368—370. Permission of Richard I. for holding them in England, 409, 410. Account of, in England in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 411—415. Account of a splendid one in England, in 1467., 284—286. Splendid, of Henry VIII. and Francis I., xii. 354, 355.
- Tournay*, besieged by Edward III., vii. 214. Reduced to great distress, 215. Siege raised in consequence of a truce, 216.
- Towers*, antient circular, in Scotland and Ireland, iv. 124—126.
- Towns*, antient British, account of, ii. 115, 116.
- *Anglo-Saxon*, how governed, iii. 341.



- Towton*, battle of, ix. 176—178.
- Tracee*, William, burnt for heresy, after his death, xii. 35. 36.
- Trade*. See *Commerce*.
- Trading towns*, chief, of Britain, ii. 229, 230. In the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 259—266. In the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 338, 339.
- Tragetours* or Jugglers of the 14th century, account of, viii. 421, 422.
- Trail*, Robert, Bishop of St. Andrew's, notice of, viii. 83.
- Transubstantiation*, doctrine of, when first introduced into the creed of the English church, v. 277. Strongly declared by the council of Rome, 450. Established as a doctrine of the church in the 13th century, viii. 35. The received creed of the church in the 15th century, x. 41, 42.
- Trastamare*, Henry, Earl of, crowned king of Castile, vii. 273. Is defeated at the battle of Najara, 274. Defeats and puts to death the tyrant Don Pedro, 276.
- Trial* by judicial combat, when introduced, vi. 45. By jury, when introduced, 48.
- Trinobantes*, Kingdom of, situation, limits, and chief places in, i. 254—257. ii. 411.
- Trinoda Neccssitas*, nature of, vi. 9.
- Trithing man and Trithing courts*, jurisdiction of, iii. 341, 342.
- Trivet*, Nicholas, the historian, notice of, viii. 242—244.
- Troops*, Roman, number of, in Britain, i. 366.
- Tudor*, Owen, marries the Queen-dowager Catherine, ix. 113. Is imprisoned after her death, and makes his escape, 114.
- Turgot*, Bishop of St. Andrew's, character of, v. 331. Account of his life and writings, vi. 131. 133.
- Tyler*, Wat, heads an insurrection against Richard II., vii. 307. Progress of the insurgents, 308, 309. They enter London, 309. Murder several great men, 310. Are met by Richard, 310, 311. Wat Tyler killed, 312. And his followers dispersed, *ib.*
- Tyranny* of the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, iv. 340. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 349, 350.

## U.

- UNIVERSITY*, fabulous account of, founded by King Bladud, ii. 73, 74. See *Cambridge, Oxford, Paris, Glasgow, St. Andrew's*.
- 
- Advantages of universities, vi. 162. Important changes introduced into the English universities, in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 252, 253. Universities founded at Northampton and Stamford, but dissolved, 259, 260. Third University of England, 260. None in Scotland till the 15th century, x. 154.

## V.

- VACOMAGI*, kingdom of, situation of, i. 287.
- Valentia*, Roman province of, extent of, i. 349.

- Valour* in war, of the antient Britons, ii. 300, 301. Of the Anglo-Saxons, 309, 310. Diminished after their settlement in Britain, 311, 312. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 335, 336. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 374. In the 15th century, x. 286—287.
- Value* of money, comparison of, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 302—306. Comparative value of money, and of expences of living in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 352, 353.
- Venereal disease*, when introduced into Europe, xii. 217. 218.
- Venicontes*, kingdom of, situation of, i. 288.
- Vere*, Robert de, Duke of Ireland, raises an army to defend Richard II., vii. 337. Is defeated, *ib.* Dies in obscurity, 339.
- Verse* of the antient British poets, ii. 184. Rules of versification of the Anglo-Saxon poets, iv. 171—174. Great variety of versification, 174, 175. Examples of, in English, 175.
- Verulamium*, taken by the Britons, i. 53.
- Vicar of Britain*, power and office of, i. 349, 350, 351.
- Vices* of the antient Britons delineated, ii. 310, 315. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 338—342. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 342—350. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 382—388. In the 15th century, x. 286—291. In the 16th century, xii. 357, 359—362.
- Victories*, naval, account of,—in the reign of Henry V., x. 244. Henry VI., 245. Edward IV., 245. Richard III., 245, 246.
- Villains* in grofs, numbers and state of, in the reign of William I., vi. 3. ——— regardant, services of, vi. 4.
- Villanage*, decline of, in England, x. 54.
- Vineyards*, English, in the 13th century, viii. 269, 270.
- Virtues* of the antient Britons, ii. 298—310. Of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 308—327. Of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 333—341. Of the English in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 374—382. In the 15th century, x. 291—298. In the 16th century, xii. 356, 358, 359.
- Viscount*, dignity of, when created, x. 54.
- Vortigern*, Sovereign of the Silures, character of, i. 130, 131. Recommends the invitation of the Saxons into Britain, 131.
- Voyages* for making discoveries, promoted by Alfred the Great, iv. 212. Voyage of Ochter, with remarks, 213—216. Of Wulfstan, 217, 218.

## W.

**WAKEFIELD**, battle of, ix. 167, 168.

*Wales*, political divisions of, iii. 312—314.

——— Constitution of, from the 6th to the 11th centuries, iii. 378, 379.

——— History of, in the 7th and 8th centuries, iii. 33, 34, 57. In the 9th century, 80, 81. In the tenth century, 104. The Welsh tributaries to England, 107. Reign of Howel Dha, 106, 108. His successors, 108. History of Wales from 978. to 1066., 156, 159. Successful expedition into, by Harold, 150. State of, in the 11th century, v.



51. In the 12th century, 115, 116, 187. In the 13th century, 262. Invaded and conquered by Edward I., vii. 70—72. Effects of that conquest, 72. English laws, customs, and courts introduced by Edward I., viii. 124, 125. See its princes under their respective names.
- Wales*, ecclesiastical history of, in the 10th century, iii. 283.
- Wallace*, Sir William, effects a revolution in Scotland, vii. 100. Defeats the English, 101, 102. Invades England, 102. Defeated by Edward I. at the battle of Falkirk, 104. Taken prisoner, and condemned and executed, 110.
- Walls*, Roman, in Britain, dissertation on, ii. 469, *et seq.* Forts erected by Agricola, 470, 471. Wall erected by the Emperor Adrian, i. 80. ii. 472, 473. Wall of Antoninus Pius, ii. 474—477. Wall of Severus, i. 89, 90. ii. 477, 478. Its fortifications, 479. Stationes, what, 479, 480. List of, 481. Castella, what, 481, 482. Complement of troops allowed to them, 482—484. Severus's wall, broken through, by the Scots and Picts, 485.
- Walsingham*, Thomas, the historian, account of, x. 130, 131.
- Waltheof*, Earl of Northumberland, marries Judith, William I.'s niece, v. 23. Conspires against him, and confesses first to Lanfranc, 25. Communicates the affair to William, 25, 26. Is condemned and inhumanly executed, 27.
- Walworth*, Lord Mayor of London, kills the insurgent Wat Tyler, vii. 312.
- War*, art of, antiquity of, ii. 141. All the antient British youth trained to, 142. Constitution of the British armies, 143. Their different kinds of troops, 144—146. Chariots and chariot-fighting, 147—152. Their standards, 153. Military knowledge and stratagems, 154—157. Valour of the ancient Britons in war, 301. Their fondness for war, 310. Their customs in war, 330—332. Art of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 139. All freemen among them were warriors, 139—141. But not the clergy, 141. Nor slaves, 142. Anglo-Saxon youth trained to the use of arms, 145, 146. Their armies, how drawn up, and battles how conducted, 146—148. Anglo-Saxon customs in war, 357, 358. Account of the art of war as practised by the Anglo-Normans, vi. 201—217. State of the art of war in the 12th and 13th centuries, viii. 285—293. In the 15th century, x. 188—199. In the 16th century, xii. 281.
- War-dance* of the antient Britons, ii. 368, 369.
- Warbeck*, Perkin, pretends to be Richard Duke of York, son of Edward IV., xi. 34. Difficult to discover the truth of the opinions respecting him, 34—36. Has very few supporters in Ireland, 36. Invited to Paris with promises of assistance, 36, 37. Is received in Flanders by the Duchess of Burgundy, and acknowledged to be the Duke of York, 37. Visited by friends of the York party, from England, 32. Henry VII. endeavours to discover Warbeck, 39. Warbeck is betrayed, 40. Attempts to land in England, 42. Goes to Ireland, 44. And thence to Scotland, *ib.* Is received by James IV. as Duke of York, 45, 46. Marries Lady Catherine Gordon, 47. Invades England, and publishes a manifesto, 47, 48. Is joined by very few, 48. Leaves Scotland, 53. And goes to Ireland, *ib.* Lands in Cornwall, and is joined by the insurgents, 54. Copy of his proclamation, xii. 387—392. Besieges Exeter,



Exeter, but raises the siege, xi. 54, 55. Flees to a sanctuary, 55. Is enticed thence and carried to London, 56. Escapes, and is again taken, and confined in the tower, 57. His confession, 57, 58. Copy thereof, xii. 392—394. Is executed, xi. 58. Dissertation on his character, xii. 395. 434—453.

*War-chariots* of the Britons, i. 18. Different kinds of, ii. 147. Benna, *ib.* Petoritum, Currus, and Covinus, 148. Effedum and Rheda, 149. Great numbers of chariots, and dexterity of their drivers, 150. Chariot-fighting, continued long in Britain, 152.

*War-songs* of the antient Britons, different sorts of, ii. 174. For inflaming the fury of the combatants, 175. For rousing their courage, 176. Triumphal songs, 177, 178. War-songs of the Anglo-Saxons, iv. 359, 360.

*Wardships*, a source of revenue to the English crown, vi. 15.

*Warham*, William, Bishop of London, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, xii. 8. Dispute between him and his suffragans, 11, 12. Dispute between him and Wolsey, 24, 27. His death and character, 45, 46.

*Warrenne*, Earl of, his bold reply to Edward I., vii. 70.

*Warwick*, Richard Beauchamp, Earl of, appointed Regent of France, ix. 115. Dies there, 116.

Richard Nevile, Earl of, surnamed the King-maker, defeats and takes Henry VI. at Northampton, ix. 163. Is defeated by Queen Margaret at the battle of St. Albans, 170, 171. Sent by Edward IV. on an embassy to France, 194. Honoured by Edward, 197. In favour with him, 200. Revolts against him, 204. Is refused admittance into Calais, 205. Is received at the French court, 206. Contracts his daughter to Edward, son of Henry VI., 207. Returns to England, 209. Expels Edward, 210. And restores Henry, 211. Steps taken by Warwick, 213. Prepares to meet Edward IV., 215. Slain at the battle of Barnet, 219.

Edward Plantagenet, Earl of, son of George Duke of Clarence, imprisoned by Henry VII., xi. 3. Executed, 59.

*Wat Tyler*. See Tyler.

*Watches*, when introduced into Britain, viii. 282. Curious one of Robert Bruce described, *ib.*

*Water carriage*, origin and progress of, in antient Briton, ii. 260—268.

*Water ordeal*. Cold water ordeal, iii. 431—433. Hot water ordeal, 433.

*Wealth* of antient Britain, decline of, ii. 257, 258.

*Weavers' Gilds*, in the 11th and 12th centuries, notice of, vi. 196, 197.

*Weights and Measures*, state of, in the reign of Henry VII. xii. 316—318.

*Wessex*, kingdom of, founded, iii. 8. Extended by the conquests of Cerdic, 8—11. Cinigefil and Quicelm, kings of Wessex, 22. Cenwall and his successors, 36, 37. Reign of Kentwin, 40, 41. Of Ceodwalla, 41. Of Ina, 42. Of his successors, 47—51. 55, 56. The West Saxons converted to Christianity, 202. Situation of this kingdom, 306.

*Westminster*, council at, v. 300. Proceedings of a second council, 314. 316. A third council at, 321. Clergy at, declare for King Stephen, 326. Council of, in the reign of Henry II., 343. 400.

*Whethamsted*, John, the chronicler, account of, x. 132.

*Whitby*, council of, iii. 204.

*White,*

*White*, cardinal Robert, life of, vi. 133.

*Wickliffe*, John, opposes the abuses of the Popes, viii. 66. Summoned before the Archbishop of Canterbury, who is deterred from pronouncing sentence against him, 67. Summary of his doctrines, 67, 68. Proceedings against his followers, 69, 70. His death, 71. Great success of the preachers of his doctrines, 72. (See *Lollards*.) Account of his birth and education, 231, 232. Calumniated by the clergy, 233. Eulogies of, 234, 235. His doctrines condemned, x. 13.

*Widville*, Elizabeth, married by Edward IV. ix. 188. Her relations rewarded, 189. Her coronation, 190, 191. Takes sanctuary at Westminster, 250. Is visited by the Archbishop of York, 251. Gives up her son the Duke of York, 256. Leaves the sanctuary, 277, 278. Is persuaded to give her daughter to Richard III., 282. Is confined by her son-in-law Henry VII., xi. 13.

*Wight*, Isle of, formerly united to Britain, ii. 211.

*Wilfred* converts the kingdom of Suffex to Christianity, iii. 211. Continuation of his history, 212. His haughty conduct, 218. Appeals to Rome, 219. The Pope determines in his favour, 220. Is created Bishop of Hexham, 221. Death and character, 221, 222. Funeral of, iv. 356, 357.

*William Duke of Normandy*, visits Edward the Confessor, iii. 144. Splendidly entertains Earl Harold, 149. Prepares to assert his claim to the English throne, 153. Lands at Pevensey, with 60,000 men, 155. v. 1. Battle of Hastings, 3. Defeats the English, 4. His behaviour after the victory, 5. Remains of the English army retire to London, 5. William marches to London, 6. London surrenders to him, 7. Makes preparations for his coronation, 7. Is crowned, 8. Tumults at his coronation, *ib.*

*William I.*, first acts of his government, v. 9. Prudent conduct of, towards the English, 10. Returns to Normandy, 11, 12. Insurrection of the English, 12. William returns to England, 13. Suppresses the revolts, 14. Revives the tax of Danegelt, 14. Revolts of Earls Edwin and Morcar, 15. Which are suppressed by William, 16. The English assisted by the Scots and Danes, revolt, 18. Take York castle, 19. Which William recovers, 20. And lays the North of England desolate, 20. Visits Normandy, 23. Returns to England, 26. And orders the execution of Earl Waltheof, 27. Returns to Normandy, 28. War between him and his son Robert, 28—30. To whom he is reconciled, 30. Sends him into the North with an army, 31. Orders Doomsday Book to be written, 32. Seizes his uterine brother Odo Bishop of Bayeux, 33. Threatened with invasion from Denmark, 34. Visits Normandy, 35. His death, 36. And character, 37. Ecclesiastical state of the kingdom during his reign, 271, *et seq.* Refuses submission to Pope Gregory VII., 276. Introduces important changes in the polity of the church of England, 278. And in the circumstances of the English nation, vi. 8, 9. Made very liberal grants of land to his barons, on what obligations, 11—18. Annual amount of his revenue, 41.

*William Rufus*, accession of to the crown of England, v. 38. Coronation, *ib.* Conspiracy against William II., 39. Which is frustrated, 40. Invasion



- Invasion of Normandy proposed, 41. Peace between him and Robert, 43. Rupture between William and Robert, 44, 45. Hostilities commenced, 45. A conspiracy against him, discovered and defeated, 46. Robert mortgages his dominions to him, 47. Expedition into Wales, *ib.* War with France, *ib.* War with Heli de la Fleche, 48, 49. Is accidentally killed when hunting, 49, 50. Character of William, 50, 51. Account of the breach between him and Archbishop Anselm, 281—289.
- William*, Prince, son of Robert Duke of Normandy, preserved from the machinations of Henry I. v. 65. 68. Valiant conduct of, 71. His death, 79.
- , Prince, son of Henry I., drowned in returning from Normandy, v. 72—74.
- *the Lion*, King of Scotland, invades England, v. 154. Is taken prisoner, 155, 156. Consequences of that event, 156. Does homage to King John, 232. 265. Expedition against, and peace concluded, 241. Purchases the independence of his kingdom, 263. His honourable conduct to Richard I., 264. War with John, 265, 266. Treaty of peace between the two kings, 266. Disputes with the Pope the election of a bishop of St. Andrews, v. 415—420.
- *of Malmfbury*, the historian, life and character of, vi. 136—138.
- Winchelsey*, Robert, elected Archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 24. Attempts to support the extravagant claims of the church, but is obliged to submit, 25—27. Excommunicates all who oppose the clergy, 27, 28. Involved in troubles with Edward I. 31, 32. Recalled from exile by Edward II., 42. His death and character, 47.
- Winchester*, Bishop of, quarrels with his brother King Stephen, v. 322. Effects thereof, 323. Convenes a council at Winchester, 323, 324. Scheme for erecting Winchester into an archbishopric, 328.
- , Peter de Roches, Bishop of, chosen joint regent with Hubert de Burgh, vii. 4. Conduct of the two regents, 5. Is disgraced, 13.
- , Henry Beaufort, Cardinal of, impeached by the Duke of Gloucester, ix. 125. Procures full pardon, *ibid.*
- , council of, v. 294. Clergy at, declare for the Empress Maude, 325.
- Wine trade*, state of, in England, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 273.
- Wisbart*, George, persecuted and burnt for heresy, xii. 133—140.
- Robert, Bishop of Glasgow, notice of, viii. 81.
- Wit* of the Anglo-Normans, vi. 338, 339.
- Wintlescy*, William, nominated Archbishop of Canterbury, viii. 63. His death, 65.
- Witnesses*, Anglo-Saxon law concerning, iii. 425—427.
- Wittenagemote*, assembled by the Anglo-Saxon kings, iii. 359. The highest court of judicature, 368. Its powers, 369. Its members in the most antient times, 369, 370. In later times, 370. Their qualification, 371. Other members, 371, 372. The king proposed the matter to be debated, 373. Stated times of meeting, 373, 374. Extraordinary meetings, 374. Privileges of the members, 375. General observations on this court, 376.



*Wolsey*, Thomas, Archbishop of York and Cardinal, introduced to the court of Henry VIII., xi. 84. Becomes his confidant, 85. Bishop of Tournay and Lincoln, 103. Archbishop of York, 109. His greatness, 109, 110. Elevated to the cardinalate, 110. The great seal committed to him, 115. Reigns without a rival, 115. Causes of his greatness, 116. Wolsey's abuse of his power, 117. 123. Courted by great princes, 124. His artful conduct, 125. Increases in power and riches, 127. Regulates the interview between Francis I. and Henry VIII., 128. Is courted by Francis, 129—130. Treats with the French ministers, 135. Bulls in his favour, 144. Visits the Emperor, 147. Inconvenience of Wolsey's absence, 149. Aspires to the papacy, 150. Courted by the Emperor, 153. His increasing favour with Henry, 157. Haughty conduct in the house of commons, 158, 159. Disappointed again of ascending the papal throne, 166. Rewarded by the French for effecting a treaty, 180. Wolsey in danger, *ib.* His duplicity to Charles, 214. Waits on Queen Catherine relative to her divorce, 222. Holds a court with Campegius on the same subject, 227, 228. Deceit of the Pope and Cardinals, 229. Henry discontented with Wolsey, 231. Suspects him of deceiving him, 232. Fall of Wolsey, 234—237. His goods forfeited, 238. Wolsey impeached in parliament, 239, 240. Distress of the Cardinal, 242. His sickness and recovery, 243—244. Dejection, 244. Favours conferred on him by Henry, 245. Wolsey goes to the north, 245, 246. His behaviour there, 246, 247. His instalment appointed 247, 248. Arrested in his way, 248. Reaches Leicester abbey, and dies, 249. His character, 250. Was a patron of learning, xii. 207, 208. Account of his college at Oxford, 247—249.

*Women*, how treated by the antient Britons, ii. 320—323. Employment of, 325—329. Ranks of, among the Anglo-Saxons, iii. 331. Anglo-Saxon laws concerning, 393—397. Authority of husbands over them, 398, 399. Punishment for violating their honour, 420. Influence of, among the northern nations, accounted for, iv. 89. Respectfully treated by the Anglo-Saxons and Danes, 345—347. Drefs of the antient British women, ii. 348. Distinctions between the drefs of the Anglo-Saxon women and men, iv. 386, 387. Drefs of the Anglo-Norman women, vi. 360. Drefs of English women in the 13th and 14th centuries, viii. 402, 403.

*Wool*, exported from Britain by the Phœnicians, ii. 204. State of the export trade in wool, in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 269—271. Exported to a very considerable extent in the 15th century, x. 249.

*Woollen manufacture*, state of, in the 9th and 10th centuries, iv. 137. Law of Richard I. concerning it, vi. 197—198. Laws for its encouragement, viii. 283, 284. Different kinds of cloth made, 284, 285. Laws for its encouragement in the 15th century, x. 187. State of, in the 16th century, xii. 276—280.

*Worcester*, John Earl of, account of his love of literature, x. 143, 144. A collector of books, 145. Returned to England on the accession of Edward IV., *ib.* Beheaded, 146. His works, 146, 147.

*World*, system of, according to the Druids, ii. 27—29.

*Worship* of the Druids, account of, i. 162—178. Of the Heathen Saxons, iii. 179—184.

*Wounding* any person, how punished by the Anglo-Saxon laws, iii. 415, 416.

*Wulstan's* voyage to the Baltic, narrative of, iv. 217, 218.

*Wulstan*, Bishop of Worcester, repartee of, iv. 389.

*Wyatt*, Sir Thomas, character of his poetry, xii. 297, 298.

*Wykes*, Thomas, an English historian, notice of, viii. 240.

## Y.

**YORK**, Duke of, uncle to Richard II., appointed regent, vii. 351. Joins the party of the Duke of Lancaster (afterwards Henry IV.), 362.

—, Richard, Duke of, appointed Regent of France, ix. 111. Commissioned to treat of peace with France, 112. Deprived of his regency, 115. Aspires to the crown, 133. Takes up arms, 144. Is ensnared, 145. But delivered, 146. Appointed protector, 150, 151. Deprived of his protectorship, 152. Gains the first battle of St. Alban's, 153. His moderation, 154. Re-appointed protector, 154, 155. Deprived again of his office, 156. Escapes a plot laid for him, 156, 157. Coalition of parties, 157. His party defeated at the battle of Blore-heath, 160. Yorkists return into England, 162. Gain the battle of Northampton, 163. Announces his design of claiming the crown, 165. Slain at the battle of Wakefield, 168. His son the Earl of Rutland murdered by Lord Clifford, 169.

—, Edward, Duke of, son of the former, obtains a victory at Mortimer's Cross, ix. 170. Enters London. 172. Mounts the throne, 172, 173. See *Edward IV.*

—, Archbishop of, disputes the primacy with Canterbury, v. 273, 274. Determination against York, 274. The dispute revived, 310, 311. And determined in favour of York, 316. Archbishop declared primate of Scotland, 413. The Scottish clergy refuse to submit to him, 414.

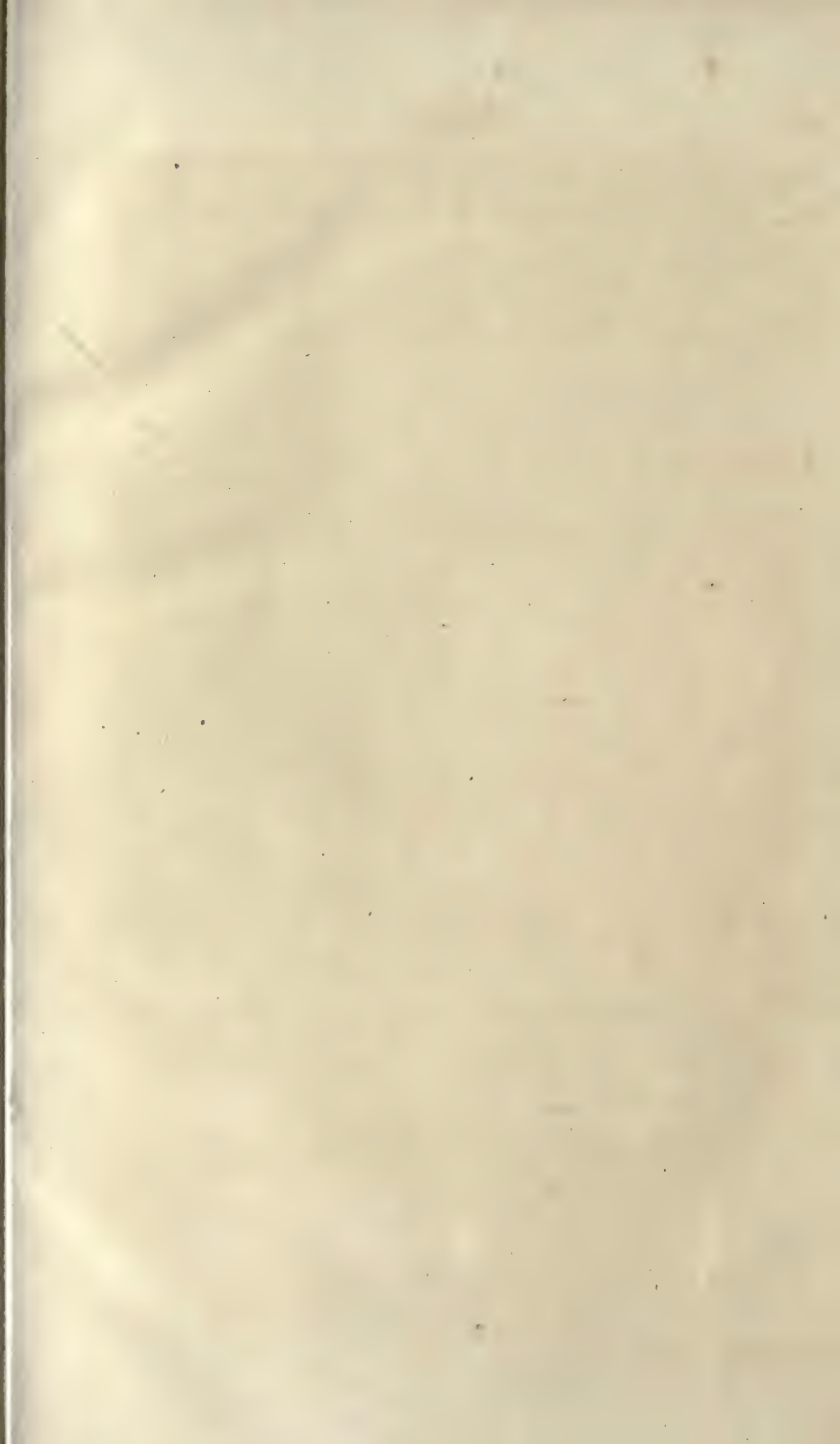
*York*, city, besieged by the English and burnt, v. 19. The whole country between it and Durham desolated by William I., 20. State of its trade in the 11th and 12th centuries, vi. 265, 266. Convocation at York, in the 15th century, x. 38, 39.

*Youth*, British, were all trained to war, ii. 142.

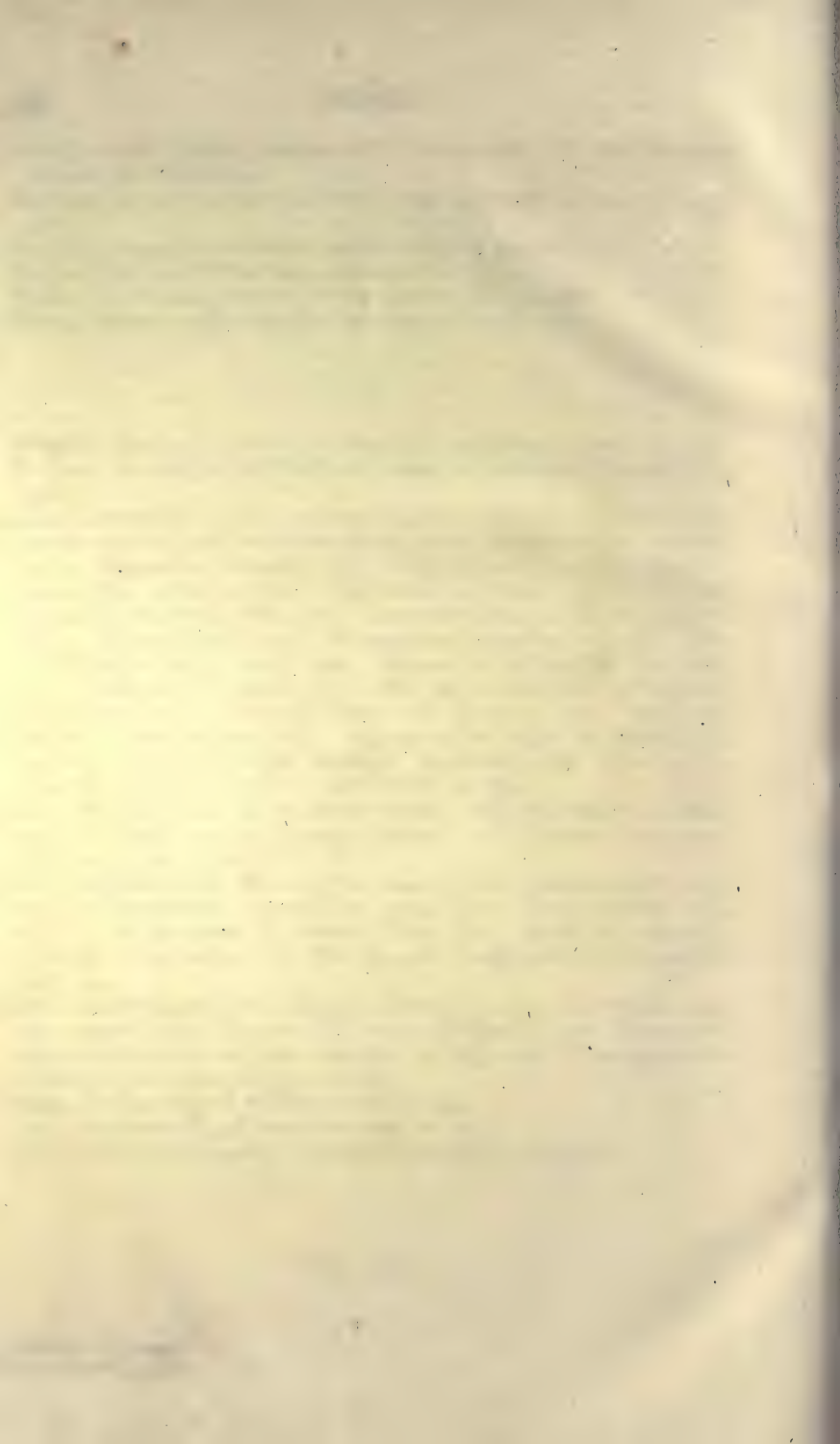
—, Anglo-Saxon, all trained to war, iv. 145.

—, English, manners of, in the 15th century, x. 299, 300.

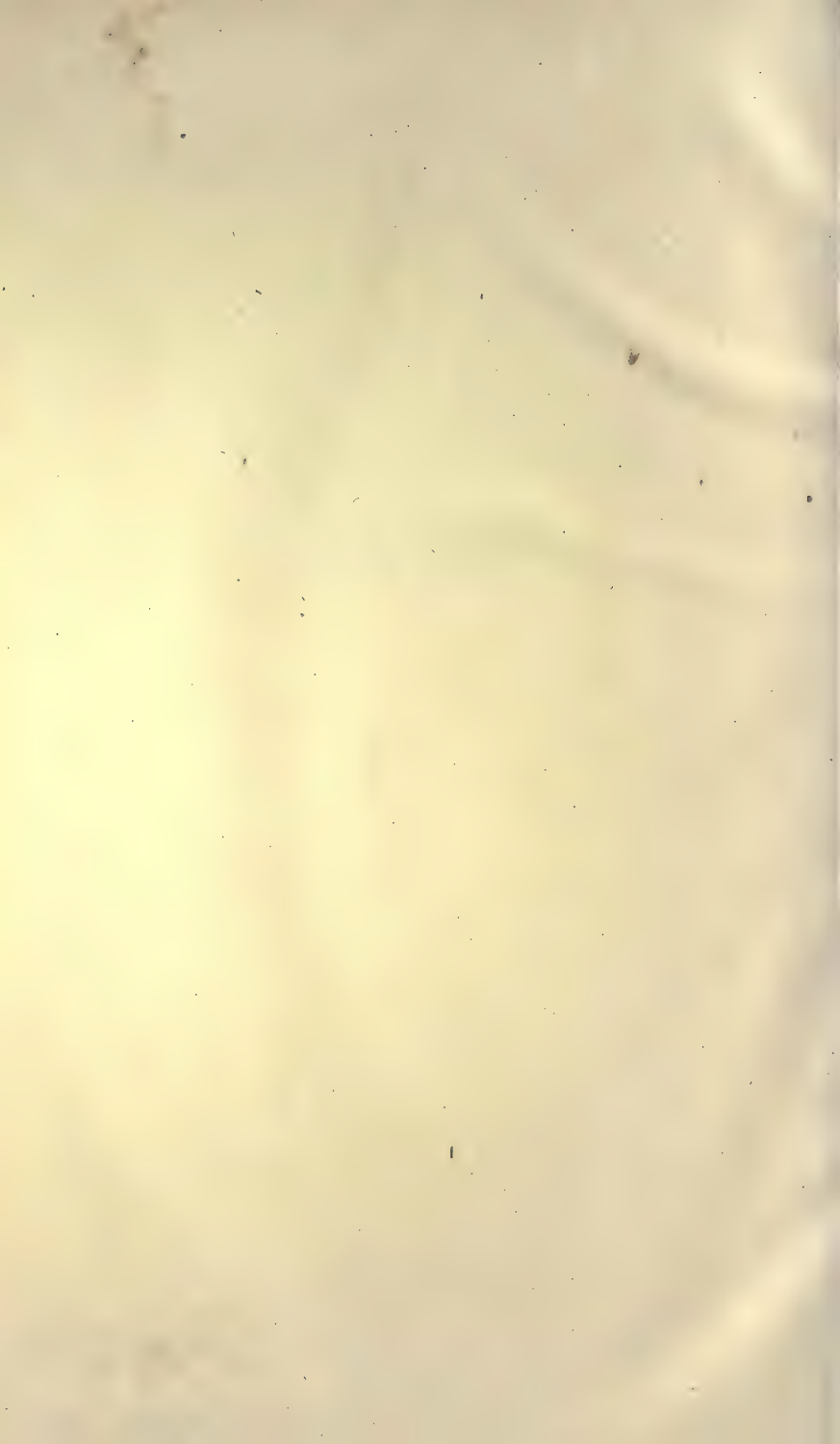
THE END.



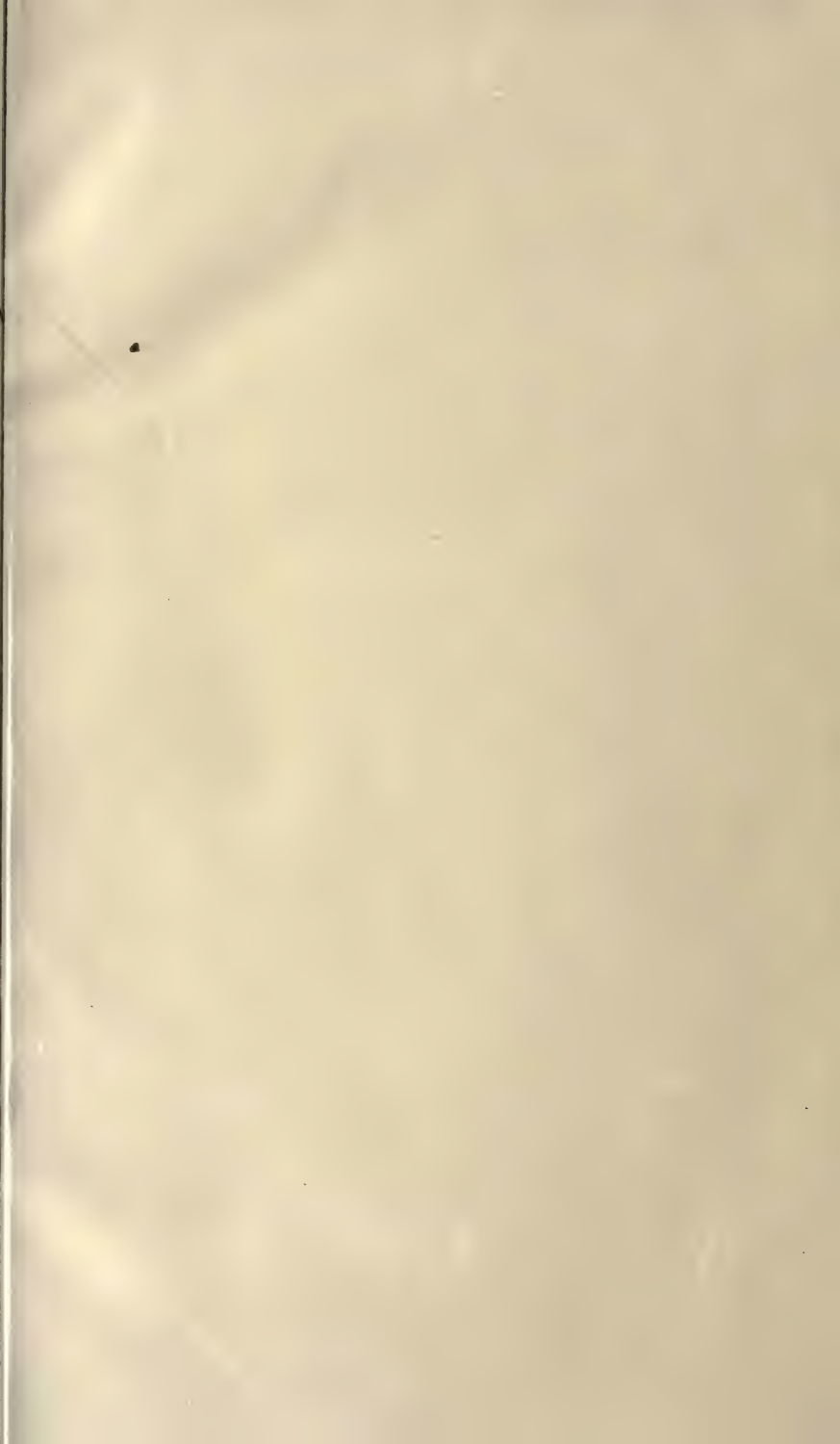




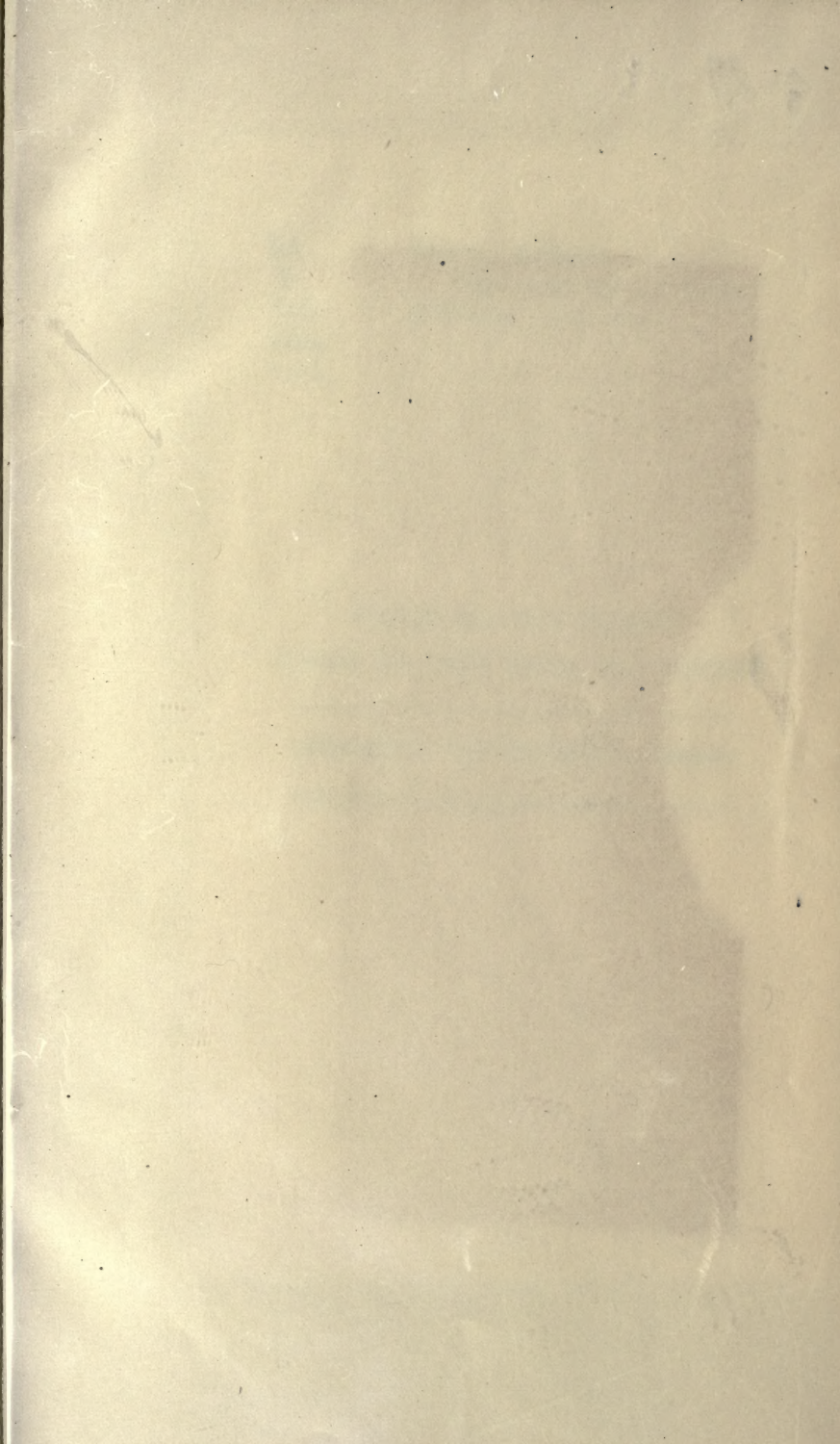
















QA  
30  
H46  
1814  
v.12

Henry, Robert  
The history of Great  
Britain 5th ed.

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---



